This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

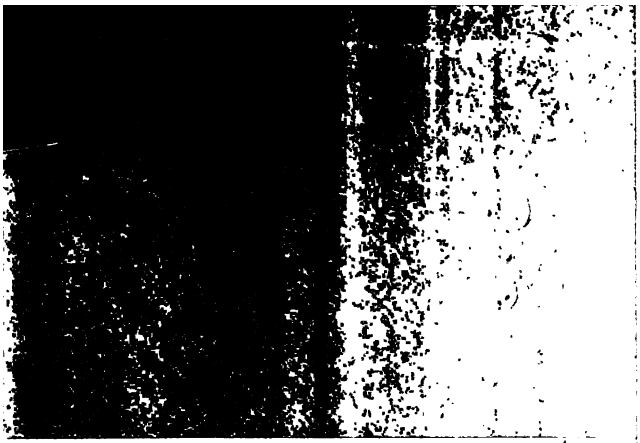
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

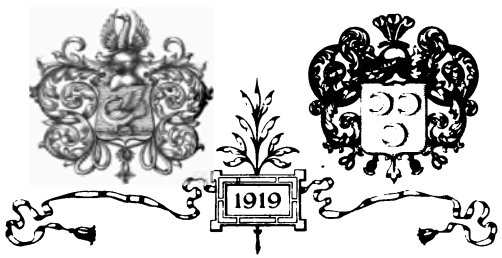
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 07609233 1



75-K

I. J. FREDERICK BANDINEL.



GANSEVOORT-LANSING COLLECTION

given to the New York Public Library
Astor Lenox and Tilden Foundations
BY VICTOR HUGO PALTSITS
under the terms of the last will and testament of
CATHERINE GANSEVOORT LANSING
granddaughter of
General Peter Gansevoort, junior
and widow of the
Honorable Abraham Lansing
of Albany, New York

TIFFANY & CO.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

ASTOR LENOX
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

FRONTISPIECE to VOL. VII.

J. Collyer sc.

Published according to Act of Parliament. Nov.r 1.1783. by T. Cadell in the Strand.

THE

WORKS

OF

HENRY FIELDING, Esq.

WITH

THE LIFE OF THE AUTHOR.

IN TWELVE VOLUMES.

VOL VII.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR W. STRAHAN, J. RIVINGTON AND SONS, S. CROWDER, T. LONGMAN, J. ROBSON, C. DILLY, G. KEARSLEY, G. ROBINSON, T. CADELL, T. LOWNDES, R. BALDWIN, J. NICHOLS, W. CATER, G. NICOLL, S. BLADON, J. MURRAY, W. FLEXNEY, T. EVANS, W. OTRIDGE, J. SEWELL, W. LANE, J. BOWEN, AND W. FOX.

MDCCLXXXIII.

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY

48228A

ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R 922 L

THE

HISTORY

OF

TOM JONES,

A

FOUNDLING.

NEW YORK
LIBRARY

NEW YORK
PUBLIC
LIBRARY

To the HONOURABLE

GEORGE LYTTLETON, Eſq;

One of the Lords Commiſſioners of the TREASURY.

NOtwithſtanding your conſtant refuſal, when I have aſked leave to prefix your name to this dedication, I muſt ſtill inſiſt on my right to deſire your protection of this work.

To you, Sir, it is owing that this hiſtory was ever begun. It was by your deſire that I firſt thought of ſuch a compoſition. So many years have ſince paſt that you may have, perhaps, forgotten this circumſtance; but your deſires are to me in the nature of commands; and the impreſſion of them is never to be eraſed from my memory.

Again, Sir, without your aſſiſtance this hiſtory had never been completed. Be not ſtartled at the aſſertion. I do not intend to draw on you the ſuſpicion of being a romance writer. I mean no more than that I partly owe to you my exiſtence during great part of the time which I have employed in

compoſing it: another matter which it may be neceſſary to remind you of; ſince there are certain actions of which you are apt to be extremely forgetful; but of theſe I hope I ſhall always have a better memory than yourſelf.

Laſtly, It is owing to you that the hiſtory appears what it now is. If there be in this work, as ſome have been pleaſed to ſay, a ſtronger picture of a truly benevolent mind than is to be found in any other, who that knows you, and a particular acquaintance of yours, will doubt whence that benevolence hath been copied? The world will not, I believe, make me the compliment of thinking I took it from myſelf. I care not; this they ſhall own, that the two perſons from whom I have taken it, that is to ſay, two of the beſt and worthieſt men in the world, are ſtrongly and zealouſly my friends. I might be contented with this, and yet my vanity will add a third to the number; and him one of the greateſt and nobleſt, not only in his rank, but in every public and private virtue. But here, whilſt my gratitude for the princely benefactions of the Duke of BEDFORD burſts from my heart, you muſt forgive my reminding you

that

that it was you who firſt recommended me to the notice of my benefactor.

And what are your objections to the allowance of the honour which I have ſolicited? Why, you have commended the book ſo warmly, that you ſhould be aſhamed of reading your name before the dedication. Indeed, Sir, if the book itſelf doth not make you aſhamed of your commendations, nothing that I can here write will, or ought. I am not to give up my right to your protection and patronage, becauſe you have commended my book: for though I acknowledge ſo many obligations to you, I do not add this to the number; in which friendſhip, I am convinced, hath ſo little ſhare: ſince that can neither biaſs your judgment, nor pervert your integrity. An enemy may at any time obtain your commendation by only deſerving it; and the utmoſt which the faults of your friends can hope for, is your ſilence; or, perhaps, if too ſeverely accuſed, your gentle palliation.

In ſhort, Sir, I ſuſpect, that your diſlike of public praiſe is your true objection to granting my requeſt. I have obſerved, that you have, in common with my two other friends, an unwillingneſs to hear the

leaſt mention of your own virtues; that, as a great Poet ſays of one of you, (he might juſtly have ſaid of all three) you

Do good by ſtealth, and bluſh to find it fame.

If men of this diſpoſition are as careful to ſhun applauſe, as others are to eſcape cenſure, how juſt muſt be your apprehenſion of your character falling into my hands; ſince what would not a man have reaſon to dread, if attacked by an author who had received from him injuries equal to my obligations to you!

And will not this dread of cenſure increaſe in proportion to the matter which a man is conſcious of having afforded for it? If his whole life, for inſtance, ſhould have been one continued ſubject of ſatire, he may well tremble when an incenſed ſatiriſt takes him in hand. Now, Sir, if we apply this to your modeſt averſion to panegyric, how reaſonable will your fears of me appear!

Yet ſurely you might have gratified my ambition from this ſingle confidence, that I ſhall always prefer the indulgence of your inclinations to the ſatisfaction of my own. A very ſtrong inſtance of which I ſhall give you in this addreſs; in which I am determined to follow the example of all other dedicators, and will conſider not what my

my patron really deſerves to have written, but what he will be beſt pleaſed to read.

Without further preface then, I here preſent you with the labours of ſome years of my life. What merit theſe labours have is already known to yourſelf. If, from your favourable judgment, I have conceived ſome eſteem for them, it cannot be imputed to vanity; ſince I ſhould have agreed as implicitly to your opinion, had it been given in favour of any other man's production. Negatively, at leaſt, I may be allowed to ſay, that had I been ſenſible of any great demerit in the work, you are the laſt perſon to whoſe protection I would have ventured to recommend it.

From the name of my patron, indeed, I hope my reader will be convinced, at his very entrance on this work, that he will find in the whole courſe of it, nothing prejudicial to the cauſe of religion and virtue; nothing inconſiſtent with the ſtricteſt rules of decency, nor which can offend even the chaſteſt eye in the peruſal. On the contrary, I declare, that to recommend goodneſs and innocence hath been my ſincere endeavour in this hiſtory. This honeſt purpoſe you have been pleaſed to think I have

attained: and to ſay the truth, it is likelieſt to be attained in books of this kind; for an example is a kind of picture, in which virtue becomes as it were an object of ſight, and ſtrikes us with an idea of that lovelineſs, which Plato aſſerts there is in her naked charms.

Beſides diſplaying that beauty of virtue which may attract the admiration of mankind, I have attempted to engage a ſtronger motive to human action in her favour, by convincing men, that their true intereſt directs them to a purſuit of her. For this purpoſe I have ſhewn, that no acquiſitions of guilt can compenſate the loſs of that ſolid inward comfort of mind, which is the ſure companion of innocence and virtue; nor can in the leaſt balance the evil of that horror and anxiety which, in their room, guilt introduced into our boſoms. And again, that as theſe acquiſitions are in themſelves generally worthleſs, ſo are the means to attain them not only baſe and infamous, but at beſt incertain, and always full of danger. Laſtly, I have endeavoured ſtrongly to inculcate, that virtue and innocence can ſcarce ever be injured but by indiſcretion; and that it is this alone which often betrays them into the ſnares that deceit and

villainy

villainy ſpread from them. A moral which I have the more induſtriouſly laboured, as the teaching it is, of all others, the likelieſt to be attended with ſucceſs; ſince, I believe, it is much eaſier to make good men wiſe, than to make bad men good.

For theſe purpoſes I have employed all the wit and humour of which I am maſter in the following hiſtory; wherein I have endeavoured to laugh mankind out of their favourite follies and vices. How far I have ſucceeded in this good attempt, I ſhall ſubmit to the candid reader, with only two requeſts: Firſt, That he will not expect to find perfection in this work; and Secondly, That he will excuſe ſome parts of it, if they fall ſhort of that little merit which I hope may appear in others.

I will detain you, Sir, no longer. Indeed I have run into a preface, while I profeſſed to write a dedication. But how can it be otherwiſe? I dare not praiſe you; and the only means I know of to avoid it, when you are in my thoughts, are either to be entirely ſilent, or to turn my thoughts to ſome other ſubject.

Pardon, therefore, what I have ſaid in this epiſtle, not only without your conſent, but abſolutely againſt it; and give

me at leaſt leave, in this public manner, to declare, that I am, with the higheſt reſpect and gratitude,

SIR,

Your moſt obliged,

obedient humble Servant,

HENRY FIELDING.

CONTENTS

OF THE

SEVENTH VOLUME.

BOOK I.

Containing as much of the birth of the Foundling as is neceſſary or proper to acquaint the reader with in the beginning of this hiſtory.

CHAP. I.

The introduction to the work, or bill of fare to the feaſt. Page 1

CHAP. II.

A ſhort deſcription of 'Squire Allworthy, *and a fuller account of Miſs* Bridget Allworthy, *his ſiſter.* 4

CHAP. III.

An odd accident which befel Mr. Allworthy, *at his return home. The decent behaviour of Mrs.* Deborah Wilkins, *with ſome proper animadverſions on baſtards.* 6

CHAP. IV.

The reader's neck brought into danger by a deſcription, his eſcape, and the great condeſcenſion of Miſs Bridget Allworthy. 9

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Containing a few common matters, with a very uncommon observation upon them. Page 13

CHAP. VI.

Mrs. Deborah *is introduced into the parish, with a simile. A short account of* Jenny Jones, *with the difficulties and discouragements which may attend young women in the pursuit of learning.* 14

CHAP. VII.

Containing such grave matter, that the reader cannot laugh once through the whole chapter, unless peradventure he should laugh at the author. 19

CHAP. VIII.

A dialogue between Mesdames Bridget *and* Deborah; *containing more amusement, but less instruction, than the former.* 23

CHAP. IX.

Containing matters which will surprize the reader. 26

CHAP. X.

The hospitality of Allworthy; *with a short sketch of the characters of two brothers, a doctor and a captain, who were entertained by that gentleman.* 29

CHAP. XI.

Containing many rules, and some examples, concerning falling in love: descriptions of beauty, and other more prudential inducements to matrimony. 33

CHAP. XII.

Containing what the reader may perhaps expect to find in it. 37

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

Which concludes the first book; with an instance of ingratitude, which, we hope, will appear unnatural. Page 41

BOOK II.

Containing scenes of matrimonial felicity in different degrees of life; and various other transactions during the first two years after the marriage between captain Blifil *and Miss* Bridget Allworthy.

CHAP. I.

Shewing what kind of a history this is; what it is like, and what it is not like. 44

CHAP. II.

Religious cautions against shewing too much favour to bastards; and a great discovery made by Mrs. Deborah Wilkins. 46

CHAP. III.

The description of a domestic government founded upon rules directly contrary to those of Aristotle, 49

CHAP. IV.

Containing one of the most bloody battles, or rather duels, that were ever recorded in domestic history. 53

CHAP. V.

Containing much matter to exercise the judgment and reflection of the reader. 58

CHAP. VI.

The trial of Partridge, *the schoolmaster, for incontinency; the evidence of his wife; a short reflection on the wisdom of our law; with other grave matters, which those will like best who understand them most.* 64

CHAP

CHAP. VII.

A short sketch of that felicity which prudent couples may extract from hatred; with a short apology for those people who overlook imperfections in their friends. Page 70

CHAP. VIII.

A receipt to regain the lost affections of a wife, which hath never been known to fail in the most desperate cases. 75

CHAP. IX.

A proof of the infallibility of the foregoing receipt, in the lamentations of the widow, with other suitable decorations of death, such as physicians, &c. and an epitaph in the true stile. 77

BOOK III.

Containing the most memorable transactions which passed in the family of Mr. Allworthy, *from the time when* Tommy Jones *arrived at the age of fourteen, till he attained the age of nineteen. In this book the reader may pick up some hints concerning the education of children.*

CHAP. I.

Containing little or nothing. 84

CHAP. II.

The hero of this great history appears with very bad omens. A little tale, of so LOW *a kind, that some may think it not worth their notice. A word or two concerning a 'squire, and more relating to a game-keeper, and a schoolmaster.* 85

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The character of Mr. Square *the philoſopher, and of Mr.* Thwackum *the divine; with a diſpute concerning* — Page 91

CHAP. IV.

Containing a neceſſary apology for the Author; and a childiſh incident, which perhaps requires an apology likewiſe. 94

CHAP. V.

The opinions of the divine and philoſopher concerning the two boys; with ſome reaſons for their opinions, and other matters. 97

CHAP. VI.

Containing a better reaſon ſtill for the before mentioned opinions. 103

CHAP. VII.

In which the Author himſelf makes his appearance on the ſtage. 106

CHAP. VIII.

A childiſh incident, in which, however, is ſeen a good-natured diſpoſition in Tom Jones 108

CHAP. IX.

Containing an incident of a more heinous kind, with the comments of Thwackum *and* Square. 111

CHAP X.

In which Maſter Blifil *and* Jones *appear in different lights.* 114

BOOK IV.

Containing the time of a year.

CHAP. I.

Containing five pages of paper. Page 117

CHAP. II.

A short hint of what we can do in the sublime, and a description of Miss Sophia Western. 120

CHAP. III.

Wherein the history goes back to commemorate a trifling incident that happened some years since; but which, trifling as it was, had some future consequences. 124

CHAP. IV.

Containing such very deep and grave matters; that some readers, perhaps, may not relish it. 127

CHAP. V.

Containing matter accommodated to every taste. 130

CHAP. VI.

An apology for the insensibility of Mr. Jones, *to all the charms of the lovely* Sophia; *in which possibly we may, in a considerable degree, lower his character in the estimation of those men of wit and gallantry, who approve the heroes in most of our modern comedies.* 136

CHAP. VII.

Being the shortest chapter in this book. 141

CHAP. VIII.

A battle sung by the muse in the Homerican *stile, and which none but the classical reader can taste.* 142

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

Containing matters of no very peaceable colour. Page 148

CHAP. X.

A story told by Mr. Supple, *the curate. The penetration of 'squire* Western. *His great love for his daughter, and the return to it made by her.* 151

CHAP. XI.

The narrow escape of Molly Seagrim, *with some observations; for which we have been forced to dive pretty deep into nature.* 156

CHAP. XII.

Containing much clearer matters; but which flowed from the same fountain with those in the preceding chapter. 161

CHAP. XIII.

A dreadful accident which befel Sophia. *The gallant behaviour of* Jones, *and the more dreadful consequence of that behaviour to the young lady; with a short digression in favour of the female sex.* 165

CHAP. XIV.

The arrival of a surgeon. His operations, and a long dialogue between Sophia *and her maid.* 168

BOOK V.

Containing a portion of time, somewhat longer than half a year.

CHAP. I.

Of THE SERIOUS *in writing, and for what purpose it is introduced.* 175

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

In which Mr. Jones *receives many friendly visits during his confinement; with some fine touches of the passion of love, scarce visible to the naked eye.* Page 180

CHAP. III.

Which all who have not seen it, will think to contain much ado about nothing. 185

CHAP. IV.

A little chapter, in which is contained a little incident. 188

CHAP. V.

A very long chapter, containing a very great incident. 191

CHAP. VI.

By comparing which with the former, the reader may possibly correct some abuse which he hath formerly been guilty of in the application of the word LOVE. 200

CHAP. VII.

In which Mr. Allworthy *appears on a sick bed.* 206

CHAP. VIII.

Containing matter rather natural than pleasing. 212

CHAP. IX.

Which, among other things, may serve as a comment on that saying of Æschines, *that* DRUNKENNESS SHEWS THE MIND OF A MAN, AS A MIRROUR REFLECTS HIS PERSON. 217

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

Shewing the truth of many observations of Ovid, *and of other more grave writers, who have proved, beyond contradiction, that wine is often the forerunner of incontinency.* Page 222

CHAP. XI.

In which a simile in Mr. Pope's *Period of a Mile, introduces as bloody a battle as can possibly be fought, without the assistance of steel or* cold *iron.* 226

CHAP. XII.

In which is seen a more moving spectacle, than all the blood in the bodies of Thwackum *and* Blifil, *and of twenty other such, is capable of producing.* 230

BOOK VI.

Containing about three weeks.

CHAP. I.

Of love. 235

CHAP. II.

The character of Mrs. Western. *Her great learning and knowledge of the world, and an instance of the deep penetration which she derived from those advantages.* 238

CHAP. III.

Containing two defiances to the critics. 245

CHAP. IV.

Containing sundry curious matters. 249

CHAP. V.

In which is related what passed between Sophia *and her aunt.* Page 251

CHAP. VI.

Containing a dialogue between Sophia *and Mrs.* Honour, *which may a little relieve those tender affections which the foregoing scene may have raised in the mind of a good-natured reader.* 257

CHAP. VII.

A picture of formal courtship in miniature, as it always ought to be drawn, and a scene of a tender kind, painted at full length. 260

CHAP. VIII.

The meeting between Jones *and* Sophia. 265

CHAP. IX.

Being of a much more tempestuous kind than the former. 267

CHAP. X.

In which Mr. Western *visits Mr.* Allworthy. 272

CHAP. XI.

A short chapter; but which contains sufficient matter to affect the good-natured reader. 277

CHAP. XII.

Containing love-letters, &c. 279

CHAP. XIII.

The behaviour of Sophia *on the present occasion; which none of her sex will blame, who are capable of behaving in the same manner. And the discussion of a knotty point in the court of conscience.* 284

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

A short chapter, containing a short dialogue between 'squire Western *and his sister.* Page 288

BOOK VII.

Containing three days.

CHAP. I.

A comparison between the world and the stage. 291

CHAP. II.

Containing a conversation which Mr. Jones *had with himself.* 295

CHAP. III.

Containing several dialogues. 297

CHAP. IV.

A picture of a country gentleman taken from the life. 303

CHAP. V.

The generous behaviour of Sophia *towards her aunt,* 306

CHAP. VI.

Containing great variety of matter. 309

CHAP. VII.

A strange resolution of Sophia, *and a more strange stratagem of Mrs.* Honour. 315

CHAP. VIII.

Containing scenes of altercation, of no very uncommon kind. 320

CHAP IX.

The wise demeanour of Mr. Western *in the character of a magistrate. A hint to justices of peace, concerning the necessary qualifications of a clerk; with extraordinary instances of paternal madness, and filial affection.* 324

CHAP. X.

Containing several matters, natural enough, perhaps, but Low. 328

CHAP. XI.

The adventure of a company of soldiers. 334

CHAP. XII.

The adventure of a company of officers. 338

CHAP. XIII.

Containing the great address of the landlady; the great learning of a surgeon, and the solid skill in casuistry of the worthy lieutenant. 346

CHAP XIV.

A most dreadful chapter indeed; and which few readers ought to venture upon in an evening, especially when alone. 352

CHAP. XV.

The conclusion of the foregoing adventure. 359

THE

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK I.

Containing as much of the birth of the Foundling as is neceſſary or proper to acquaint the reader with in the beginning of this hiſtory.

CHAP. I.

The introduction to the work, or bill of fare to the feaſt.

AN author ought to conſider himſelf, not as a gentleman who gives a private or eleemoſynary treat, but rather as one who keeps a public ordinary, at which all perſons are welcome for their money. In the former caſe, it is well known, that the entertainer provides what fare he pleaſes; and though this ſhould be very indifferent, and utterly diſagreable to the taſte of his company, they muſt not find any fault; nay, on the contrary, good breeding forces them outwardly to approve and to commend whatever is ſet before them. Now the contrary to this happens to the maſter of an ordinary. Men who pay for what they eat, will inſiſt on gratifying their palates, however nice and whimſical theſe may prove; and if every thing is not agreeable to their taſte, will challenge a right to cenſure, to abuſe, and to d——n their dinner without controul.

To prevent therefore giving offence to their cuſtomers by any ſuch diſappointment, it hath been uſual,

with the honeſt and well-meaning hoſt, to provide a bill of fare, which all perſons may peruſe at their firſt entrance into the houſe; and, having thence acquainted themſelves with the entertainment which they may expect, may either ſtay and regale with what is provided for them, or may depart to ſome other ordinary better accommodated to their taſte.

As we do not diſdain to borrow wit or wiſdom from any man who is capable of lending us either, we have condeſcended to take a hint from theſe honeſt victuallers, and ſhall prefix not only a general bill of fare to our whole entertainment, but ſhall likewiſe give the reader particular bills to every courſe which is to be ſerved up in this and the enſuing volumes.

The proviſion then which we have here made is no other than HUMAN NATURE. Nor do I fear that my ſenſible reader, though moſt luxurious in his taſte, will ſtart, cavil, or be offended, becauſe I have named but one article. The tortoiſe, as the alderman of Briſtol, well learned in eating, knows by much experience, beſides the delicious Calibaſh and Calipee, contains many different kinds of food; nor can the learned reader be ignorant, that in human nature, though here collected under one general name, is ſuch prodigious variety, that a cook will have ſooner gone through all the ſeveral ſpecies of animal and vegetable food in the world, than an author will be able to exhauſt ſo extenſive a ſubject.

An objection may perhaps be apprehended from the more delicate, that this diſh is too common and vulgar; for what elſe is the ſubject of all the romances, novels, plays, and poems, with which the ſtalls abound? Many exquiſite viands might be rejected by the epicure, if it was a ſufficient cauſe for his contemning of them as common and vulgar, that ſomething was to be found in the moſt paltry alleys under the ſame name. In reality, true nature is as difficult to be met with in authors, as the Bayonne ham or Bologna ſauſage is to be found in the ſhops.

But the whole, to continue the ſame metaphor, conſiſts in the cookery of the author; for as Mr. Pope tells us,

True

True wit is nature to advantage dreſt,
What oft' was thought, but ne'er ſo well expreſt.

The ſame animal which hath the honour to have ſome part of his fleſh eaten at the table of a duke, may perhaps be degraded in another part, and ſome of his limbs gibbetted, as it were, in the vileſt ſtall in town. Where then lies the difference between the food of the nobleman and the porter, if both are at dinner on the ſame ox or calf, but in the ſeaſoning, the dreſſing, the garniſhing, and the ſetting forth? Hence the one provokes and incites the moſt languid appetite, and the other turns and palls that which is the ſharpeſt and keeneſt.

In like manner, the excellence of the mental entertainments conſiſts leſs in the ſubject, than in the author's ſkill in well dreſſing it up. How pleaſed therefore will the reader be to find, that we have, in the following work, adhered cloſely to one of the higheſt principles of the beſt cook which the preſent age, or perhaps that of Heliogabalus, hath produced? This great man, as is well known to all lovers of polite eating, begins at firſt by ſetting plain things before his hungry gueſts, riſing afterwards by degrees, as their ſtomachs may be ſuppoſed to decreaſe, to the very quinteſſence of ſauce and ſpices. In like manner, we ſhall repreſent human nature at firſt to the keen appetite of our reader, in that more plain and ſimple manner in which it is found in the country, and ſhall hereafter haſh and ragoo it with all the high French and Italian ſeaſoning of affectation and vice which courts and cities afford. By theſe means, we doubt not but our reader may be rendered deſirous to read on for ever, as the great perſon, juſt above-mentioned, is ſuppoſed to have made ſome perſons eat.

Having premiſed thus much, we will now detain thoſe who like our bill of fare, no longer from their diet, and ſhall proceed directly to ſerve up the firſt courſe of our hiſtory, for their entertainment.

CHAP. II.

A ſhort deſcription of Squire Allworthy, and a fuller account of Miſs Bridget Allworthy his ſiſter.

IN that part of the weſtern diviſion of this kingdom, which is commonly called Somerſetſhire, there lately lived (and perhaps lives ſtill) a gentleman whoſe name was Allworthy, and who might well be called the favourite of both nature and fortune; for both of theſe ſeem to have contended which ſhould bleſs and enrich him moſt. In this contention, nature may ſeem to ſome to have come off victorious, as ſhe beſtowed on him many gifts; while fortune had only one gift in her power; but in pouring forth this, ſhe was ſo very profuſe, that others perhaps may think this ſingle endowment to have been more than equivalent to all the various bleſſings which he enjoyed from nature. From the former of theſe, he derived an agreeable perſon, a ſound conſtitution, a ſolid underſtanding, and a benevolent heart; by the latter, he was decreed to the inheritance of one of the largeſt eſtates in the county.

This gentleman had, in his youth, married a very worthy and beautiful woman, of whom he had been extremely fond; by her he had three children, all of whom died in their infancy. He had likewiſe had the misfortune of burying this beloved wife herſelf, about five years before the time in which this hiſtory chuſes to ſet out. This loſs, however great, he bore like a man of ſenſe and conſtancy; though it muſt be confeſt, he would often talk a little whimſically on this head: for he ſometimes ſaid, he looked on himſelf as ſtill married, and conſidered his wife as only gone a little before him a journey which he ſhould moſt certainly, ſooner or later, take after her; and that he had not the leaſt doubt of meeting her again, in a place where he ſhould never part with her more. Sentiments for which his ſenſe was arraigned by one part of his neighbours, his religion by a ſecond, and his ſincerity by a third.

He

He now lived, for the moſt part, retired in the country, with one ſiſter, for whom he had a very tender affection. This lady was now ſomewhat paſt the age of 30, an æra, at which, in the opinion of the malicious, the title of old maid may, with no impropriety, be aſſumed. She was of that ſpecies of women, whom you commend rather for good qualities than beauty, and who are generally called by their own ſex, very good ſort of women—as good a ſort of woman, Madam, as you would wiſh to know. Indeed ſhe was ſo far from regretting want of beauty, that ſhe never mentioned that perfection (if it can be called one) without contempt; and would often thank God ſhe was not as handſome as Miſs ſuch a one, whom perhaps beauty had led into errors, which ſhe might have otherwiſe avoided. Miſs Bridget Allworthy (for that was the name of this lady) very rightly conceived the charms of perſon in a woman to be no better than ſnares for herſelf, as well as for others; and yet ſo diſcreet was ſhe in her conduct, that her prudence was as much on the guard, as if ſhe had all the ſnares to apprehend which were ever laid for her whole ſex. Indeed, I have obſerved (though it may ſeem unaccountable to the reader) that this guard of prudence, like the trained bands, is always readieſt to go on duty where there is the leaſt danger. It often baſely and cowardly deſerts thoſe paragons for whom the men are all wiſhing, ſighing, dying, and ſpreading every net in their power; and conſtantly attends at the heels of that higher order of women, for whom the other ſex have a more diſtant and awful reſpect, and whom (from deſpair, I ſuppoſe, of ſucceſs) they never venture to attack.

Reader, I think proper, before we proceed any farther together, to acquaint thee, that I intend to digreſs, through this whole hiſtory, as often as I ſee occaſion; of which I am myſelf a better judge than any pitiful critics whatever. And here I muſt deſire all thoſe critics to mind their own buſineſs, and not to intermeddle with affairs, or works, which no ways concern them: for till they produce the authority by which they are conſtituted judges, I ſhall not plead to their juriſdiction.

CHAP. III.

An odd accident which befel Mr. Allworthy, at his return home. The decent behaviour of Mrs. Deborah Wilkins, with ſome proper animadverſions on baſtards.

I HAVE told my reader, in the preceding chapter, that Mr. Allworthy inherited a large fortune; that he had a good heart, and no family. Hence, doubtleſs, it will be concluded by many, that he lived like an honeſt man, owed no one a ſhilling, took nothing but what was his own, kept a good houſe, entertained his neighbours with a hearty welcome at his table, and was charitable to the poor, *i. e.* to thoſe who had rather beg than work, by giving them the offals from it; that he died immenſely rich, and built an hoſpital.

And true it is, that he did many of theſe things; but, had he done nothing more, I ſhould have left him to have recorded his own merit on ſome fair free-ſtone over the door of that hoſpital. Matters of a much more extraordinary kind are to be the ſubject of this hiſtory, or I ſhould groſsly miſpend my time in writing ſo voluminous a work; and you, my ſagacious friend, might, with equal profit and pleaſure, travel through ſome pages, which certain droll authors have been facetiouſly pleaſed to call *The Hiſtory of England.*

Mr. Allworthy had been abſent a full quarter of a year in London, on ſome very particular buſineſs, though I know not what it was; but judge of its importance, by its having detained him ſo long from home, whence he had not been abſent a month at a time during the ſpace of many years. He came to his houſe very late in the evening, and after a ſhort ſupper with his ſiſter, retired much fatigued to his chamber. Here, having ſpent ſome minutes on his knees, a cuſtom which he never broke through on any account, he was preparing to ſtep into bed, when, upon opening the cloaths, to his great ſurprize, he beheld an infant, wrapt up in ſome coarſe linen, in a ſweet and

and profound ſleep, between his ſheets. He ſtood ſome time loſt in aſtoniſhment at this ſight; but, as good nature had always the aſcendant in his mind, he ſoon began to be touched with ſentiments of compaſſion for the little wretch before him. He then rang his bell, and ordered an elderly woman ſervant to riſe immediately and come to him, and in the mean time was ſo eager in contemplating the beauty of innocence, appearing in thoſe lively colours with which infancy and ſleep always diſplay it, that his thoughts were too much engaged to reflect that he was in his ſhirt, when the matron came in. She had indeed given her maſter ſufficient time to dreſs himſelf; for out of reſpect to him, and regard to decency, ſhe had ſpent many minutes in adjuſting her hair at the looking-glaſs, notwithſtanding all the hurry in which ſhe had been ſummoned by the ſervant, and though her maſter, for aught ſhe knew, lay expiring in an apoplexy or in ſome other fit.

It will not be wondered at, that a creature, who had ſo ſtrict a regard to decency in her own perſon, ſhould be ſhocked at the leaſt deviation from it in another. She therefore no ſooner opened the door, and ſaw her maſter ſtanding by the bed-ſide in his ſhirt, with a candle in his hand, than ſhe ſtarted back in a moſt terrible fright, and might perhaps have ſwooned away, had he not now recollected his being undreſt, and put an end to her terrors, by deſiring her to ſtay without the door, till he had thrown ſome cloaths over his back, and was become incapable of ſhocking the pure eyes of Mrs. Deborah Wilkins, who, though in the 52d year of her age, vowed ſhe had never beheld a man without his coat. Sneerers and prophane wits may perhaps laugh at her firſt fright; yet, my graver reader, when he conſiders the time of night, the ſummons from her bed, and the ſituation in which ſhe found her maſter, will highly juſtify and applaud her conduct; unleſs the prudence, which muſt be ſuppoſed to attend maidens at that period of life at which Mrs. Deborah had arrived, ſhould a little leſſen his admiration.

When Mrs. Deborah returned into the room, and was acquainted by her maſter with the finding the little

infant, her conſternation was rather greater than his had been; nor could ſhe refrain from crying out, with great horror of accent as well as look, 'My good 'Sir! what's to be done?' Mr. Allworthy anſwered, ſhe muſt take care of the child that evening, and in the morning he would give orders to provide it a nurſe. 'Yes Sir,' ſays ſhe, and I hope your wor-'ſhip will ſend out your warrant to take up the huſſy 'its mother (for ſhe muſt be one of the neighbour-'hood) and I ſhould be glad to ſee her committed to 'Bridewell, and whipt at the cart's tail. Indeed ſuch 'wicked ſluts cannot be too ſeverely puniſhed. I'll 'warrant 'tis not her firſt, by her impudence in laying 'it to your worſhip.' 'In laying it to me! Debo-'rah,' anſwered Allworthy, 'I can't think ſhe hath 'any ſuch deſign. I ſuppoſe ſhe hath only taken this 'method to provide for her child; and truly I am 'glad ſhe hath not done worſe.' 'I don't know 'what is worſe,' cries Deborah, 'than for ſuch 'wicked ſtrumpets to lay their ſins at honeſt men's 'doors; and though your worſhip knows your own 'innocence, yet the world is cenſorious; and it hath 'been many an honeſt man's hap to paſs for the father 'of children he never begot; and if your worſhip 'ſhould provide for the child, it may make the peop'e 'the apter to believe; beſides, why ſhould your wor-'ſhip provide for what the pariſh is obliged to main-'tain? For my own part, if it was an honeſt man's 'child indeed; but for my own part, it goes againſt 'me to touch theſe miſbegotten wretches, whom I 'don't look upon as my fellow-creatures. Faugh, 'how it ſtinks! It doth not ſmell like a chriſtian; if I 'might be ſo bold to give my advice, I would have it 'put in a baſket, and ſent out and laid at the church-'warden's door. It is a good night, only a little 'rainy and windy; and if it was well wrapt up, and 'put in a warm baſket, it is two to one but it lives, 'till it is found in the morning. But if it it ſhould not, 'we have diſcharged our duty in taking proper care 'of it; and it is, perhaps, better for ſuch creatures 'to die in a ſtate of innocence, than to grow up and 'imitate their mothers; for nothing better can be ex-'ected of them.' There

There were ſome ſtrokes in this ſpeech which, perhaps, would have offended Mr. Allworthy, had he ſtrictly attended to it; but he had now got one of his fingers into the infant's hand, which, by its gentle preſſure, ſeeming to implore his aſſiſtance, had certainly out-pleaded the eloquence of Mrs. Deborah, had it been ten times greater than it was. He now gave Mrs. Deborah poſitive orders to take the child to her own bed, and to call up a maid-ſervant to provide it pap, and other things againſt it waked. He likewiſe ordered that proper cloaths ſhould be procured for it early in the morning, and that it ſhould be brought to himſelf as ſoon as he was ſtirring.

Such was the diſcernment of Mrs. Wilkins, and ſuch the reſpect ſhe bore her maſter, under whom ſhe enjoyed a moſt excellent place, that her ſcruples gave way to his preremptory commands; and ſhe took the child under her arms, without any apparent diſguſt at the illegality of its birth; and declaring it was a ſweet little infant, walked off with it to her own chamber.

Allworthy here betook himſelf to thoſe pleaſing ſlumbers which a heart that hungers after goodneſs is apt to enjoy when thoroughly ſatisfied: as theſe are poſſibly ſweeter than what are occaſioned by any other hearty meal, I ſhould take more pains to diſplay them to the reader, if I knew any air to recommend him to for the procuring ſuch an appetite.

CHAP. IV.

The reader's neck brought into danger by a deſcription; his eſcape, and the great condeſcenſion of Miſs Bridget Allworthy.

THE Gothic ſtile of building could produce nothing nobler than Mr. Allworthy's houſe. There was an air of grandeur in it that ſtruck you with awe, and rivalled the beauties of the beſt Grecian architecture; and it was as commodious within, as venerable without.

It ſtood on the ſouth-eaſt ſide of a hill, but nearer the bottom than the top of it, ſo as to be ſheltered fro-

from the north-eaſt by a grove of old oaks, which roſe above it in a gradual aſcent of near half a mile, and yet high enough to enjoy a moſt charming proſpect of the valley beneath.

In the midſt of the grove was a fine lawn, ſloping down towards the houſe, near the ſummit of which roſe a plentiful ſpring, guſhing out of a rock covered with firs, and forming a conſtant caſcade of about thirty foot, not carried down a regular flight of ſteps, but tumbling in a natural fall over the broken and moſſy ſtones, till it came to the bottom of the rock; then running off in a pebly channel, that with many leſſer falls winded along, till it fell into a lake at the foot of the hill, about a quarter of a mile below the houſe on the ſouth-ſide, and which was ſeen from every room in the front. Out of this lake, which filled the center of a beautiful plain, embelliſhed with groupes of beeches and elms, and fed with ſheep, iſſued a river, that, for ſeveral miles, was ſeen to meander through an amazing variety of meadows and woods, till it emptied itſelf into the ſea; with a large arm of which, and an iſland beyond it, the proſpect was cloſed.

On the right of this valley opened another of leſs extent, adorned with ſeveral villages, and terminated by one of the towers of an old ruined abbey, grown over with ivy, and part of the front, which remained ſtill entire.

The left hand ſcene preſented the view of a very fine park, compoſed of very unequal ground, and agreeably varied with all the diverſity that hills, lawns, wood, and water laid out with admirable taſte, but owing leſs to art than to nature, could give. Beyond this the country gradually roſe into a ridge of wild mountains, the tops of which were above the clouds.

It was now the middle of May, and the morning was remarkably ſerene, when Mr. Allworthy walked forth on the terrace, where the dawn opened every minute that lovely proſpect we have before deſcribed to his eye. And now having ſent forth ſtreams of light, which aſcended the blue firmament before him,

as

as harbingers preceding his pomp, in the full blaze of his majeſty up roſe the ſun; than which one object alone in this lower creation could be more glorious, and that Mr. Allworthy himſelf preſented; a human being replete with benevolence, meditating in what manner he might render himſelf moſt acceptable to his Creator, by doing moſt good to his creatures.

Reader, take care, I have unadviſedly led thee to the top of as high a hill as Mr. Allworthy's, and how to get thee down without breaking thy neck, I do not well know. However, let us e'en venture to ſlide down together; for Miſs Bridget rings her bell, and Mr. Allworthy is ſummoned to breakfaſt, where I muſt attend, and if you pleaſe, ſhall be glad of your company.

The uſual compliments having paſſed between Mr. Allworthy and Miſs Bridget, and the tea being poured out, he ſummoned Mrs. Wilkins, and told his ſiſter he had a preſent for her; for which ſhe thanked him, imagining, I ſuppoſe, it had been a gown, or ſome ornament for her perſon. Indeed, he very often made her ſuch preſents; and ſhe, in complacence to him, ſpent much time in adorning herſelf. I ſay, in complacence to him, becauſe ſhe always expreſt the greateſt contempt for dreſs, and for thoſe ladies who made it their ſtudy.

But if ſuch was her expectation, how was ſhe diſappointed, when Mrs. Wilkins, according to the order ſhe had received from her maſter, produced the little infant! Great ſurprizes, as hath been obſerved, are apt to be ſilent; and ſo was Miſs Bridget, 'till her brother began, and told her the whole ſtory, which, as the reader knows it already, we ſhall not repeat.

Miſs Bridget had always expreſt ſo great a regard for what the ladies are pleaſed to call virtue, and had herſelf maintained ſuch a ſeverity of character, that it was expected, eſpecially by Wilkins, that ſhe would have vented much bitterneſs on this occaſion, and would have voted for ſending the child, as a kind of noxious animal, immediately out of the houſe; but, on the contrary, ſhe rather took the good-natured ſide

of the queſtion, intimated ſome compaſſion for the helpleſs little creature, and commended her brother's charity in what he had done.

Perhaps the reader may account for this behaviour from her condeſcenſion to Mr. Allworthy, when we have informed him, that the good man had ended his narrative with owning a reſolution to take care of the child, and to breed him up as his own; for, to acknowledge the truth, ſhe was always ready to oblige her brother, and very ſeldom, if ever, contradicted his ſentiments; ſhe would indeed ſometimes make a few obſervations, as, that men were headſtrong, and muſt have their own way, and would wiſh ſhe had been bleſt with an independent fortune; but theſe were always vented in a low voice, and at the moſt amounted only to what is called muttering.

However, what ſhe with-held from the infant, ſhe beſtowed with the utmoſt profuſeneſs on the poor unknown mother, whom ſhe called an impudent ſlut, a wanton huſſy, an audacious harlot, a wicked jade, a vile ſtrumpet, with every other appellation with which the tongue of virtue never fails to laſh thoſe who bring a diſgrace on the ſex.

A conſultation was now entered into, how to proceed in order to diſcover the mother. A ſcrutiny was firſt made into the characters of the female ſervants of the houſe, who were all acquitted by Mrs. Wilkins, and with apparent merit; for ſhe had collected them herſelf; and perhaps it would be difficult to find ſuch another ſet of ſcarecrows.

The next ſtep was to examine among the inhabitants of the pariſh; and this was referred to Mrs. Wilkins, who was to enquire with all imaginable diligence, and to make her report in the afternoon.

Matters being thus ſettled, Mr. Allworthy withdrew to his ſtudy, as was his cuſtom, and left the child to his ſiſter, who, at his deſire, had undertaken the care of it.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Containing a few common matters, with a very uncommon obſervation upon them.

WHEN her maſter was departed, Mrs. Deborah ſtood ſilent, expecting her cue from Miſs Bridget; for as to what had paſt before her maſter, the prudent houſe-keeper by no means relied upon it, as ſhe had often known the ſentiments of the lady, in her brother's abſence, to differ greatly from thoſe which ſhe had expreſſed in his preſence. Miſs Bridget did not, however, ſuffer her to continue long in this doubtful ſituation; for having looked ſome time earneſtly at the child, as it lay aſleep in the lap of Mrs. Deborah, the good lady could not forbear giving it a hearty kiſs, at the ſame time declaring herſelf wonderfully pleaſed with its beauty and innocence. Mrs. Deborah no ſooner obſerved this, than ſhe fell to ſqueezing and kiſſing, with as great raptures as ſometimes inſpire the ſage dame of forty and five towards a youthful and vigorous bridegroom, crying out in a ſhrill voice, 'O the dear little creature, the dear, 'ſweet, pretty creature! Well, I vow, it is as fine a 'boy as ever was ſeen!'

Theſe exclamations continued, 'till they were interrupted by the lady, who now proceeded to execute the commiſſion given her by her brother, and gave orders for providing all neceſſaries for the child, appointing a very good room in the houſe for his nurſery. Her orders were indeed ſo liberal, that, had it been a child of her own, ſhe could not have exceeded them: but, leaſt the virtuous reader may condemn her for ſhewing too great a regard to a baſe-born infant, to which all charity is condemned by law as irreligious, we think proper to obſerve, that ſhe concluded the whole with ſaying, 'Since it was her 'brother's whim to adopt the little brat, ſhe ſup-'poſed little maſter muſt be treated with great ten-'derneſs: for her part, ſhe could not help thinking 'it was an encouragement to vice; but that ſhe knew

'too

'too much of the obſtinacy of mankind to oppoſe any 'of their ridiculous humours.'

With reflections of this nature ſhe uſually, as has been hinted, accompanied every act of compliance with her brother's inclinations; and ſurely nothing could more contribute to heighten the merit of this compliance, than a declaration that ſhe knew, at the ſame time, the folly and unreaſonableneſs of thoſe inclinations to which ſhe ſubmitted. Tacit obedience implies no force upon the will, and, conſequently, may be eaſily, and without any pains, preſerved; but when a wife, a child, a relation, or a friend, performs what we deſire, with grumbling and reluctance, with expreſſions of diſlike and diſſatisfaction, the manifeſt difficulty which they undergo, muſt greatly enhance the obligation.

As this is one of thoſe deep obſervations which very few readers can be ſuppoſed capable of making themſelves, I have thought proper to lend them my aſſiſtance; but this is a favour rarely to be expected in the courſe of my work. Indeed I ſhall ſeldom or never ſo indulge him, unleſs in ſuch inſtances as this, where nothing but the inſpiration with which we writers are gifted, can poſſibly enable any one to make the diſcovery.

CHAP. VI.

Mrs. Deborah is introduced into the pariſh with a ſimile. A ſhort account of Jenny Jones, with the difficulties and diſcouragements which may attend young women in the purſuit of learning.

MRS. Deborah, having diſpoſed of the child according to the will of her maſter, now prepared to viſit thoſe habitations which were ſuppoſed to conceal its mother.

Not otherwiſe than when a kite, tremendous bird, is beheld by the feathered generation ſoaring aloft, and hovering over their heads; the amorous dove, and every innocent little bird, ſpread wide the alarm, and fly trembling to their hiding-places. He proudly beats

beats the air, conſcious of his dignity, and meditates intended miſchief.

So when the approach of Mrs. Deborah was proclaimed through the ſtreet, all the inhabitants ran trembling into their houſes, each matron dreading leſt the viſit ſhould fall to her lot. She with ſtately ſteps proudly advances over the field, aloft ſhe bears her tow'ring head, filled with conceit of her own pre-eminence, and ſchemes to effect her intended diſcovery.

The ſagacious reader will not, from this ſimile, imagine theſe poor people had any apprehenſion of the deſign with which Mrs. Wilkins was now coming towards them; but as the great beauty of the ſimile may poſſibly ſleep theſe hundred years, till ſome future commentator ſhall take this work in hand, I think proper to lend the reader a little aſſiſtance in this place.

It is my intention therefore to ſignify, that, as it is the nature of a kite to devour little birds, ſo is it the nature of ſuch perſons as Mrs. Wilkins to inſult and tyrannize over little people. This being indeed the means which they uſe to recompenſe to themſelves their extreme ſervility and condeſcenſion to their ſuperiors; for nothing can be more reaſonable than that ſlaves and flatterers ſhould exact the ſame taxes on all below them, which they themſelves pay to all above them.

Whenever Mrs. Deborah had occaſion to exert any extraordinary condeſcenſion to Mrs. Bridget, and by that means had a little ſoured her natural diſpoſition, it was uſual with her to walk forth among theſe people, in order to refine her temper, by venting, and, as it were, purging off all ill humours; on which account, ſhe was by no means a welcome viſitant: to ſay the truth, ſhe was univerſally dreaded and hated by them all.

On her arrival in this place, ſhe went immediately to the habitation of an elderly matron; to whom, as this matron had the good fortune to reſemble herſelf in the comelineſs of her perſon, as well as in her age, ſhe had generally been more favourable than to any of the

the reſt. To this woman ſhe imparted what had happened, and the deſign upon which ſhe was come thither that morning. Theſe two began preſently to ſcrutinize the characters of the ſeveral young girls, who lived in any of thoſe houſes, and at laſt fixed their ſtrongeſt ſuſpicion on one Jenny Jones, who they both agreed was the likelieſt perſon to have committed this fact.

This Jenny Jones was no very comely girl, either in her face or perſon; but nature had ſomewhat compenſated the want of beauty with what is generally more eſteemed by thoſe ladies, whoſe judgment is arrived at years of perfect maturity; for ſhe had given her a very uncommon ſhare of underſtanding. This gift Jenny had a good deal improved by erudition. She had lived ſeveral years a ſervant with a ſchoolmaſter, who diſcovering a great quickneſs of parts in the girl, and an extraordinary deſire of learning, (for every leiſure hour ſhe was always found reading in the books of the ſcholars) had the good-nature, or folly (juſt as the reader pleaſes to call it,) to inſtruct her ſo far, that ſhe obtained a competent ſkill in the Latin language, and was, perhaps, as good a ſcholar as moſt of the young men of quality of the age. This advantage, however, like moſt others of an extraordinary kind, was attended with ſome ſmall inconveniencies: for as it is not to be wondered at, that a young woman ſo well accompliſhed ſhould have little reliſh for the ſociety of thoſe whom fortune had made her equals, but whom education had rendered ſo much her inferiors; ſo is it matter of no greater aſtoniſhment, that this ſuperiority in Jenny, together with that behaviour which is its certain conſequence, ſhould produce among the reſt ſome little envy and ill-will towards her; and theſe had, perhaps, ſecretly burnt in the boſoms of her neighbours, ever ſince her return from her ſervice.

Their envy did not, however, diſplay itſelf openly, till poor Jenny, to the ſurprize of every body, and to the vexation of all the young women in theſe parts, had publickly ſhone forth on a Sunday in a new ſilk gown, with a laced cap, and other proper appendages to theſe.

The

The flame, which had before lain in embryo, now burſt forth. Jenny had, by her learning, encreaſed her own pride, which none of her neighbours were kind enough to feed with the honour ſhe ſeemed to demand; and now, inſtead of reſpect and adoration, ſhe gained nothing but hatred and abuſe by her finery. The whole pariſh declared ſhe could not come honeſtly by ſuch things; and parents, inſtead of wiſhing their daughters the ſame, felicitated themſelves that their children had them not.

Hence perhaps it was, that the good woman firſt mentioned the name of this poor girl to Mrs. Wilkins; but there was another circumſtance that confirmed the latter in her ſuſpicion: for Jenny had lately been often at Mr. Allworthy's houſe. She had officiated as nurſe to Miſs Bridget, in a violent fit of illneſs, and had ſat up many nights with that lady; beſides which, ſhe had been ſeen there the very day before Mr. Allworthy's return, by Mrs. Wilkins herſelf, though that ſagacious perſon had not at firſt conceived any ſuſpicion of her on that account: for, as ſhe herſelf ſaid, 'She had always eſteemed Jenny as a very ſober girl, '(though indeed ſhe knew very little of her) and had 'rather ſuſpected ſome of thoſe wanton trollops, who 'gave themſelves airs, becauſe, forſooth, they thought 'themſelves handſome.'

Jenny was now ſummoned to appear in perſon before Mrs. Deborah, which ſhe immediately did. When Mrs. Deborah, putting on the gravity of a judge, with ſomewhat more than his auſterity, began an oration with the words, 'You audacious ſtrumpet,' in which ſhe proceeded rather to paſs ſentence on the priſoner than to accuſe her.

Though Mrs. Deborah was fully ſatisfied of the guilt of Jenny, from the reaſons above ſhewn, it is poſſible Mr. Allworthy might have required ſome ſtronger evidence to have convicted her; but ſhe ſaved her accuſers any ſuch trouble, by freely confeſſing the whole fact with which ſhe was charged.

This confeſſion, though delivered rather in terms of contrition, as it appeared, did not at all mollify Mrs. Deborah, who now pronounced a ſecond judgment againſt

againſt her, in more opprobrious language than before: Nor had it any better ſucceſs with the byeſtanders, who were now grown very numerous. Many of them cried out, 'They thought what Madam's 'ſilk gown would end in;' others ſpoke ſarcaſtically of her learning. Not a ſingle female was preſent, but found ſome means of expreſſing her abhorrence of poor Jenny; who bore all very patiently, except the malice of one woman, who reflected upon her perſon, and, toſſing up her noſe, ſaid, 'The man muſt have a good 'ſtomach, who would give ſilk gowns for ſuch ſort of 'trumpery.' Jenny replied to this, with a bitterneſs which might have ſurprized a judicious perſon, who had obſerved the tranquility with which ſhe bore all the affronts to her chaſtity: but her patience was, perhaps, tired out; for this is a virtue which is very apt to be fatigued by exerciſe.

Mrs. Deborah having ſucceeded beyond her hopes in her enquiry, returned with much triumph, and, at the appointed hour, made a faithful report to Mr. Allworthy, who was much ſurprized at the relation; for he had heard of the extraordinary parts and improvements of this girl, whom he intended to have given in marriage, together with a ſmall living, to a neighbouring curate. His concern therefore, on this occaſion, was at leaſt equal to the ſatisfaction which appeared in Mrs. Deborah, and to many readers may ſeem much more reaſonable.

Mrs. Bridget bleſſed herſelf, and ſaid, 'For her 'part, ſhe ſhould never hereafter entertain a good 'opinion of any woman.' For Jenny before this had the happineſs of being much in her good graces alſo.

The prudent houſekeeper was again diſpatched to bring the unhappy culprit before Mr. Allworthy, in order, not, as it was hoped by ſome, and expected by all, to be ſent to the houſe of correction; but to receive wholeſome admonition and reproof, which thoſe who reliſh that kind of inſtructive writing, may peruſe in the next chapter.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

Containing ſuch grave matter, that the reader cannot laugh once through the whole chapter, unleſs peradventure he ſhould laugh at the author.

WHEN Jenny appeared, Mr. Allworthy took her into his ſtudy, and ſpoke to her as follows: 'You know, child, it is in my power, as a magiſtrate, to puniſh you very rigorouſly for what you have done; and you will, perhaps, be the more apt to fear I ſhould execute that power, becauſe you have, in a manner, laid your ſins at my door.

'But perhaps this is one reaſon which hath determined me to act in a milder manner with you: for, as no private reſentment ſhould ever influence a magiſtrate, I will be ſo far from conſidering your having depoſited the infant in my houſe, as an aggravation of your offence, that I will ſuppoſe, in your favour, this to have proceeded from a natural affection to your child; ſince you might have ſome hopes to ſee it thus better provided for, than was in the power of yourſelf, or its wicked father, to provide for it. I ſhould indeed have been highly offended with you, had you expoſed the little wretch in the manner of ſome inhuman mothers, who ſeem no leſs to have abandoned their humanity, than to have parted with their chaſtity. It is the other part of your offence, therefore, upon which I intend to admoniſh you, I mean the violation of your chaſtity. A crime however lightly it may be treated by debauched perſons, very heinous in itſelf, and very dreadful in its conſequences.

'The heinous nature of this offence muſt be ſufficiently apparent to every chriſtian, inaſmuch as it is committed in defiance of the laws of our religion, and of the expreſs commands of him who founded that religion.

'And here its conſequences may well be argued to be dreadful; for what can be more ſo, than to incur the divine diſpleaſure, by the breach of the divine com-

'commands; and that in an inſtance, againſt which 'the higheſt vengeance is ſpecifically denounced?

'But theſe things, though too little, I am afraid, re-'garded, are ſo plain, that mankind, however they may 'want to be reminded, can never need information on 'this head. A hint therefore, to awaken your ſenſe 'of this matter, ſhall ſuffice; for I would inſpire you 'with repentance, and not drive you to deſperation.

'There are other conſequences, not indeed ſo 'dreadful, or replete with horror, as this; and yet 'ſuch as, if attentively conſidered, muſt, one would 'think, deter all, of your ſex, at leaſt, from the 'commiſſion of this crime.

'For by it you are rendered infamous, and driven, 'like lepers of old, out of ſociety; at leaſt from the 'ſociety of all but wicked and reprobate perſons; for 'no others will aſſociate with you.

'If you have fortunes, you are hereby rendered 'incapable of enjoying them; if you have none, 'you are diſabled from acquiring any, nay almoſt of 'procuring your ſuſtenance; for no perſons of cha-'racter will receive you into their houſes. Thus you 'are often driven by neceſſity itſelf into a ſtate of 'ſhame and miſery, which unavoidably ends in the 'deſtruction of both body and ſoul.

'Can any pleaſure compenſate theſe evils? Can 'any temptation have ſophiſtry and deluſion ſtrong 'enough to perſuade you to ſo ſimple a bargain? Or 'can any carnal appetite ſo over-power your reaſon, 'or ſo totally lay it aſleep, as to prevent your flying 'with affright and terror from a crime which carries 'ſuch puniſhment always with it?

'How baſe and mean muſt that woman be, how 'void of that dignity of mind, and decent pride, 'without which we are not worthy the name of hu-'man creatures, who can bear to level herſelf with 'the loweſt animal, and to ſacrifice all that is great 'and noble in her, all her heavenly part, to an ap-'petite which ſhe hath in common with the vileſt 'branch of the creation! For no woman ſure, will 'plead the paſſion of love for an excuſe. This would 'be to own herſelf the meer tool and bubble of the

'man.

'man. Love, however barbarouſly we may corrupt 'and pervert its meaning, as it is a laudable, is a ra-'tional paſſion, and can never be violent, but when 'reciprocal; for though the ſcripture bids us love our 'enemies, it means not with that fervent love which 'we naturally bear towards our friends; much leſs 'that we ſhould ſacrifice to them our lives, and what 'ought to be dearer to us, our innocence. Now in 'what light, but that of an enemy, can a reaſonable 'woman regard the man, who ſolicits her to entail 'on herſelf, all the miſery I have deſcribed to you, 'and who would purchaſe to himſelf a ſhort, trivial, 'contemptible pleaſure, ſo greatly at her expence! 'For, by the laws of cuſtom, the whole ſhame, 'with all its dreadful conſequences, falls intirely upon 'her. Can love, which always ſeeks the good of its 'object, attempt to betray a woman into a bargain 'where ſhe is ſo greatly to be the loſer? If ſuch cor-'rupter, therefore, ſhould have the impudence to 'pretend a real affection for her, ought not the 'woman to regard him, not only as an enemy, but 'as the worſt of all enemies; a falſe, deſigning, 'treacherous, pretended friend, who intends not only 'to debauch her body, but her underſtanding at the 'ſame time?'

Here Jenny expreſſing great concern, Allworthy pauſed a moment, and then proceeded: 'I have 'talked thus to you, child, not to inſult you for what 'is paſt, and irrevocable, but to caution and ſtreng-'then you for the future. Nor ſhould I have taken 'this trouble, but from ſome opinion of your good 'ſenſe, notwithſtanding the dreadful ſlip you have 'made; and from ſome hopes of your hearty repen-'tance, which are founded on the openneſs and ſin-'cerity of your confeſſion. If theſe do not deceive 'me, I will take care to convey you from this ſcene 'of your ſhame, where you ſhall, by being unknown, 'avoid the puniſhment which, as I have ſaid, is allot-'ted to your crime in this world; and I hope, by re-'pentance, you will avoid the much heavier ſentence 'denounced againſt it in the other. Be a good girl 'the reſt of your days, and want ſhall be no motive

'to

'to your going aſtray: and believe me, there is more 'pleaſure, even in this world, in an innocent and vir- 'tuous life, than in one debauched and vicious.

'As to your child, let no thoughts concerning it 'moleſt you; I will provide for it in a better man- 'ner than you can ever hope. And now nothing re- 'mains, but that you inform me who was the wicked 'man that ſeduced you; for my anger againſt him 'will be much greater than you have experienced on 'this occaſion.'

Jenny now lifted up her eyes from the ground, and with a modeſt look, and decent voice, thus began:

'To know you, Sir, and not love your goodneſs, 'would be an argument of total want of ſenſe or 'goodneſs in any one. In me it would amount to 'the higheſt ingratitude, not to feel, in the moſt ſen- 'ſible manner, the great degree of goodneſs you have 'been pleaſed to exert on this occaſion. As to my 'concern for what is paſt, I know you will ſpare 'my bluſhes the repetition. My future conduct will 'much better declare my ſentiments, than any pro- 'feſſions I can now make. I beg leave to aſſure you, 'Sir, that I take your advice much kinder, than your 'generous offer with which you concluded it.

'For, as you are pleaſed to ſay, Sir, it is an inſtance 'of your opinion of my underſtanding.'—Here her tears flowing apace, ſhe ſtopped a few moments, and then proceeded thus: 'Indeed, Sir, your kindneſs 'overcomes me; but I will endeavour to deſerve this 'good opinion: for if I have the underſtanding you 'are ſo kindly pleaſed to allow me, ſuch advice cannot 'be thrown away upon me. I thank you, Sir, heartily, 'for your intended kindneſs to my poor helpleſs 'child: he is innocent, and I hope will live to be 'grateful for all the favours you ſhall ſhew him. But, 'now, Sir, I muſt on my knees intreat you, not to 'perſiſt in aſking me to declare the father of my in- 'fant. I promiſe you faithfully, you ſhall one day 'know; but I am under the moſt ſolemn ties and en- 'gagements of honour, as well as the moſt religious 'vows and proteſtations, to conceal his name at this 'time. And I know you too well to think you would

'deſire

'desire I should sacrifice either my honour, or my religion.'

Mr. Allworthy, whom the least mention of those sacred words was sufficient to stagger, hesitated a moment before he replied, and then told her she had done wrong to enter into such engagements to a villain; but since she had, he could not insist on her breaking them. He said, it was not from a motive of vain curiosity he had enquired, but in order to punish the fellow; at least, that he might not ignorantly confer favours on the undeserving.

As to these points, Jenny satisfied him by the most solemn assurances, that the man was entirely out of his reach, and was neither subject to his power, nor in any probability of becoming an object of his goodness.

The ingenuity of this behaviour had gained Jenny so much credit with this worthy man, that he easily believed what she told him: for as she had disdained to excuse herself by a lie, and had hazarded his farther displeasure in her present situation, rather than she should forfeit her honour, or integrity, by betraying another, he had but little apprehension that she would be guilty of falshood towards himself.

He therefore dismissed her with assurances, that he would very soon remove her out of the reach of that obloquy she had incurred, concluding with some additional documents, in which he recommended repentance, saying, 'Consider, child, there is one still to 'reconcile yourself to, whose favour is of much greater 'importance to you than mine.'

CHAP. VIII.

A dialogue between Mesdames Bridget and Deborah; containing more amusement, but less instruction, than the former.

WHEN Mr. Allworthy had retired to his study with Jenny Jones, as hath been seen, Mrs. Bridget, with the good house-keeper, had betaken themselves to a post next adjoining to the said study; whence, through the conveyance of a key-hole, they

sucke

ſucked in at their ears the inſtructive lecture delivered by Mr. Allworthy, together with the anſwers of Jenny, and indeed every other particular which paſſed in the laſt chapter.

This hole in her brother's ſtudy door was indeed as well known to Mrs. Bridget, and had been as frequently applied to by her, as the famous hole in the wall was by Thiſbe of old. This ſerved to many good purpoſes. For by ſuch means Mrs. Bridget became often acquainted with her brother's inclinations, without giving him the trouble of repeating them to her. It is true, ſome inconveniencies attended this intercourſe, and ſhe had ſometimes reaſon to cry out with Thiſbe, in Shakeſpear, 'O wicked, wicked 'wall!' For as Mr. Allworthy was a juſtice of peace, certain things occurred in examinations concerning baſtards, and ſuch like, which are apt to give great offence to the chaſte ears of virgins, eſpecially when they approach the age of forty, as was the caſe of Mrs. Bridget. However, ſhe had, on ſuch occaſions, the advantage of concealing her bluſhes from the eyes of men; and *De non apparentibus, & non exiſtentibus eadem eſt ratio.* In Engliſh, 'When a woman is not 'ſeen to bluſh, ſhe doth not bluſh at all.'

Both the good women kept ſtrict ſilence during the whole ſcene between Mr. Allworthy and the girl; but as ſoon as it was ended, and that gentleman out of hearing, Mrs. Deborah could not help exclaiming againſt the clemency of her maſter, and eſpecially againſt his ſuffering her to conceal the father of the child, which ſhe ſwore ſhe would have out of her before the ſun-ſet.

At theſe words Mrs. Bridget diſcompoſed her features with a ſmile; (a thing very unuſual to her.) Not that I would have my reader imagine, that this was one of thoſe wanton ſmiles, which Homer would have you conceive came from Venus, when he calls her the laughter-loving Goddeſs; nor was it one of thoſe ſmiles, which lady Seraphina ſhoots from the ſtage-box, and which Venus would quit her immortality to be able to equal. No, this was rather one of thoſe ſmiles, which might be ſuppoſed to have come from

the

the dimpled cheeks of the auguſt Tiſiphone, or from one of the miſſes her ſiſters.

With ſuch a ſmile then, and with a voice, ſweet as the evening breeze of Boreas in the pleaſant month of November, Mrs. Bridget gently reproved the curioſity of Mrs. Deborah, a vice with which it ſeems the latter was too much tainted, and which the former inveighed againſt with great bitterneſs, adding, 'That 'among all her faults, ſhe thanked heaven, her ene-'mies could not accuſe her of prying into the affairs 'of other people.'

She then proceeded to commend the honour and ſpirit with which Jenny had acted. She ſaid, ſhe could not help agreeing with her brother, that there was ſome merit in the ſincerity of her confeſſion, and in her integrity to her lover: that ſhe had always thought her a very good girl, and doubted not but ſhe had been ſeduced by ſome raſcal, who had been infinitely more to blame than herſelf, and very probably had prevailed with her by a promiſe of marriage, or ſome other treacherous proceeding.

This behaviour of Mrs. Bridget greatly ſurprized Mrs. Deborah; for this well-bred woman ſeldom opened her lips either to her maſter or his ſiſter, 'till ſhe had firſt ſounded their inclinations, with which her ſentiments were always ſtrictly conſonant. Here, however, ſhe thought ſhe might have launched forth with ſafety; and the ſagacious reader will not perhaps accuſe her of want of ſufficient forecaſt in ſo doing, but will rather admire with what wonderful celerity ſhe tacked about, when ſhe found herſelf ſteering a wrong courſe.

'Nay, Madam,' ſaid this able woman, and truly great politician, 'I muſt own I cannot help admir-'ing the girl's ſpirit, as well as your ladyſhip. And, 'as your ladyſhip ſays, if ſhe was deceived by ſome 'wicked man, the poor wretch is to be pitied. And 'to be ſure, as your ladyſhip ſays, the girl hath al-'ways appeared like a good, honeſt, plain girl, and 'not vain of her face, forſooth, as ſome wanton huſ-'ſeys in the neighbourhood are.'

'You say true, Deborah,' said Mrs. Bridget, 'if the girl had been one of those vain trollops, of which we have too many in the parish, I should have condemned my brother for his lenity towards her. I saw two farmers daughters at church, the other day, with bare necks. I protest they shocked me. If wenches will hang out lures for fellows, it is no matter what they suffer. I detest such creatures; and it would be much better for them, that their faces had been seamed with the small-pox; but I must confess, I never saw any of this wanton behaviour in poor Jenny; some artful villain, I am convinced, hath betrayed, nay perhaps forced her; and I pity the poor wretch with all my heart.'

Mrs. Deborah approved all these sentiments, and the dialogue concluded with a general and bitter invective against beauty, and with many compassionate considerations for all honest, plain girls, who are deluded by the wicked arts of deceitful men.

CHAP. IX.

Containing matters which will surprize the reader.

JENNY returned home well pleased with the reception she had met with from Mr. Allworthy, whose indulgence to her she industriously made public; partly perhaps as a sacrifice to her own pride, and partly from the more prudent motive of reconciling her neighbours to her, and silencing their clamours.

But though this latter view, if she indeed had it, may appear reasonable enough, yet the event did not answer her expectation; for when she was convened before the justice, and it was universally apprehended, that the house of correction would have been her fate; tho' some of the young women cry'd out, 'It was good enough for her,' and diverted themselves with the thoughts of her beating hemp in a silk gown; yet there were many others who began to pity her condition: but when it was known in what manner Mr. Allworthy had behaved, the tide turned against

againſt her. One ſaid, 'I'll aſſure you, Madam hath 'had good luck.' A ſecond cry'd, 'See what it is 'to be a favourite.' A third, 'Ay, this comes of 'her learning.' Every perſon made ſome malicious comment or other, on the occaſion; and reflected on the partiality of the juſtice.

The behaviour of theſe people may appear impolitic and ungrateful to the reader, who conſiders the power, and the benevolence of Mr. Allworthy: but as to his power, he never uſed it; and as to his benevolence, he exerted ſo much, that he had thereby diſobliged all his neighbours: for it is a ſecret well known to great men, that by conferring an obligation, they do not always procure a friend, but are certain of creating many enemies.

Jenny was, however, by the care and goodneſs of Mr. Allworthy, ſoon removed out of the reach of reproach; when malice, being no longer able to vent its rage on her, began to ſeek another object of its bitterneſs, and this was no leſs than Mr. Allworthy himſelf; for a whiſper ſoon went abroad, that he himſelf was the father of the foundling child.

This ſuppoſition ſo well reconciled his conduct to the general opinion, that it met with univerſal aſſent; and the outcry againſt his lenity ſoon began to take another turn, and was changed into an invective againſt his cruelty to the poor girl. Very grave and good women exclaimed againſt men who begot children and then diſowned them. Nor were there wanting ſome, who, after the departure of Jenny, inſinuated, that ſhe was ſpirited away with a deſign too black to be mentioned, and who gave frequent hints, that a legal inquiry ought to be made into the whole matter, and that ſome people ſhould be forced to produce the girl.

Theſe calumnies might have probably produced ill conſequences (at the leaſt might have occaſioned ſome trouble) to a perſon of a more doubtful and ſuſpicious character than Mr. Allworthy was bleſſed with; but in his caſe they had no ſuch effect; and, being heartily deſpiſed by him, they ſerved only to afford an innocent amuſement to the good goſſips of the neighbourhood.

But as we cannot poſſibly divine what complection our reader may be of, and as it will be ſome time before he will hear any more of Jenny, we think proper to give him a very early intimation, that Mr. Allworthy was, and will hereafter appear to be, abſolutely innocent of any criminal intention whatever. He had indeed committed no other than an error in politics, by tempering juſtice with mercy, and by refuſing to gratify the good-natured diſpoſition of the mob *, with an object for their compaſſion to work on in the perſon of poor Jenny, whom, in order to pity, they deſired to have been ſacrificed to ruin and infamy by a ſhameful correction in a Bridewell.

So far from complying with this their inclination, by which all hopes of reformation would have been aboliſhed, and even the gate ſhut againſt her, if her own inclinations ſhould ever hereafter lead her to chuſe the road of virtue, Mr. Allworthy rather choſe to encourage the girl to return thither by the only poſſible means; for too true I am afraid it is, that many women have become abandoned, and have ſunk to the laſt degree of vice, by being unable to retrieve the firſt ſlip. This will be, I am afraid, always the caſe while they remain among their former acquaintance; it was therefore wiſely done by Mr. Allworthy, to remove Jenny to a place where ſhe might enjoy the pleaſure of reputation, after having taſted the ill conſequences of loſing it.

To this place therefore, wherever it was, we will wiſh her a good journey, and for the preſent take leave of her, and of the little foundling her child, having matters of much higher importance to communicate to the reader.

* Whenever this word occurs in our writings, it intends perſons without virtue, or ſenſe, in all ſtations; and many of the higheſt rank are often meant by it.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The hospitality of Allworthy; with a short sketch of the characters of two brothers, a doctor, and a captain, who were entertained by that gentleman.

NEITHER Mr. Allworthy's house, nor his heart, were shut against any part of mankind, but they were both more particularly open to men of merit. To say the truth, this was the only house in the kingdom where you was sure to gain a dinner by deserving it.

Above all others, men of genius and learning shared the principal place in his favour; and in these he had much discernment: for though he had missed the advantage of a learned education, yet being blest with vast natural abilities, he had so well profited by a vigorous, though late application to letters, and by much conversation with men of eminence in this way, that he was himself a very competent judge in most kinds of literature.

It is no wonder that in an age when this kind of merit is so little in fashion, and so slenderly provided for, persons possessed of it should very eagerly flock to a place where they were sure of being received with great complaisance; indeed where they might enjoy almost the same advantages of a liberal fortune as if they were entitled to it in their own right; for Mr. Allworthy was not one of those generous persons, who are ready most bountifully to bestow meat, drink, and lodging on men of wit and learning, for which they expect no other return but entertainment, instruction, flattery, and subserviency; in a word, that such persons should be enrolled in the number of domestics, without wearing their masters cloaths, or receiving wages.

On the contrary, every person in this house was perfect master of his own time: and as he might at his pleasure satisfy all his appetites within the restrictions only of law, virtue and religion; so he might, if his health required, or his inclination prompted

him to temperance, or even to abſtinence, abſent himſelf from any meals, or retire from them whenever he was ſo diſpoſed, without even a ſollicitation to the contrary: for indeed, ſuch ſollicitations from ſuperiors always ſavour very ſtrongly of commands. But all here were free from ſuch impertinence, not only thoſe, whoſe company is in all other places eſteemed a favour from their equality of fortune, but even thoſe whoſe indigent circumſtances make ſuch an eleemoſynary abode convenient to them, and who are therefore leſs welcome to a great man's table becauſe they ſtand in need of it.

Among others of this kind was Dr. Blifil, a gentleman who had the misfortune of loſing the advantage of great talents by the obſtinacy of a father, who would breed him to a profeſſion he diſliked. In obedience to this obſtinacy the doctor had in his youth been obliged to ſtudy phyſic, or rather to ſay he ſtudied it; for in reality books of this kind were almoſt the only ones with which he was unacquainted; and unfortunately for him, the doctor was maſter of almoſt every other ſcience but that by which he was to get his bread; the conſequence of which was, that the doctor at the age of forty had no bread to eat.

Such a perſon as this was certain to find a welcome at Mr. Allworthy's table, to whom misfortunes were ever a recommendation when they were derived from the folly or villainy of others, and not of the unfortunate perſon himſelf. Beſides this negative merit, the doctor had one poſitive recommendation. This was a great appearance of religion. Whether his religion was real, or conſiſted only in appearance, I ſhall not preſume to ſay, as I am not poſſeſſed of any touchſtone, which can diſtinguiſh the true from the falſe.

If this part of his character pleaſed Mr. Allworthy, it delighted Miſs Bridget. She engaged him in many religious controverſies; on which occaſions ſhe conſtantly expreſſed great ſatisfaction in the doctor's knowledge, and not much leſs in the compliments which he frequently beſtowed on her own. To ſay the truth, ſhe had read much Engliſh divinity, and had

had puzzled more than one of the neighbouring curates. Indeed her converſation was ſo pure, her looks ſo ſage, and her whole deportment ſo grave and ſolemn, that ſhe ſeemed to deſerve the name of ſaint equally with her name-ſake, or with any other female in the Roman kalendar.

As ſympathies of all kinds are apt to beget love; ſo experience teaches us that none have a more direct tendency this way than thoſe of a religious kind between perſons of different ſexes. The doctor found himſelf ſo agreeable to Miſs Bridget, that he now began to lament an unfortunate accident which had happened to him about ten years before; namely, his marriage with another woman, who was not only ſtill alive, but what was worſe, known to be ſo by Mr. Allworthy. This was a fatal bar to that happineſs which he otherwiſe ſaw ſufficient probability of obtaining with this young lady; for as to criminal indulgencies, he certainly never thought of them. This was owing either to his religion, as is moſt probable, or to the purity of his paſſion, which was fixed on thoſe things, which matrimony only, and not criminal correſpondence, could put him in poſſeſſion of, or could give him any title to.

He had not long ruminated on theſe matters, before it occurred to his memory that he had a brother who was under no ſuch unhappy incapacity. This brother he made no doubt would ſucceed; for he diſcerned, as he thought, an inclination to marriage in the lady; and the reader perhaps, when he hears the brother's qualifications, will not blame the confidence which he entertained of his ſucceſs.

This gentleman was about 35 years of age. He was of a middle ſize, and what is called well-built. He had a ſcar on his forehead, which did not ſo much injure his beauty, as it denoted his valour (for he was a half-pay officer). He had good teeth, and ſomething affable, when he pleaſed, in his ſmile; though naturally his countenance, as well as his air and voice, had much of roughneſs in it, yet he could at any time depoſite this, and appear all gentleneſs and good humour. He was not ungenteel, nor entirely void of

wit, and in his youth had abounded in ſprightlineſs, which, though he had lately put on a more ſerious character, he could, when he pleaſed, reſume.

He had, as well as the doctor, an academic education; for his father had, with the ſame paternal authority we have mentioned before, decreed him for holy orders; but as the old gentleman died before he was ordained, he choſe the church military, and preferred the king's commiſſion to the biſhop's.

He had purchaſed the poſt of lieutenant of dragoons, and afterwards came to be a captain; but having quarrelled with his colonel, was by his intereſt obliged to ſell; from which time he had entirely ruſticated himſelf, had betaken himſelf to ſtudying the ſcriptures, and was not a little ſuſpected of an inclination to methodiſm.

It ſeemed therefore not unlikely that ſuch a perſon ſhould ſucceed with a lady of ſo ſaint-like a diſpoſition, and whoſe inclinations were no otherwiſe engaged than to the married ſtate in general; but why the doctor, who certainly had no great friendſhip for his brother, ſhould for his ſake think of making ſo ill a return to the hoſpitality of Allworthy, is a matter not ſo eaſy to be accounted for.

Is it that ſome natures delight in evil, as others are thought to delight in virtue? Or is there a pleaſure in being acceſſary to a theft when we cannot commit it ourſelves? Or laſtly, (which experience ſeems to make probable) have we a ſatisfaction in aggrandizing our families, even though we have not the leaſt love or reſpect for them?

Whether any of theſe motives operated on the doctor we will not determine; but ſo the fact was. He ſent for his brother, and eaſily found means to introduce him at Allworthy's as a perſon who intended only a ſhort viſit to himſelf.

The captain had not been in the houſe a week, before the doctor had reaſon to felicitate himſelf on his diſcernment. The captain was indeed as great a maſter of the art of love as Ovid was formerly. He had beſides received proper hints from his brother, which he failed not to improve to the beſt advantage.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

Containing many rules, and ſome examples, concerning falling in love: deſcriptions of beauty, and other more prudential inducements to matrimony.

IT hath been obſerved by wiſe men or women, I forget which, that all perſons are doomed to be in love once in their lives. No particular ſeaſon is, as I remember, aſſigned for this: but the age at which Miſs Bridget was arrived, ſeems to me as proper a period as any to be fixed on for this purpoſe: it often indeed happens much earlier; but when it doth not, I have obſerved, it ſeldom or never fails about this time. Moreover, we may remark that at this ſeaſon love is of a more ſerious and ſteady nature than what ſometimes ſhews itſelf in the younger parts of life. The love of girls is uncertain, capricious, and ſo fooliſh that we cannot always diſcover what the young lady would be at; nay, it may almoſt be doubted, whether ſhe always knows this herſelf.

Now we are never at a loſs to diſcern this in women about forty; for as ſuch grave, ſerious and experienced ladies well know their own meaning; ſo it is always very eaſy for a man of the leaſt ſagacity to diſcover it with the utmoſt certainty.

Miſs Bridget is an example of all theſe obſervations. She had not been many times in the captain's company before ſhe was ſeized with this paſſion. Nor did ſhe go pining and moping about the houſe, like a puny fooliſh girl, ignorant of her diſtemper; ſhe felt, ſhe knew, and ſhe enjoyed, the pleaſing ſenſation, of which, as ſhe was certain it was not only innocent but laudable, ſhe was neither afraid nor aſhamed.

And to ſay the truth, there is in all points, great difference between the reaſonable paſſion which women at this age conceive towards men, and the idle and childiſh liking of a girl to a boy, which is often fixed on the outſide only, and on things of little value and no duration; as on cherry cheeks, ſmall lily-white hands, ſloe-black eyes, flowing locks, downy chins,

dapper ſhapes, nay ſometimes on charms more worthleſs than theſe, and leſs the party's own; ſuch are the outward ornaments of the perſon, for which men are beholden to the taylor, the laceman, the perriwig-maker, the hatter, and the millener, and not to nature. Such a paſſion girls may well be aſhamed, as they generally are, to own either to themſelves or to others.

The love of Miſs Bridget was of another kind. The captain owed nothing to any of theſe fop-makers in his dreſs, nor was his perſon much more beholden to nature. Both his dreſs and perſon were ſuch as, had they appeared in an aſſembly, or a drawing room, would have been the contempt and ridicule of all the fine ladies there. The former of theſe was indeed neat, but plain, coarſe, ill-fancied, and out of faſhion. As for the latter, we have expreſsly deſcribed it above. So far was the ſkin on his cheeks from being cherry-coloured, that you could not diſcern what the natural colour of his cheeks was, they being totally overgrown by a black beard, which aſcended to his eyes. His ſhape and limbs were indeed exactly proportioned, but ſo large, that they denoted the ſtrength rather of a ploughman than any other. His ſhoulders were broad, beyond all ſize, and the calves of his legs larger than thoſe of a common chairman. In ſhort, his whole perſon wanted all that elegance and beauty, which is the very reverſe of clumſy ſtrength, and which ſo agreeably ſets off moſt of our fine gentlemen; being partly owing to the high blood of their anceſtors, viz. blood made of rich ſauces and generous wines, and partly to an early town education.

Though Miſs Bridget was a woman of the greateſt delicacy of taſte; yet ſuch were the charms of the captain's converſation, that ſhe totally overlooked the defects of his perſon. She imagined, and perhaps very wiſely, that ſhe ſhould enjoy more agreeable minutes with the captain than with a much prettier fellow; and forewent the conſideration of pleaſing her eyes, in order to procure herſelf much more ſolid ſatisfaction.

The captain no ſooner perceived the paſſion of Miſs Bridget, in which diſcovery he was very quick-ſighted,

than

than he faithfully returned it. The lady, no more than her lover, was remarkable for beauty. I would attempt to draw her picture; but that is done already by a more able master, Mr. Hogarth himself, to whom she sat many years ago, and hath been lately exhibited by that gentleman in his print of a winter's morning, of which she was no improper emblem, and may be seen walking (for walk she doth in the print) to Covent-Garden Church, with a starved foot-boy behind carrying her prayer-book.

The captain likewise very wisely preferred the more solid enjoyments he expected with this lady, to the fleeting charms of person. He was one of those wise men, who regard beauty in the other sex as a very worthless and superficial qualification; or, to speak more truly, who rather chuse to possess every convenience of life with an ugly woman, than a handsome one without any of those conveniencies. And having a very good appetite, and but little nicety, he fancied he should play his part very well at the matrimonial banquet, without the sauce of beauty.

To deal plainly with the reader, the captain, ever since his arrival, at least from the moment his brother had proposed the match to him, long before he had discovered any flattering symptoms in Miss Bridget, had been greatly enamoured; that is to say, of Mr. Allworthy's house and gardens, and of his lands, tenements and hereditaments; of all which the captain was so passionately fond, that he would most probably have contracted marriage with them, had he been obliged to have taken the witch of Endor into the bargain.

As Mr. Allworthy therefore had declared to the doctor, that he never intended to take a second wife, as his sister was his nearest relation, and as the doctor had fished out that his intentions were to make any child of hers his heir, which indeed the law, without his interposition, would have done for him; the doctor and his brother thought it an act of benevolence to give being to a human creature, who would be so plentifully provided with the most essential means of happiness. The whole thoughts therefore of both the brothers were how to engage the affections of this amiable lady.

But fortune, who is a tender parent, and often doth more for her favourite offspring than either they deſerve or wiſh, had been ſo induſtrious for the captain, that whilſt he was laying ſchemes to execute his purpoſe, the lady conceived the ſame deſires with himſelf, and was on her ſide contriving how to give the captain proper encouragement, without appearing too forward; for ſhe was a ſtrict obſerver of all rules of decorum. In this, however, ſhe eaſily ſucceeded; for as the captain was always on the look-out, no glance, geſture, or word eſcaped him.

The ſatisfaction which the captain received from the kind behaviour of Miſs Bridget, was not a little abated by his apprehenſions of Mr. Allworthy; for, notwithſtanding his diſintereſted profeſſions, the captain imagined he would, when he came to act, follow the examples of the reſt of the world, and refuſe his conſent to a match, ſo diſadvantageous, in point of intereſt, to his ſiſter. From what oracle he received this opinion, I ſhall leave the reader to determine; but, however he came by it, it ſtrangely perplexed him how to regulate his conduct ſo as at once to convey his affection to the lady, and to conceal it from her brother. He, at length, reſolved to take all private opportunities of making his addreſſes; but in the preſence of Mr. Allworthy to be as reſerved, and as much upon his guard, as was poſſible; and this conduct was highly approved by the brother.

He ſoon found means to make his addreſſes, in expreſs terms, to his miſtreſs, from whom he received an anſwer in the proper form, viz. the anſwer which was firſt made ſome thouſands of years ago, and which hath been handed down by tradition from mother to daughter ever ſince. If I was to tranſlate this into Latin, I ſhould render it by theſe two words, *Nolo Epiſcopari*: a phraſe likewiſe of immemorial uſe on another occaſion.

The captain, however he came by his knowledge, perfectly well underſtood the lady; and very ſoon after repeated his application, with more warmth and earneſtneſs than before, and was again, according to due form,

form, rejected; but as he had increased in the eagerness of his desires, so the lady, with the same propriety, decreased in the violence of her refusal.

Not to tire the reader by leading him through every scene of this courtship, (which, though in the opinion of a certain great author, it is the pleasanteſt scene of life to the actor, is perhaps, as dull and tiresome as any whatever to the audience) the captain made his advances in form, the citadel was defended in form, and at length, in proper form surrendered at discretion.

During this whole time, which filled the space of near a month, the captain preserved great distance of behaviour to his lady, in the presence of the brother; and the more he succeeded with her in private, the more reserved was he in public. And as for the lady, she had no sooner secured her lover, than she behaved to him before company with the higheſt degree of indifference; for that Mr. Allworthy muſt have had the insight of the devil (or perhaps some of his worse qualities) to have entertained the leaſt suspicion of what was going forward.

CHAP. XII.

Containing what the reader may, perhaps, expect to find in it.

IN all bargains, whether to fight or to marry, or concerning any other such business, little previous ceremony is required, to bring the matter to an issue, when both parties are really in earneſt. This was the case at present, and in less than a month the captain and his lady were man and wife.

The great concern now was to break the matter to Mr. Allworthy; and this was undertaken by the doctor.

One day then as Allworthy was walking in his garden, the doctor came to him, and, with great gravity of aspect, and all the concern which he could possibly affect in his countenance, said, 'I am come, 'Sir, to impart an affair to you of the utmoſt conse-'quence; but how shall I mention to you, what it

'almoſt

'almoſt diſtracts me to think of!' He then launched forth into the moſt bitter invectives both againſt men and women; accuſing the former of having no attachment but to their intereſt, and the latter of being ſo addicted to vicious inclinations, that they could never be ſafely truſted with one of the other ſex. 'Could I,' ſaid he, 'Sir, have ſuſpected, that a lady 'of ſuch prudence, ſuch judgment, ſuch learning, 'ſhould indulge ſo indiſcreet a paſſion; or could I 'have imagined, that my brother—why do I call him 'ſo? He is no longer a brother of mine.'—

'Indeed but he is,' ſaid Allworthy, 'and a brother 'of mine too.'—'Bleſs me, Sir,' ſaid the doctor, 'Do you know the ſhocking affair?'—'Look'ee, 'Mr. Bliſil,' anſwered the good man, 'It hath been 'my conſtant maxim in life, to make the beſt of all 'matters which happen. My ſiſter, though many 'years younger than I, is at leaſt old enough to be at 'the age of diſcretion. Had he impoſed on a child, 'I ſhould have been more averſe to have forgiven 'him; but a woman, upwards of thirty, muſt certainly be ſuppoſed to know what will make her moſt 'happy. She hath married a gentleman, though perhaps not quite her equal in fortune; and if he hath 'any perfections in her eye, which can make up that 'deficiency, I ſee no reaſon why I ſhould object to her 'choice of her own happineſs; which I, no more 'than herſelf, imagine to conſiſt only in immenſe 'wealth. I might perhaps, from the many declarations I have made, of complying with almoſt any 'propoſal, have expected to have been conſulted on 'this occaſion; but theſe matters are of a very delicate nature, and the ſcruples of modeſty, perhaps, 'are not to be overcome. As to your brother, I 'have really no anger againſt him at all. He hath no 'obligation to me, nor do I think he was under any 'neceſſity of aſking my conſent, ſince the woman is, 'as I have ſaid, *ſui juris*, and of a proper age to be 'entirely anſwerable only to herſelf for her conduct.'

The doctor accuſed Mr. Allworthy of too great lenity, repeated his accuſations againſt his brother, and declared that he ſhould never more be brought either

either to ſee, or to own him for his relation. He then launched forth into a panegyric on Allworthy's goodneſs; into the higheſt encomiums on his friendſhip; and concluded by ſaying, he ſhould never forgive his brother for having put the place which he bore in that friendſhip to a hazard.

Allworthy thus anſwered: 'Had I conceived any 'diſpleaſure againſt your brother, I ſhould never have 'carried that reſentment to the innocent; but, I aſſure 'you, I have no ſuch diſpleaſure. Your brother ap-'pears to me to be a man of ſenſe and honour. I do 'not diſapprove the taſte of my ſiſter; nor will I 'doubt but that ſhe is equally the object of his in-'clinations. I have always thought love the only 'foundation of happineſs in a married ſtate; as it can 'only produce that high and tender friendſhip which 'ſhould always be the cement of this union; and, in 'my opinion, all thoſe marriages which are contracted 'from other motives, are greatly criminal; they are a 'profanation of a moſt holy ceremony, and generally 'end in diſquiet and miſery; for ſurely we may call it 'a profanation, to convert this moſt ſacred inſtitution 'into a wicked ſacrifice to luſt or avarice: and what 'better can be ſaid of thoſe matches to which men 'are induced merely by the conſideration of a beauti-'ful perſon, or a great fortune!

'To deny that beauty is an agreeable object to the 'eye, and even worthy ſome admiration, would be falſe 'and fooliſh. Beautiful is an epithet often uſed in 'ſcripture, and always mentioned with honour. It 'was my own fortune to marry a woman whom the 'world thought handſome, and I can truly ſay, I liked 'her the better on that account. But, to make this 'the ſole conſideration of marriage, to luſt after it ſo 'violently as to over-look all imperfections for its ſake, 'or to require it ſo abſolutely as to reject and diſdain 'religion, virtue, and ſenſe, which are qualities, in 'their nature, of much higher perfection, only becauſe 'an elegance of perſon is wanting; this is ſurely in-'conſiſtent, either with a wiſe man or a good chriſtian. 'And it is, perhaps, being too charitable to conclude, 'that ſuch perſons mean any thing more by their mar-

riage,

'riage, than to pleaſe their carnal appetites; for the 'ſatisfaction of which, we are taught, it was not 'ordained.

'In the next place, with reſpect to fortune. Worldly 'prudence, perhaps, exacts ſome conſideration on this 'head; nor will I abſolutely and altogether condemn 'it. As the world is conſtituted, the demands of a 'married ſtate, and the care of poſterity, require ſome 'little regard to what we call circumſtances. Yet this 'proviſion is greatly encreaſed, beyond what is really 'neceſſary, by folly and vanity, which create abun-'dantly more wants than nature. Equipage for the 'wife, and large fortunes for the children, are by 'cuſtom enrolled in the liſt of neceſſaries; and, to 'procure theſe, every thing truly ſolid and ſweet, 'and virtuous and religious, are neglected and over-'looked.

'And this in many degrees; the laſt and greateſt 'of which ſeems ſcarce diſtinguiſhable from madneſs. 'I mean where perſons of immenſe fortunes contract 'themſelves to thoſe who are, and muſt be, diſ-'agreeable to them; to fools and knaves, in order 'to encreaſe an eſtate, already larger even than the 'demands of their pleaſures. Surely ſuch perſons, 'if they will not be thought mad, muſt own, either 'that they are incapable of taſting the ſweets of the 'tendereſt friendſhip, or that they ſacrifice the greateſt 'happineſs of which they are capable, to the vain, 'uncertain and ſenſeleſs laws of vulgar opinion, 'which owe as well their force, as their foundation, 'to folly.'

Here Allworthy concluded his ſermon, to which Blifil had liſtened with the profoundeſt attention, though it coſt him ſome pains to prevent now and then a ſmall diſcompoſure of his muſcles. He now praiſed every period of what he had heard, with the warmth of a young divine, who hath the honour to dine with a biſhop the ſame day in which his lordſhip hath mounted the pulpit.

CHAP

CHAP. XIII.

Which concludes the first book; with an instance of ingratitude, which, we hope, will appear unnatural.

THE reader, from what hath been said, may imagine, that the reconciliation (if indeed it could be so called) was only matter of form; we shall therefore pass it over, and hasten to what must surely be thought matter of substance.

The doctor had acquainted his brother with what had past between Mr. Allworthy and him; and added with a smile, 'I promise you, I paid you off; nay, 'I absolutely desired the good gentleman not to for-'give you: for you know, after he had made a decla-'ration in your favour, I might, with safety, venture 'on such a request with a person of his temper; and 'I was willing, as well for your sake as for my own, 'to prevent the least possibility of a suspicion.'

Captain Blifil took not the least notice of this, at that time; but he afterwards made a very notable use of it.

One of the maxims which the devil, in a late visit upon earth, left to his disciples, is, when once you are got up, to kick the stool from under you. In plain English, when you have made your fortune by the good offices of a friend, you are advised to discard him as soon as you can.

Whether the captain acted by this maxim, I will not positively determine; so far we may confidently say, that his actions may be fairly derived from this diabolical principle; and indeed it is difficult to assign any other motive to them: for no sooner was he possessed of Miss Bridget, and reconciled to Allworthy, than he began to shew a coldness to his brother, which encreased daily; till at length it grew into rudeness, and became very visible to every one.

The doctor remonstrated to him privately concerning this behaviour, but could obtain no other satisfaction than the following plain declaration: If you 'dislike any thing in my brother's house, Sir, you 'know you are at liberty to quit it.' This strange, cruel,

cruel, and almoſt unaccountable ingratitude in the captain, abſolutely broke the poor doctor's heart: for ingratitude never ſo thoroughly pierces the human breaſt, as when it proceeds from thoſe in whoſe behalf we have been guilty of tranſgreſſions. Reflections on great and good actions, however they are received or returned by thoſe in whoſe favour they are performed, always adminiſter ſome comfort to us; but what conſolation ſhall we receive under ſo biting a calamity as the ungrateful behaviour of our friend, when our wounded conſcience at the time flies in our face, and upbraids us with having ſpotted it in the ſervice of one ſo worthleſs?

Mr. Allworthy himſelf ſpoke to the captain in his brother's behalf, and deſired to know what offence the doctor had committed; when the hard-hearted villain had the baſeneſs to ſay, that he ſhould never forgive him for the injury which he had endeavoured to do him in his favour; which, he ſaid, he had pumped out of him, and was ſuch a cruelty, that it ought not to be forgiven.

Allworthy ſpoke in very high terms upon this declaration, which, he ſaid, became not a human creature. He expreſſed, indeed, ſo much reſentment againſt an unforgiving temper, that the captain at laſt pretended to be convinced by his arguments, and outwardly profeſſed to be reconciled.

As for the bride, ſhe was now in her honey-moon, and ſo paſſionately fond of her new huſband, that he never appeared to her to be in the wrong; and his diſpleaſure againſt any perſon was a ſufficient reaſon for her diſlike to the ſame.

The captain, at Mr. Allworthy's inſtance, was outwardly, as we have ſaid, reconciled to his brother, yet the ſame rancour remained in his heart; and he found ſo many opportunities of giving him private hints of this, that the houſe at laſt grew inſupportable to the poor doctor; and he choſe rather to ſubmit to any conveniencies which he might encounter in the world, than longer to bear theſe cruel and ungrateful inſults, from a brother for whom he had done ſo much.

He

He once intended to acquaint Allworthy with the whole; but he could not bring himſelf to ſubmit to the confeſſion, by which he muſt take to his ſhare ſo great a portion of guilt. Beſides, by how much the worſe man he repreſented his brother to be, ſo much the greater would his own offence appear to Allworthy, and ſo much the greater, he had reaſon to imagine, would be his reſentment.

He feigned, therefore, ſome excuſe of buſineſs for his departure, and promiſed to return ſoon again; and took leave of his brother with ſo well-diſſembled content, that, as the captain played his part to the ſame perfection, Allworthy remained well ſatisfied with the truth of the reconciliation.

The doctor went directly to London, where he died ſoon after of a broken heart; a diſtemper which kills many more than is generally imagined, and would have a fair title to a place in the bill of mortality, did it not differ in one inſtance from all other diſeaſes, viz. That no phyſician can cure it.

Now, upon the moſt diligent enquiry into the former lives of theſe two brothers, I find, beſides the curſed and helliſh maxim of policy above mentioned, another reaſon for the captain's conduct; the captain, beſides what we have before ſaid of him, was a man of great pride and fierceneſs, and had always treated his brother, who was of a different complexion, and greatly deficient in both thoſe qualities, with the utmoſt air of ſuperiority. The doctor, however, had much the larger ſhare of learning, and was by many reputed to have the better underſtanding. This the captain knew, and could not bear; for though envy is, at beſt, a very malignant paſſion, yet is its bitterneſs greatly heightened, by mixing with contempt towards the ſame object; and very much afraid I am, that whenever an obligation is joined to theſe two, indignation, and not gratitude, will be the product of all three.

THE

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK II.

Containing ſcenes of matrimonial felicity in different degrees of life; and various other tranſactions during the firſt two years after the marriage between captain Bliſil and Miſs Bridget Allworthy.

CHAP. I.

Shewing what kind of a hiſtory this is; what it is like, and what it is not like.

THOUGH we have properly enough entitled this our work a hiſtory, and not a life; nor an apology for a life, as is more in faſhion; yet we intend in it rather to purſue the method of thoſe writers, who profeſs to diſcloſe the revolutions of countries, than to imitate the painful and volumious hiſtorian, who, to preſerve the regularity of his ſeries, thinks himſelf obliged to fill up as much paper with the detail of months and years in which nothing remarkable happened, as he employs upon thoſe notable æras when the greateſt ſcenes have been tranſacted on the human ſtage.

Such hiſtories as theſe do, in reality, very much reſemble a news-paper, which conſiſts of juſt the ſame number

number of words, whether there be any news in it or not. They may, likewiſe, be compared to a ſtage-coach, which performs conſtantly the ſame courſe, empty as well as full. The writer, indeed, ſeems to think himſelf obliged to keep even pace with time, whoſe amanuenſis he is; and, like his maſter, travels as ſlowly through centuries of monkiſh dulneſs, when the world ſeems to have been aſleep, as through that bright and buſy age ſo nobly diſtinguiſhed by the excellent Latin poet.

'*Ad conſligendum venientibus undique pœnis,*
'*Omnia cum belli trepido concuſſa tumultu*
'*Horrida contremuere ſub altis ætheris auris:*
'*In dubioque fuit ſub utrorum regna cadendum*
'*Omnibus humanis eſſet, terraque marique.*'

Of which we wiſh we could give our reader a more adequate tranſlation than that by M. Creech,

'When dreadful Carthage frighted Rome with arms,
'And all the world was ſhook with fierce alarms;
'Whilſt undecided yet, which part ſhould fall,
'Which nation riſe the glorious Lord of all.'

Now it is our purpoſe in the enſuing pages, to purſue a contrary method. When any extraordinary ſcene preſents itſelf, (as we truſt will often be the caſe) we ſhall ſpare no pains nor paper to open it at large to our reader; but if whole years ſhould paſs without producing any thing worthy his notice, we ſhall not be afraid of a chaſm in our hiſtory; but ſhall haſten on to matters of conſequence, and leave ſuch periods of time totally unobſerved.

Theſe are indeed to be conſidered as blanks in the grand lottery of time. We therefore who are the regiſters of that lottery, ſhall imitate thoſe ſagacious perſons who deal in that which is drawn at Guildhall, and who never trouble the publick with the many blanks they diſpoſe of; but when a great prize happens to be drawn, the news-papers are preſently filled with

with it, and the world is ſure to be informed at whoſe office it was ſold: indeed, commonly two or three different offices lay claim to the honour of having diſpoſed of it; by which I ſuppoſe, the adventurers are given to underſtand that certain brokers are in the ſecrets of fortune, and indeed of her cabinet-council.

My reader then is not to be ſurprized, if, in the courſe of this work, he ſhall find ſome chapters very ſhort, and others altogether as long; ſome that contain only the time of a ſingle day, and others that compriſe years; in a word, if my hiſtory ſometimes ſeems to ſtand ſtill, and ſometimes to fly. For all which I ſhall not look on myſelf as accountable to any court of critical juriſdiction whatever: for as I am, in reality, the founder of a new province of writing, ſo I am at liberty to make what laws I pleaſe therein. And theſe laws, my readers, whom I conſider as my ſubjects, are bound to believe in and to obey; with which that they may readily and chearfully comply, I do hereby aſſure them, that I ſhall principally regard their eaſe and advantage in all ſuch inſtitutions: for I do not, like a *jure divino* tyrant, imagine that they are my ſlaves, or my commodity. I am, indeed, ſet over them for their own good only, and was created for their uſe, and not they for mine. Nor do I doubt, while I make their intereſt the great rule of my writing, they will unanimouſly concur in ſupporting my dignity, and in rendering me all the honour I ſhall deſerve or deſire.

CHAP. II.

Religious cautions againſt ſhewing too much favour to baſtards; and a great diſcovery made by Mrs. Deborah Wilkins.

EIGHT months after the celebration of the nuptials between captain Blifil and Miſs Bridget Allworthy, a young lady of great beauty, merit, and fortune, was Miſs Bridget, by reaſon of a fright, delivered of a fine boy. The child was indeed, to all appearance, perfect; but the midwife diſcovered, it was born a month before its full time.

Though

Though the birth of an heir by his beloved ſiſter was a circumſtance of great joy to Mr. Allworthy, yet it did not alienate his affections from the little foundling to whom he had been god-father, had given his own name of Thomas, and whom he had hitherto ſeldom failed of viſiting, at leaſt once a day, in his nurſery.

He told his ſiſter, if ſhe pleaſed, the new-born infant ſhould be bred up together with little Tommy, to which ſhe conſented, though with ſome little reluctance; for ſhe had truly a great complacence for her brother; and hence ſhe had always behaved towards the foundling, with rather more kindneſs than ladies of rigid virtue can ſometimes bring themſelves to ſhew theſe children, who, however innocent, may be truly called the living monuments of incontinence.

The captain could not ſo eaſily bring himſelf to bear what he condemned as a fault of Mr. Allworthy. He gave him frequent hints, that to adopt the fruits of ſin, was to give countenance to it. He quoted ſeveral texts (for he was well read in ſcripture) ſuch as, *He viſits the ſins of the fathers upon the children*; and, *the fathers have eaten ſour grapes, and the children's teeth are ſet on edge*, &c. Whence he argued the legality of puniſhing the crime of the parent on the baſtard. He ſaid, 'Though the law did not poſitively 'allow the deſtroying ſuch baſe-born children, yet it 'held them to be the children of no-body: that the 'church conſidered them as the children of no-body: 'and that, at the beſt, they ought to be brought up 'to the loweſt and vileſt offices of the common-'wealth.'

Mr. Allworthy anſwered to all this, and much more, which the captain had urged on this ſubject, 'That however guilty the parents might be, the 'children were certainly innocent; that as to the 'texts he had quoted, the former of them was a par-'ticular denunciation againſt the Jews, for the ſin of 'idolatry, of relinquiſhing and hating their heavenly 'King: and the latter was parabolically ſpoken, and 'rather intended to denote the certain and neceſſary 'conſequences of ſin, than any expreſs judgment

'againſt

'against it. But to repreſent the Almighty as revenging the ſins of the guilty on the innocent, was indecent, if not blaſphemous, as it was to repreſent him acting againſt the firſt principles of natural juſtice, and againſt the original notions of right and wrong, which he himſelf had implanted in our minds; by which we were to judge, not only in all matters which were not revealed, but even of the truth of revelation itſelf. He ſaid, he knew many held the ſame principles with the captain on this head; but he was himſelf firmly convinced to the contrary, and would provide in the ſame manner for this poor infant, as if a legitimate child had had the fortune to have been found in the ſame place.'

While the captain was taking all opportunities to preſs theſe and ſuch like arguments, to remove the little foundling from Mr. Allworthy's, of whoſe fondneſs for him he began to be jealous, Mrs. Deborah had made a diſcovery, which, in its event, threatened at leaſt to prove more fatal to poor Tommy, than all the reaſonings of the captain.

Whether the inſatiable curioſity of this good woman had carried her on to that buſineſs, or whether ſhe did it to confirm herſelf in the good graces of Mrs. Bliſil, who, notwithſtanding her outward behaviour to the foundling, frequently abuſed the infant in private, and her brother too for his fondneſs to it, I will not determine, but ſhe had now, as ſhe conceived, fully detected the father of the foundling.

Now, as this was a diſcovery of great conſequence, it may be neceſſary to trace it from the fountain-head. We ſhall therefore very minutely lay open thoſe previous matters by which it was produced; and for that purpoſe, we ſhall be obliged to reveal all the ſecrets of a little family, with which my reader is at preſent entirely unacquainted; and of which the œconomy was ſo rare and extraordinary, that I fear it will ſhock the utmoſt credulity of many married perſons.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

The deſcription of a domeſtic government founded upon rules directly contrary to thoſe of Ariſtotle.

MY reader may pleaſe to remember he hath been informed, that Jenny Jones had lived ſome years with a certain ſchoolmaſter, who had, at her earneſt deſire, inſtructed her in Latin, in which, to do juſtice to her genius, ſhe had ſo improved herſelf, that ſhe was become a better ſcholar than her maſter.

Indeed, though this poor man had undertaken a profeſſion to which learning muſt be allowed neceſſary, this was the leaſt of his commendations. He was one of the beſt-natured fellows in the world, and was, at the ſame time, maſter of ſo much pleaſantry and humour, that he was reputed the wit of the country; and all the neighbouring gentlemen were ſo deſirous of his company, that, as denying was not his talent, he ſpent much time at their houſes, which he might, with more emolument, have ſpent in his ſchool.

It may be imagined, that a gentleman ſo qualified and ſo diſpoſed, was in no danger of becoming formidable to the learned ſeminaries of Eton and Weſtminſter. To ſpeak plainly, his ſcholars were divided into two claſſes; in the upper of which was a young gentleman, the ſon of a neighbouring 'ſquire, who, at the age of ſeventeen, was juſt entered into his Syntaxis; and in the lower was a ſecond ſon of the ſame gentleman, who, together with ſeven pariſh-boys, was learning to read and write.

The ſtipend ariſing hence would hardly have indulged the ſchoolmaſter in the luxuries of life, had he not added to this office thoſe of clerk and barber, and had not Mr. Allworthy added to the whole an annuity of ten pound, which the poor man received every Chriſtmas, and with which he was enabled to chear his heart during that ſacred feſtival.

Among his other treaſures, the pedagogue had a wife, whom he had married out of Mr. Allworthy's

kitchen for her fortune, viz. twenty pound, which she had there amassed.

This woman was not very amiable in her person. Whether she sat to my friend Hogarth, or no, I will not determine; but she exactly resembled the young woman who is pouring out her mistress's tea in the third picture of the Harlot's Progress. She was, besides, a profest follower of that noble sect founded by Xantippe of old; by means of which she became more formidable in the school than her husband; for, to confess the truth, he was never master there, or any where else, in her presence.

Though her countenance did not denote much natural sweetness of temper, yet this was, perhaps, somewhat soured by a circumstance which generally poisons matrimonial felicity: for children are rightly called the pledges of love; and her husband, though they had been married nine years, had given her no such pledges; a default for which he had no excuse, either from age or health, being not yet thirty years old, and, what they call, a jolly, brisk, young man.

Hence arose another evil, which produced no little uneasiness to the poor pedagogue, of whom she maintained so constant a jealousy, that he durst hardly speak to one woman in the parish; for the least degree of civility, or even correspondence with any female, was sure to bring his wife upon her back and his own.

In order to guard herself against matrimonial injuries in her own house, as she kept one maid-servant, she always took care to chuse her out of that order of females, whose faces are taken as a kind of security for their virtue; of which number Jenny Jones, as the reader hath been informed, was one.

As the face of this young woman might be called pretty good security of the before-mentioned kind, and as her behaviour had been always extremely modest; which is the certain consequence of understanding in women; she had passed above four years at Mr. Partridge's, (for that was the schoolmaster's name) without creating the least suspicion in her mistress. Nay, she had been treated with uncommon

mon kindneſs, and her miſtreſs had permitted Mr. Partridge to give her thoſe inſtructions, which have been before commemorated.

But it is with jealouſy, as with the gout. When ſuch diſtempers are in the blood, there is never any ſecurity againſt their breaking out; and that often on the ſlighteſt occaſions, and when leaſt ſuſpected.

Thus it happened to Mrs. Partridge, who had ſubmitted four years to her huſband's teaching this young woman, and had ſuffered her often to neglect her work, in order to purſue her learning. For paſſing by one day, as the girl was reading, and her maſter leaning over her, the girl, I know not for what reaſon, ſuddenly ſtarted up from her chair: and this was the firſt time that ſuſpicion ever entered into the head of her miſtreſs.

This did not, however, at that time, diſcover itſelf, but lay lurking in her mind, like a concealed enemy, who waits for a reinforcement of additional ſtrength, before he openly declares himſelf, and proceeds upon hoſtile operations: and ſuch additional ſtrength ſoon arrived to corroborate her ſuſpicion; for not long after, the huſband and wife being at dinner the maſter ſaid to his maid, *Da mihi aliquid potum*: upon which the poor girl ſmiled, perhaps at the badneſs of the Latin, and when her miſtreſs caſt her eyes on her, bluſhed, poſſibly with the conſciouſneſs of having laughed at her maſter. Mrs. Partridge, upon this, immediately fell into a fury, and diſcharged the trencher, on which ſhe was eating, at the head of poor Jenny, crying out, 'You impudent whore, do you 'play tricks with my huſband before my face?' and, at the ſame inſtant, roſe from her chair, with a knife in her hand, with which, moſt probably, ſhe would have executed very tragical vengeance, had not the girl taken the advantage of being nearer the door than her miſtreſs, and avoided her fury by running away; for, as to the poor huſband, whether ſurprize had rendered him motionleſs, or fear (which is full as probable) had reſtrained him from venturing at any oppoſition, he ſat ſtaring and trembling in his chair; nor did he once offer to move or ſpeak, till his

wife, returning from the purſuit of Jenny, made ſome defenſive meaſures neceſſary for his own preſervation, and he likewiſe was obliged to retreat, after the example of the maid.

This good woman was, no more than Othello, of a diſpoſition,

——— 'To make a life of jealouſy,
'And follow ſtill the changes of the moon
'With freſh ſuſpicions'———

With her, as well as him;

——— 'To be once in doubt,
'Was once to be reſolv'd'———

ſhe, therefore, ordered Jenny immediately to pack up her alls, and be gone; for that ſhe was determined ſhe ſhould not ſleep that night within her walls.

Mr. Partridge had profited too much by experience, to interpoſe in a matter of this nature. He therefore had recourſe to his uſual receipt of patience; for, though he was not a great adept in Latin, he remembered, and well underſtood, the advice contained in theſe words:

——— '*Leve fit, quod bene fertur onus.*'

In Engliſh, 'A burden becomes lighteſt, when it 'is well borne.'

Which he had always in his mouth; and of which, to ſay the truth, he had often occaſion to experience the truth.

Jenny offered to make proteſtations of her innocence; but the tempeſt was too ſtrong for her to be heard. She then betook herſelf to the buſineſs of packing, for which a ſmall quantity of brown-paper ſufficed; and, having received her ſmall pittance of wages, ſhe returned home.

The ſchoolmaſter and his conſort paſs'd their time unpleaſantly enough that evening; but ſomething or other

other happened before the next morning, which a little abated the fury of Mrs. Partridge; and ſhe at length admitted her huſband to make his excuſes. To which ſhe gave the readier belief, as he had, inſtead of deſiring her to recal Jenny, profeſſed a ſatisfaction in her being diſmiſſed, ſaying, ſhe was grown of little uſe as a ſervant, ſpending all her time in reading, and was become, moreover, very pert and obſtinate; for, indeed, ſhe and her maſter had lately had frequent diſputes in literature; in which, as hath been ſaid, ſhe was become greatly his ſuperior. This, however, he would by no means allow; and as he called her perſiſting in the right, obſtinacy, he began to hate her with no ſmall inveteracy.

CHAP. IV.

Containing one of the moſt bloody battles, or rather duels, that were ever recorded in domeſtic hiſtory.

FOR the reaſons mentioned in the preceding chapter, and from ſome other matrimonial conceſſions, well known to moſt huſbands; and which, like the ſecrets of free-maſonry, ſhould be divulged to none who are not members of that honourable fraternity, Mrs. Partridge was pretty well ſatisfied, that ſhe had condemned her huſband without cauſe, and endeavoured, by acts of kindneſs, to make him amends for her falſe ſuſpicion. Her paſſions were, indeed, equally violent, which ever way they inclined: for, as ſhe could be extremely angry, ſo could ſhe be altogether as fond.

But though theſe paſſions ordinarily ſucceed each other, and ſcarce twenty-four hours ever paſſed in which the pedagogue was not, in ſome degree, the object of both; yet, on extraordinary occaſions, when the paſſion of anger had raged very high, the remiſſion was uſually longer, and ſo was the caſe at preſent; for ſhe continued longer in a ſtate of affability, after this fit of jealouſy was ended, than her huſband had ever known before; and, had it not been for ſome little exerciſes, which all the followers of

Xantippe are obliged to perform daily, Mr. Partridge would have enjoyed a perfect ſerenity of ſeveral months.

Perfect calms at ſea are always ſuſpected by the experienced mariner to be the fore-runners of a ſtorm; and I know ſome perſons, who, without being generally the devotees of ſuperſtition, are apt to apprehend, that great and unuſual peace or tranquillity will be attended with its oppoſite. For which reaſon the ancients uſed, on ſuch occaſions, to ſacrifice to the goddeſs Nemeſis; a deity who was thought by them to look with an invidious eye on human felicity, and to have a peculiar delight in overturning it.

As we are very far from believing in any ſuch heathen goddeſs, or from encouraging any ſuperſtition, ſo we wiſh Mr. John Fr————, or ſome other ſuch philoſopher, would beſtir himſelf a little, in order to find out the real cauſe of this ſudden tranſition, from good to bad fortune, which hath been ſo often remarked, and of which we ſhall proceed to give an inſtance; for it is our province to relate facts, and we ſhall leave cauſes to perſons of much higher genius.

Mankind have always taken great delight in knowing and deſcanting on the actions of others. Hence there have been, in all ages and nations, certain places ſet apart for public rendezvous, where the curious might meet, and ſatisfy their mutual curioſity. Among theſe, the barbers ſhops have juſtly borne the pre-eminence. Among the Greeks, barbers news was a proverbial expreſſion; and Horace, in one of his epiſtles, makes honourable mention of the Roman barbers in the ſame light.

Thoſe of England are known to be no wiſe inferior to their Greek or Roman predeceſſors. You there ſee foreign affairs diſcuſſed in a manner little inferior to that with which they are handled in the coffee-houſes; and domeſtic occurrences are much more largely and freely treated in the former, than in the latter. But this ſerves only for the men. Now, whereas the females of this country, eſpecially thoſe of the lower order, do aſſociate themſelves much more than thoſe of other nations, our polity would be highly deficient, if they had not ſome place ſet apart likewiſe for

for the indulgence of their curioſity, ſeeing they are in this no way inferior to the other half of the ſpecies.

In enjoying, therefore, ſuch place of rendezvous, the Britiſh fair ought to eſteem themſelves more happy than any of their foreign ſiſters; as I do not remember either to have read in hiſtory, or to have ſeen in my travels, any thing of the like kind.

This place then is no other than the chandler's-ſhop; the known ſeat of all the news; or, as it is vulgarly called, goſſiping, in every pariſh in England.

Mrs. Partridge being one day at this aſſembly of females, was aſked by one of her neighbours, if ſhe had heard no news lately of Jenny Jones? To which ſhe anſwered in the negative. Upon this, the other replied, with a ſmile, That the pariſh was very much obliged to her for having turned Jenny away as ſhe did.

Mrs. Partridge, whoſe jealouſy, as the reader well knows, was long ſince cured, and who had no other quarrel to her maid, anſwered boldly, ſhe did not know any obligation the pariſh had to her on that account; for ſhe believed Jenny had ſcarce left her equal behind her.

'No, truly,' ſaid the goſſip, 'I hope not, though I 'fancy we have ſluts enough too. Then you have not 'heard, it ſeems, that ſhe hath been brought to bed 'of two baſtards; but as they are not born here, my 'huſband, and the other overſeer, ſays, we ſhall not 'be obliged to keep them.'

'Two baſtards!' anſwered Mrs. Partridge haſtily, 'you ſurprize me. I don't know whether we muſt 'keep them; but I am ſure they muſt have been be-'gotten here; for the wench hath not been nine 'months gone away.'

Nothing can be ſo quick and ſudden as the operations of the mind, eſpecially when hope, or fear, or jealouſy, to which the two others are but journeymen, ſet it to work. It occurred inſtantly to her, that Jenny had ſcarce ever been out of her own houſe, while ſhe lived with her. The leaning over the chair, the ſudden ſtarting up, the Latin, the ſmile, and many other things, ruſhed upon her all at once. The ſatisfac-

tion her huſband expreſſed in the departure of Jenny, appeared now to be only diſſembled; again, in the ſame inſtant, to be real; but yet (to confirm her jealouſy,) proceeding from ſatiety, and a hundred other bad cauſes. In a word, ſhe was convinced of her huſband's guilt, and immediately left the aſſembly in confuſion.

As fair Grimalkin, who, though the youngeſt of the feline family, degenerates not in ferocity from the elder branches of her houſe, and though inferior in ſtrength, is equal in fierceneſs to the nobler Tiger himſelf, when a little mouſe, whom it hath long tormented in ſport, eſcapes from her clutches, for a while frets, ſcolds, growls, ſwears; but if the trunk, or box, behind which the mouſe lay hid, be again removed, ſhe flies like lightning on her prey, and, with envenomed wrath, bites, ſcratches, mumbles, and tears the little animal.

Not with leſs fury did Mrs. Partridge fly on the poor pedagogue. Her tongue, teeth, and hands, fell all upon him at once. His wig was in an inſtant torn from his head, his ſhirt from his back, and from his face deſcended five ſtreams of blood, denoting the number of claws with which nature had unhappily armed the enemy.

Mr. Partridge acted for ſome time on the defenſive only; indeed he attempted only to guard his face with his hands; but as he found that his antagoniſt abated nothing of her rage, he thought he might, at leaſt, endeavour to diſarm her, or rather to confine her arms; in doing which, her cap fell off in the ſtruggle, and her hair being too ſhort to reach her ſhoulders, erected itſelf on her head; her ſtays likewiſe, which were laced through one ſingle hole at the bottom, burſt open; and her breaſts, which were much more redundant than her hair, hung down below her middle; her face was likewiſe marked with the blood of her huſband; her teeth gnaſhed with rage; and fire, ſuch as ſparkles from a ſmith's forge, darted from her eyes. So that, altogether, this Amazonian heroine might have been an object of terror to a much bolder man than Mr. Partridge.

He

He had, at length, the good fortune, by getting poſſeſſion of her arms, to render thoſe weapons, which ſhe wore at the ends of her fingers, uſeleſs; which ſhe no ſooner perceived, than the ſoftneſs of her ſex prevailed over her rage, and ſhe preſently diſſolved in tears, which ſoon after concluded in a fit.

That ſmall ſhare of ſenſe which Mr. Partridge had hitherto preſerved through this ſcene of fury, of the cauſe of which he was hitherto ignorant, now utterly abandoned him. He ran inſtantly into the ſtreet, hallooing out, that his wife was in the agonies of death, and beſeeching the neighbours to fly with the utmoſt haſte to her aſſiſtance. Several good women obeyed his ſummons, who entering his houſe, and applying the uſual remedies on ſuch occaſions, Mrs. Partridge was, at length, to the great joy of her huſband, brought to herſelf.

As ſoon as ſhe had a little recollected her ſpirits, and ſomewhat compoſed herſelf with a cordial, ſhe began to inform the company of the manifold injuries ſhe had received from her huſband; who, ſhe ſaid, was not content to injure her in her bed; but, upon her upbraiding him with it, had treated her in the cruelleſt manner imaginable; had torn her cap and hair from her head, and her ſtays from her body; giving her, at the ſame time, ſeveral blows, the marks of which ſhe ſhould carry to the grave.

The poor man, who bore on his face many and more viſible marks of the indignation of his wife, ſtood in ſilent aſtoniſhment at this accuſation; which the reader will, I believe, bear witneſs for him, had greatly exceeded the truth; for indeed he had not ſtruck her once; and this ſilence being interpreted to be a confeſſion of the charge, by the whole court, they all began at once, *una voce*, to rebuke and revile him, repeating often, that none but a coward ever ſtruck a woman.

Mr. Partridge bore all this patiently; but when his wife appealed to the blood on her face, as an evidence of his barbarity, he could not help laying claim to his own blood, for ſo it really was; as he thought it very unnatural, that this ſhould riſe up (as we are

taught that of a murdered perſon often doth) in vengeance againſt him.

To this the women made no other anſwer, than that it was pity it had not come from his heart, inſtead of his face; all declaring, that if their huſbands ſhould lift their hands againſt them, they would have their hearts-bloods out of their bodies.

After much admonition for what was paſt, and much good advice to Mr. Partridge for his future behaviour, the company at length departed, and left the huſband and wife to a perſonal conference together, in which Mr. Partridge ſoon learned the cauſe of all his ſufferings.

CHAP. V.

Containing much matter to exerciſe the judgment and reflection of the reader.

I Believe it is a true obſervation, that few ſecrets are divulged to one perſon only; but certainly, it would be next to a miracle, that a fact of this kind ſhould be known to a whole pariſh, and not tranſpire any farther.

And, indeed, a very few days had paſt, before the country, to uſe a common phraſe, rung of the ſchoolmaſter of Little-Baddington; who was ſaid to have beaten his wife in the moſt cruel manner. Nay, in ſome places, it was reported he had murdered her; in others, that he had broke her arms; in others, her legs; in ſhort, there was ſcarce any injury which can be done to a human creature, but what Mrs. Partridge was ſomewhere or other affirmed to have received from her huſband.

The cauſe of this quarrel was likewiſe variouſly reported; as ſome people ſaid that Mrs. Partridge had caught her huſband in bed with his maid, ſo many other reaſons, of a very different kind, went abroad. Nay, ſome transferred the guilt to the wife, and the jealouſy to the huſband.

Mrs. Wilkins had long ago heard of this quarrel; but, as a different cauſe from the true one had reached

reached her ears, ſhe thought proper to conceal it; and the rather, perhaps, as the blame was univerſally laid on Mr. Partridge; and his wife, when ſhe was ſervant to Mr. Allworthy, had in ſomething offended Mrs. Wilkins, who was not of a very forgiving temper.

But Mrs. Wilkins, whoſe eyes could ſee objects at a diſtance, and who could very well look forward a few years into futurity, had perceived a ſtrong likelihood of Captain Bliſil's being hereafter her maſter; and, as ſhe plainly diſcerned, that the captain bore no great good-will to the little foundling, ſhe fancied it would be rendering him an agreeable ſervice, if ſhe could make any diſcoveries that might leſſen the affection which Mr. Allworthy ſeemed to have contracted for this child, and which gave viſible uneaſineſs to the captain; who could not entirely conceal it even before Allworthy himſelf; though his wife, who acted her part much better in public, frequently recommended to him her own example, of conniving at the folly of her brother, which, ſhe ſaid, ſhe at leaſt as well perceived, and as much reſented as any other poſſibly could.

Mrs. Wilkins having therefore, by accident, gotten a true ſcent of the above ſtory, though long after it had happened, failed not to ſatisfy herſelf thoroughly of all the particulars; and then acquainted the captain, that ſhe had at laſt diſcovered the true father of the little baſtard, which ſhe was ſorry, ſhe ſaid, to ſee her maſter loſe his reputation in the country, by taking ſo much notice of.

The captain chid her for the concluſion of her ſpeech, as an improper aſſurance in judging of her maſter's actions: for if his honour, or his underſtanding, would have ſuffered the captain to make an alliance with Mrs. Wilkins, his pride would by no means have admitted it. And, to ſay the truth, there is no conduct leſs politic, than to enter into any confederacy with your friend's ſervants, againſt their maſter. For, by theſe means, you afterwards become the ſlave of theſe very ſervants; by whom you are conſtantly liable to be betrayed. And this conſideration,

perhaps, it was which prevented captain Blifil from being more explicit with Mrs. Wilkins; or from encouraging the abuſe which ſhe had beſtowed on Allworthy.

But though he declared no ſatisfaction to Mrs. Wilkins at this diſcovery, he enjoyed not a little from it in his own mind, and reſolved to make the beſt uſe of it he was able.

He kept this matter a long time concealed within his own breaſt, in hopes that Mr. Allworthy might hear it from ſome other perſon; but Mrs. Wilkins, whether ſhe reſented the captain's behaviour, or whether his cunning was beyond her, and ſhe feared the diſcovery might diſpleaſe him, never afterwards opened her lips about the matter.

I have thought it ſomewhat ſtrange, upon reflection, that the houſe-keeper never acquainted Mrs. Blifil with this news, as women are more inclined to communicate all pieces of intelligence to their own ſex, than to ours. The only way, as it appears to me, of ſolving this difficulty, is, by imputing it to that diſtance which was now grown between the lady and the houſe-keeper: whether this aroſe from a jealouſy in Mrs. Blifil, that Wilkins ſhewed too great a reſpect to the foundling; for while ſhe was endeavouring to ruin the little infant, in order to ingratiate herſelf with the captain, ſhe was every day more and more commending it before Allworthy, as his fondneſs for it every day increaſed. This, notwithſtanding all the care ſhe took at other times to expreſs the direct contrary to Mrs. Blifil, perhaps offended that delicate lady, who certainly now hated Mrs. Wilkins; and though ſhe did not, or poſſibly could not, abſolutely remove her from her place, ſhe found, however, the means of making her life very uneaſy. This Mrs. Wilkins, at length, ſo reſented, that ſhe very openly ſhewed all manner of reſpect and fondneſs to little Tommy, in oppoſition to Mrs. Blifil.

The captain, therefore, finding the ſtory in danger of periſhing, at laſt took an opportunity to reveal it himſelf.

He

He was one day engaged with Mr. Allworthy in a diſcourſe on charity: in which the captain, with great learning, proved to Mr. Allworthy, that the word charity in ſcripture, no where means beneficence or generoſity.

'The chriſtian religion,' he ſaid, 'was inſtituted 'for much nobler purpoſes, than to enforce a leſſon 'which many heathen philoſophers had taught us 'long before, and which, though it might perhaps 'be called a moral virtue, ſavoured but little of that 'ſublime chriſtian-like diſpoſition, that vaſt elevation 'of thought, in purity approaching to angelic per-'fection, to be attained, expreſſed, and felt only by 'grace. Thoſe (he ſaid) came nearer to the ſcrip-'ture meaning, who underſtood by it candour, or the 'forming of a benevolent opinion of our brethren; 'and paſſing a favourable judgment on their actions; 'a virtue much higher, and more extenſive in its na-'ture, than a pitiful diſtribution of alms, which, 'though we would never ſo much prejudice, or even 'ruin our families, could never reach many; whereas 'charity, in the other and truer ſenſe, might be ex-'tended to all mankind.'

He ſaid, 'Conſidering who the diſciples were, it 'would be abſurd to conceive the doctrine of gene-'roſity, or giving alms, to have been preached to 'them. And, as we could not well imagine this doc-'trine ſhould be preached by its divine Author to 'men who could not practiſe it, much leſs ſhall we 'think it underſtood ſo by thoſe who can practiſe it, 'and do not.

'But though,' continued he, 'there is, I am 'afraid, little merit in theſe benefactions; there 'would, I muſt confeſs, be much pleaſure in them to 'a good mind, if it was not abated by one conſide-'ration. I mean, that we are liable to be impoſed 'upon, and to confer our choiceſt favours often on 'the undeſerving, as you muſt own was your caſe in 'your bounty to that worthleſs fellow Partridge; 'for two or three ſuch examples muſt greatly leſſen 'the inward ſatisfaction, which a good man would 'otherwiſe find in generoſity; nay, may even make

'him

'him timorous in beſtowing, leſt he ſhould be guilty 'of ſupporting vice, and encouraging the wicked; 'a crime of a very black dye, and for which it will 'by no means be a ſufficient excuſe, that we have not 'actually intended ſuch an encouragement; unleſs we 'have uſed the utmoſt caution in chuſing the objects 'of our beneficence. A conſideration which, I make 'no doubt, hath greatly checked the liberality of many 'a worthy and pious man.'

Mr. Allworthy anſwered, 'He could not diſpute 'with the captain in the Greek language, and there-'fore could ſay nothing as to the true ſenſe of the 'word which is tranſlated charity; but that he had 'always thought it was interpreted to conſiſt in action, 'and that giving alms conſtituted at leaſt one branch 'of that virtue.

'As to the meritorious part, he ſaid, he readily 'agreed with the captain; for where could be the me-'rit of barely diſcharging a duty; which he ſaid, let 'the word charity have what conſtruction it would, it 'ſufficiently appeared to be from the whole tenor of 'the New Teſtament? And as he thought it an indiſ-'penſable duty, enjoined both by the chriſtian law, 'and by the law of nature itſelf; ſo was it withal ſo 'pleaſant, that if any duty could be ſaid to be its own 'reward, or to pay us while we are diſcharging it, it 'was this.

'To confeſs the truth,' ſaid he, 'there is one de-'gree of generoſity, (of charity I would have called 'it) which ſeems to have ſome ſhew of merit, and 'that is, where from a principle of benevolence, and 'chriſtian love, we beſtow on another what we really 'want ourſelves; where, in order to leſſen the diſ-'treſſes of another, we condeſcended to ſhare ſome part 'of them, by giving what even our own neceſſities 'cannot well ſpare. This is, I think, meritorious; 'but to relieve our brethren only with our ſuper-'fluities; to be charitable (I muſt uſe the word) ra-'ther at the expence of our coffers than ourſelves; 'to ſave ſeveral families from miſery rather than hang 'up an extraordinary picture in our houſes, or gratify 'any other idle, ridiculous vanity, this ſeems to be

'only

'only being human creatures. Nay, I will venture 'to go farther, it is being in some degree epicures: 'for what could the greatest epicure wish rather than 'to eat with many mouths instead of one; which I 'think may be predicated of any one who knows 'that the bread of many is owing to his own largesses?

'As to the apprehension of bestowing bounty on 'such as may hereafter prove unworthy objects, be-'cause many have proved such; surely it can never 'deter a good man from generosity: nor do I think 'a few or many examples of ingratitude can justify 'a man's hardening his heart against the distresses of 'his fellow-creatures; nor do I believe it can ever 'have such effect on a truly benevolent mind. Nothing 'less than a persuasion of universal depravity can lock 'up the charity of a good man; and this persuasion 'must lead him, I think, either into atheism, or 'enthusiasm; but surely it is unfair to argue such 'universal depravity from a few vicious individuals; 'nor was this, I believe, ever done by a man, who 'upon searching his own mind found one certain ex-'ception to the general rule.' He then concluded by asking, 'who that Partridge was, whom he had called 'a worthless fellow?"

'I mean, said the captain, Partridge the barber, 'the schoolmaster, what do you call him? Partridge, 'the father of the little child which you found in 'your bed.'

Mr. Allworthy expresst great surprize at this account, and the captain as great at his ignorance of it: for he said he had known it above a month, and at length recollected with much difficulty that he was told it by Mrs. Wilkins.

Upon this, Wilkins was immediately summoned, who having confirmed what the captain had said, was by Mr. Allworthy, by and with the captain's advice, dispatched to Little Baddington, to inform herself of the truth of the fact: for the captain expresst great dislike at all hasty proceedings in criminal matters, and said he would by no means have Mr. Allworthy take any resolution either to the prejudice of the child or its father, before he was satisfied that the latter was guilty:

for

for though he had privately ſatisfied himſelf of this from one of Partridge's neighbours, yet he was too generous to give any ſuch evidence to Mr. Allworthy.

CHAP. VI.

The trial of Partridge, the ſchoolmaſter, for incontinency; the evidence of his wife; a ſhort reflection on the wiſdom of our laws; with other grave matters, which thoſe will like beſt who underſtand them moſt.

IT may be wondered that a ſtory ſo well known, and which had furniſhed ſo much matter of converſation, ſhould never have been mentioned to Mr. Allworthy himſelf, who was perhaps the only perſon in that country who had never heard of it.

To account in ſome meaſure for this to the reader, I think proper to inform him that there was no one in the kingdom leſs intereſted in oppoſing that doctrine concerning the meaning of the word charity, which hath been ſeen in the preceding chapter, than our good man. Indeed, he was equally intitled to this virtue in either ſenſe: for as no man was ever more ſenſible of the wants, or more ready to relieve the diſtreſſes of others, ſo none could be more tender of their characters, or ſlower to believe any thing to their diſadvantage.

Scandal, therefore, never found any acceſs to his table; for as it hath been long ſince obſerved, that you may know a man by his companions; ſo I will venture to ſay, that by attending to the converſation at a great man's table, you may ſatisfy yourſelf of his religion, his politics, his taſte, and indeed of his entire diſpoſition: for though a few odd fellows will utter their own ſentiments in all places, yet much the greater part of mankind have enough of the courtier to accommodate their converſation to the taſte and inclination of their ſuperiors.

But to return to Mrs. Wilkins, who having executed her commiſſion with great diſpatch, though at fifteen miles diſtance, brought back ſuch a confirmation of the ſchoolmaſter's guilt, that Mr. Allworthy

worthy determined to ſend for the criminal, and examine him *viva voce*. Mr. Partridge, therefore, was ſummoned to attend, in order to his defence (if he could make any) againſt this accuſation.

At the time appointed, before Mr. Allworthy himſelf, at Paradiſe-hall, came as well the ſaid Partridge, with Anne his wife, as Mrs. Wilkins his accuſer.

And now Mr. Allworthy being ſeated in the chair of juſtice, Mr. Partridge was brought before him. Having heard his accuſation from the mouth of Mrs. Wilkins, he pleaded not guilty, making many vehement proteſtations of his innocence.

Mrs. Partridge was then examined, who, after a modeſt apology for being obliged to ſpeak the truth againſt her huſband, related all the circumſtances with which the reader hath already been acquainted: and at laſt concluded with her huſband's confeſſion of his guilt.

Whether ſhe had forgiven him or no, I will not venture to determine: but it is certain, ſhe was an unwilling witneſs in this cauſe; and, it is probable, from certain other reaſons, would never have been brought to depoſe as ſhe did, had not Mrs. Wilkins, with great art, fiſhed all out of her, at her own houſe, and had ſhe not indeed made promiſes in Mr. Allworthy's name, that the puniſhment of her huſband ſhould not be ſuch as might any wife affect his family.

Partridge ſtill perſiſted in aſſerting his innocence, though he admitted he had made the above-mentioned confeſſion; which he however endeavoured to account for, by proteſting that he was forced into it by the continued importunity ſhe uſed, who vowed, that as ſhe was ſure of his guilt, ſhe would never leave tormenting him till he had owned it, and faithfully promiſed, that in ſuch caſe, ſhe would never mention it to him more. Hence, he ſaid, he had been induced falſely to confeſs himſelf guilty, though he was innocent; and that he believed he ſhould have confeſt a murder from the ſame motive.

Mrs. Partridge could not bear this imputation with patience; and having no other remedy, in the preſent place, but tears, ſhe called forth a plentiful aſſiſtance from

from them, and then addreſſing herſelf to Mr. Allworthy, ſhe ſaid, (or rather cried) 'May it pleaſe 'your worſhip, there never was any poor woman ſo 'injured as I am by that baſe man: for this is not the 'only inſtance of his falſhood to me. No, may it 'pleaſe your worſhip, he hath injured my bed many's 'the good time and often. I could have put up with 'his drunkenneſs and neglect of his buſineſs, if he 'had not broke one of the ſacred commandiments. 'Beſides, if it had been out of doors I had not mat-'tered it ſo much; but with my own ſervant, in my 'own houſe, under my own roof; to defile my own 'chaſte bed, which to be ſure he hath with his beaſtly 'ſtinking whores. Yes, you villain, you have defiled 'my own bed, you have; and then you have charged 'me with bullocking you into owning the truth. 'It is very likely, an't pleaſe your worſhip, that I 'ſhould bullock him.—I have marks enow about my 'body to ſhew of his cruelty to me. If you had 'been a man, you villain, you would have ſcorned to 'injure a woman in that manner. But you an't half a 'man, you know it.—Nor have you been half a huſ-'band to me. You need run after whores, you need, 'when I'm ſure ——— And ſince he provoked me, 'I am ready, an't pleaſe your worſhip, to take my 'bodily oath, that I found them in a bed together. 'What, you have forgot, I ſuppoſe, when you beat 'me into a fit, and made the blood run down my 'forehead, becauſe I only civilly taxed you with your 'adultery! but I can prove it by all my neighbours. 'You have almoſt broke my heart, you have, you 'have.'

Here Mr. Allworthy interrupted, and begged her to be pacified, promiſing her that ſhe ſhould have juſtice; then turning to Partridge, who ſtood aghaſt, one half of his wits being hurried away by ſurprize and the other half by fear, he ſaid, he was ſorry to ſee there was ſo wicked a man in the world. He aſſured him, that his prevaricating and lying backward and forward was a great aggravation of his guilt: for which, the only atonement he could make was by confeſſion and repentance. He exhorted him, there-

fore,

fore, to begin by immediately confeſſing the fact, and not to perſiſt in denying what was ſo plainly proved againſt him, even by his own wife.

Here, reader, I beg your patience a moment, while I make a juſt compliment to the great wiſdom and ſagacity of our law, which refuſes to admit the evidence of a wife for or againſt her huſband. This, ſays a certain learned author, who, I believe, was never quoted before in any but a law-book, would be the means of creating an eternal diſſention between them. It would, indeed, be the means of much perjury, and of much whipping, fining, impriſoning, tranſporting, and hanging.

Partridge ſtood a while ſilent, till being bid to ſpeak, he ſaid, he had already ſpoken the truth, and appealed to heaven for his innocence, and laſtly, to the girl herſelf, whom he deſired his worſhip immediately to ſend for; for he was ignorant, or at leaſt pretended to be ſo, that ſhe had left that part of the country.

Mr. Allworthy, whoſe natural love of juſtice, joined to his coolneſs of temper, made him always a moſt patient magiſtrate in hearing all the witneſſes which an accuſed perſon could produce in his defence, agreed to defer his final determination of this matter, till the arrival of Jenny, for whom he immediately diſpatched a meſſenger; and then having recommended peace between Partridge and his wife (though he addreſſed himſelf chiefly to the wrong perſon) he appointed them to attend again the third day: for he had ſent Jenny a whole day's journey from his own houſe.

At the appointed time the parties all aſſembled, when the meſſenger returning brought word, that Jenny was not to be found: for that ſhe had left her habitation a few days before, in company with a recruiting officer.

Mr. Allworthy then declared, that the evidence of ſuch a ſlut as ſhe appeared to be, would have deſerved no credit; but he ſaid he could not help thinking that had ſhe been preſent, and would have declared the truth, ſhe muſt have confirmed what ſo many circumſtances, together with his own confeſſion, and the declaration of his wife, that ſhe had caught her huſband in the fact, did ſufficiently prove. He therefore

once

once more exhorted Partridge to confeſs; but he ſtill avowing his innocence, Mr. Allworthy declared himſelf ſatisfied of his guilt, and that he was too bad a man to receive any encouragement from him. He therefore deprived him of his annuity, and recommended repentance to him, on account of another world, and induſtry to maintain himſelf and his wife in this.

There were not, perhaps, many more unhappy perſons than poor Partridge. He had loſt the beſt part of his income by the evidence of his wife, and yet was daily upbraided by her for having, among other things, been the occaſion of depriving her of that benefit; but ſuch was his fortune, and he was obliged to ſubmit to it.

Though I called him poor Partridge, in the laſt paragraph, I would have the reader rather impute that epithet to the compaſſion of my temper, than conceive it to be any declaration of his innocence. Whether he was innocent or not, will perhaps appear hereafter; but if the hiſtoric Muſe hath entruſted me with any ſecrets, I will by no means be guilty of diſcovering them till ſhe ſhall give me leave.

Here, therefore, the reader muſt ſuſpend his curioſity. Certain it is, that whatever was the truth of the caſe, there was evidence more than ſufficient to convict him before Allworthy; indeed much leſs would have ſatisfied a bench of juſtices on an order of baſtardy; and yet notwithſtanding the poſitiveneſs of Mrs. Partridge, who would have taken the ſacrament upon the matter, there is a poſſibility that the ſchoolmaſter was entirely innocent: for though it appeared clear, on comparing the time when Jenny departed from Little Baddington, with that of her delivery, that ſhe had there conceived this infant, yet it by no means followed, of neceſſity, that Partridge muſt have been its father: for to omit other particulars, there was in the ſame houſe a lad near eighteen, between whom and Jenny, there had ſubſiſted ſufficient intimacy to found a reaſonable ſuſpicion; and yet, ſo blind is jealouſy, this circumſtance never once entered into the head of the enraged wife.

Whether

Whether Partridge repented or not, according to Mr. Allworthy's advice, is not ſo apparent. Certain it is, that his wife repented heartily of the evidence ſhe had given againſt him; eſpecially when ſhe found Mrs. Deborah had deceived her, and refuſed to make any application to Mr. Allworthy on her behalf. She had, however, ſomewhat better ſucceſs with Mrs. Blifil, who was, as the reader muſt have perceived, a much better tempered woman; and very kindly undertook to ſolicit her brother to reſtore the annuity. In which, though good nature might have ſome ſhare, yet a ſtronger and more natural motive will appear in the next chapter.

Theſe ſolicitations were nevertheleſs unſucceſsful; for though Mr. Allworthy did not think, with ſome late writers, that mercy conſiſts only in puniſhing offenders; yet he was as far from thinking that it is proper to this excellent quality to pardon great criminals wantonly, without any reaſon whatever. Any doubtfulneſs of the fact, or any circumſtance of mitigation was never diſregarded; but the petitions of an offender, or the interceſſions of others, did not in the leaſt affect him. In a word, he never pardoned, becauſe the offender himſelf, or his friends, were unwilling that he ſhould be puniſhed.

Partridge and his wife were therefore both obliged to ſubmit to their fate; which was indeed ſevere enough; for ſo far was he from doubling his induſtry on the account of his leſſened income, that he did in a manner abandon himſelf to deſpair; and as he was by nature indolent, that vice now increaſed upon him, by which means he loſt the little ſchool he had; ſo that neither his wife nor himſelf would have had any bread to eat, had not the charity of ſome good chriſtian interpoſed, and provided them with what was juſt ſufficient for their ſuſtenance.

As this ſupport was conveyed to them by an unknown hand, they imagined, and ſo, I doubt not, will the reader, that Mr. Allworthy himſelf was their ſecret benefactor; who, though he would not openly encourage vice, could yet privately relieve the diſtreſſes of the vicious themſelves, when theſe became too exquiſite

quiſite and diſproportionate to their demerit. In which light, their wretchedneſs appeared now to Fortune herſelf; for ſhe at length took pity on this miſerable couple, and conſiderably leſſened the wretched ſtate of Partridge, by putting a final end to that of his wife, who ſoon after caught the ſmall-pox, and died.

The juſtice which Mr. Allworthy had executed on Partridge, at firſt met with univerſal approbation; but no ſooner had he felt its conſequences, than his neighbours began to relent, and to compaſſionate his caſe; and preſently after, to blame that as rigour and ſeverity, which they before called juſtice. They now exclaimed againſt puniſhing in cold blood, and ſang forth the praiſes of mercy and forgiveneſs.

Theſe cries were conſiderably increaſed by the death of Mrs. Partridge, which, though owing to the diſtemper above-mentioned, which is no conſequence of poverty or diſtreſs, many were not aſhamed to impute to Mr. Allworthy's ſeverity, or, as they now termed it, cruelty.

Partridge, having now loſt his wife, his ſchool, and his annuity, and the unknown perſon having now diſcontinued the laſt-mentioned charity, reſolved to change the ſcene, and left the country, where he was in danger of ſtarving with the univerſal compaſſion of all his neighbours.

CHAP. VII.

A ſhort ſketch of that felicity which prudent couples may extract from hatred; with a ſhort apology for thoſe people who over-look imperfections in their friends.

THOUGH the captain had effectually demoliſhed poor Partridge, yet had he not reaped the harveſt he hoped for, which was to turn the foundling out of Mr. Allworthy's houſe.

On the contrary, that gentleman grew every day fonder of little Tommy, as if he intended to counterbalance his ſeverity to the father with extraordinary fondneſs and affection towards the ſon.

This

This a good deal ſoured the captain's temper, as did all the other daily inſtances of Mr. Allworthy's generoſity: for he looked on all ſuch largeſſes to be diminutions of his own wealth.

In this, we have ſaid, he did not agree with his wife; nor, indeed, in any thing elſe: for though an affection placed on the underſtanding is, by many wiſe perſons, thought more durable than that which is founded on beauty, yet it happened otherwiſe in the preſent caſe. Nay, the underſtandings of this couple were their principal bone of contention, and one great cauſe of many quarrels, which from time to time aroſe between them; and which at laſt ended, on the fide of the lady, in a ſovereign contempt for her huſband; and on the huſband's, in an utter abhorrence of his wife.

As theſe had both exerciſed their talents chiefly in the ſtudy of divinity, this was, from their firſt acquaintance, the moſt common topic of converſation between them. The captain, like a well-bred man, had, before marriage, always given up his opinion to that of the lady: and this, not in the clumſy aukward manner of a conceited blockhead, who, while he civilly yields to a ſuperior in an argument, is deſirous of being ſtill known to think himſelf in the right. The captain, on the contrary, though one of the proudeſt fellows in the world, ſo abſolutely yielded the victory to his antagoniſt, that ſhe, who had not the leaſt doubt of his ſincerity, retired always from the diſpute, with an admiration of her own underſtanding, and a love for his.

But though this complaiſance to one whom the captain thoroughly deſpiſed, was not ſo uneaſy to him, as it would have been, had any hopes of preferment made it neceſſary to ſhew the ſame ſubmiſſion to a Hoadley, or to ſome other of great reputation in the ſcience, yet even this coſt him too much to be endured without ſome motive. Matrimony, therefore, having removed all ſuch motives, he grew weary of his condeſcenſion, and began to treat the opinions of his wife with that haughtineſs and inſolence, which none but thoſe

thoſe who deſerve ſome contempt themſelves can beſtow, and thoſe only who deſerve no contempt can bear.

When the firſt torrent of tenderneſs was over, and when, in the calm and long interval between the fits, reaſon began to open the eyes of the lady, and ſhe ſaw this alteration of behaviour in the captain, who, at length, anſwered all her arguments only with piſh and pſhaw, ſhe was far from enduring the indignity with a tame ſubmiſſion. Indeed it at firſt ſo highly provoked her, that it might have produced ſome tragical event, had it not taken a more harmleſs turn, by filling her with the utmoſt contempt for her huſband's underſtanding, which ſomewhat qualified her hatred towards him; though of this likewiſe ſhe had a pretty moderate ſhare.

The captain's hatred to her was of a purer kind: for as to any imperfections in her knowledge or underſtanding, he no more deſpiſed her for them than for her not being ſix feet high. In his opinion of the female ſex, he exceeded the moroſeneſs of Ariſtotle himſelf: he looked on a woman as on an animal of domeſtic uſe, of ſomewhat higher conſideration than a cat, ſince her offices were of rather more importance; but the difference between theſe two, was, in his eſtimation, ſo ſmall, that, in his marriage contracted with Mr. Allworthy's lands and tenements, it would have been pretty equal which of them he had taken into the bargain. And yet ſo tender was his pride, that it felt the contempt which his wife now began to expreſs towards him; and this, added to the ſurfeit he had before taken of her love, created in him a degree of diſguſt and abhorrence, perhaps, hardly to be exceeded.

One ſituation only of the marriage ſtate is excluded from pleaſure; and that is, a ſtate of indifference; but as many of my readers, I hope, know what an exquiſite delight there is in conveying pleaſure to a beloved object, ſo ſome few, I am afraid, may have experienced the ſatisfaction of tormenting one we hate. It is, I apprehend, to come at this latter pleaſure, that

that we ſee both ſexes often give up that eaſe in marriage, which they might otherwiſe poſſeſs, though their mate was never ſo diſagreeable to them. Hence the wife often puts on fits of love and jealouſy, nay, even denies herſelf any pleaſure, to diſturb and prevent thoſe of her huſband; and he again, in return, puts frequent reſtraints on himſelf, and ſtays at home in company which he diſlikes, in order to confine his wife to what ſhe equally deteſts. Hence too muſt flow thoſe tears which a widow ſometimes ſo plentifully ſheds over the aſhes of a huſband, with whom ſhe led a life of conſtant diſquiet and turbulency, and whom now ſhe can never hope to torment any more.

But if ever any couple enjoyed this pleaſure, it was at preſent experienced by the captain and his lady. It was always a ſufficient reaſon to either of them to be obſtinate in any opinion, that the other had previouſly aſſerted the contrary. If the one propoſed any amuſement, the other conſtantly objected to it: they never loved or hated, commended or abuſed, the ſame perſon. And for this reaſon, as the captain looked with an evil eye on the little foundling, his wife began now to careſs it almoſt equally with her own child.

The reader will be apt to conceive, that this behaviour between the huſband and wife did not greatly contribute to Mr. Allworthy's repoſe, as it tended ſo little to that ſerene happineſs which he hath deſigned for all three, from this alliance; but the truth is, though he might be a little diſappointed in his ſanguine expectations, yet he was far from being acquainted with the whole matter: for as the captain was, from certain obvious reaſons, much on his guard before him, the lady was obliged, for fear of her brother's diſpleaſure, to purſue the ſame conduct. In fact, it is poſſible for a third perſon to be very intimate, nay even to live long in the ſame houſe, with a married couple, who have any tolerable diſcretion, and not even gueſs at the four ſentiments which they bear to each other: for though the whole day may be ſometimes too ſhort for hatred, as well as for love; yet the many hours, which they naturally ſpend together apart

from all obſervers, furniſh people, of tolerable moderation, with ſuch ample opportunity for the enjoyment of either paſſion, that, if they love, they can ſupport being a few hours in company without toying, or if they hate, without ſpitting in each other's faces.

It is poſſible, however, that Mr. Allworthy ſaw enough to render him a little uneaſy; for we are not always to conclude, that a wiſe man is not hurt, becauſe he doth not cry out and lament himſelf, like thoſe of a childiſh or effeminate temper. But indeed it is poſſible he might ſee ſome faults in the captain without any uneaſineſs at all: for men of true wiſdom and goodneſs are contented to take perſons and things as they are, without complaining of their imperfections, or attempting to amend them. They can ſee a fault in a friend, a relation, or an acquaintance, without ever mentioning it to the parties themſelves, or to any others; and this often without leſſening their affection. Indeed, unleſs great diſcernment be tempered with this over-looking diſpoſition, we ought never to contract friendſhip but with a degree of folly which we can deceive: for I hope my friends will pardon me, when I declare, I know none of them without a fault; and I ſhould be ſorry if I could imagine, I had any friend who could not ſee mine. Forgiveneſs of this kind, we give and demand in turn. It is an exerciſe of friendſhip, and perhaps none of the leaſt pleaſant. And this forgiveneſs we muſt beſtow, without deſire of amendment. There is, perhaps, no ſurer mark of folly, than an attempt to correct the natural infirmities of thoſe we love. The fineſt compoſition of human nature, as well as the fineſt china, may have a flaw in it; and this I am afraid, in either caſe, is equally incurable; though, nevertheleſs, the pattern may remain of the higheſt value.

Upon the whole, then, Mr. Allworthy certainly ſaw ſome imperfections in the captain; but, as this was a very artful man, and eternally upon his guard before him, theſe appeared to him no more than blemiſhes in a good character; which his goodneſs made him overlook, and his wiſdom prevented him from diſcovering

to

to the captain himſelf. Very different would have been his ſentiments, had he diſcovered the whole; which, perhaps, would in time have been the caſe, had the huſband and wife long continued this kind of behaviour to each other; but this kind fortune took effectual means to prevent, by forcing the captain to do that which rendered him again dear to his wife, and reſtored all her tenderneſs and affection towards him.

CHAP. VIII.

A receipt to regain the loſt affections of a wife, which hath never been known to fail in the moſt deſperate caſes.

THE captain was made large amends for the unpleaſant minutes which he paſſed in the converſation of his wife, (and which were as few as he could contrive to make them) by the pleaſant meditations he enjoyed when alone.

Theſe meditations were entirely employed on Mr. Allworthy's fortune; for firſt, he exerciſed much thought in calculating, as well as he could, the exact value of the whole; which calculations he often ſaw occaſion to alter in his own favour: and ſecondly, and chiefly, he pleaſed himſelf with intended alterations in the houſe and gardens, and in projecting many other ſchemes, as well for the improvement of the eſtate, as of the grandeur of the place: for this purpoſe he applied himſelf to the ſtudies of architecture and gardening, and read over many books on both theſe ſubjects; for theſe ſciences, indeed, employed his whole time, and formed his only amuſement. He, at laſt, completed a moſt excellent plan; and very ſorry we are, that it is not in our power to preſent it to our reader, ſince even the luxury of the preſent age, I believe, would hardly match it. It had, indeed, in a ſuperlative degree, the two principal ingredients which ſerve to recommend all great and noble deſigns of this nature; for it required an immoderate expence to execute, and a vaſt length of time to bring it to any ſort of perfection. The former of theſe, the immenſe wealth of which the captain ſuppoſed Mr. Allworthy

poſſeſſed, and which he thought himſelf ſure of inheriting, promiſed very effectually to ſupply; and the latter, the ſoundneſs of his own conſtitution, and his time of life, which was only what is called middle age, removed all apprehenſion of his not living to accompliſh.

Nothing was wanting to enable him to enter upon the immediate execution of this plan, but the death of Mr. Allworthy; in calculating which he had employed much of his own algebra, beſides purchaſing every book extant that treats of the value of lives, reverſions, &c. From all which he ſatisfied himſelf, that as he had every day a chance of this happening, ſo had he more than an even chance of its happening within a few years.

But while the captain was one day buſied in deep contemplations of this kind, one of the moſt unlucky, as well as unſeaſonable accidents, happened to him. The utmoſt malice of fortune could, indeed, have contrived nothing ſo cruel, ſo mal-a-propos, ſo abſolutely deſtructive to all his ſchemes. In ſhort, not to keep the reader in long ſuſpence, juſt at the very inſtant when his heart was exulting in meditations on the happineſs which would accrue to him by Mr. Allworthy's death, he himſelf——died of an apoplexy.

This unfortunately befel the captain as he was taking his evening walk by himſelf, ſo that nobody was preſent to lend him any aſſiſtance, if indeed any aſſiſtance could have preſerved him. He took, therefore, meaſure of that proportion of ſoil, which was now become adequate to all his future purpoſes, and he lay dead on the ground, a great (though not a living) example of the truth of that obſervation of Horace:

'Tu ſecanda marmora
'Locas ſub ipſum funus: & ſepulchri
'Immemor, ſtruis domos.'

Which ſentiment, I ſhall thus give to the Engliſh reader: 'You provide the nobleſt materials for building, 'when a pick-ax and a ſpade are only neceſſary; and 'build houſes of five hundred by a hundred feet, 'forgetting that of ſix by two.'

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

A proof of the infallibility of the foregoing receipt, in the lamentations of the widow; with other ſuitable decorations of death, ſuch as phyſicians, &c. and an epitaph in the true ſtile.

MR. Allworthy, his ſiſter, and another lady, were aſſembled at the accuſtomed hour in the ſupper-room; where having waited a conſiderable time longer than uſual, Mr. Allworthy firſt declared, he began to grow uneaſy at the captain's ſtay; (for he was always moſt punctual at his meals) and gave orders that the bell ſhould be rung without the doors, and eſpecially towards thoſe walks which the captain was wont to uſe.

All theſe ſummons proving ineffectual, (for the captain had, by perverſe accident, betaken himſelf to a new walk that evening) Mrs. Blifil declared ſhe was ſeriouſly frightened. Upon which the other lady, who was one of her moſt intimate acquaintance, and who well knew the true ſtate of her affections, endeavoured all ſhe could to pacify her; telling her—— To be ſure ſhe could not help being uneaſy; but that ſhe ſhould hope the beſt. That, perhaps, the ſweetneſs of the evening had enticed the captain to go farther than his uſual walk; or he might be detained at ſome neighbour's. Mrs. Blifil anſwered, no; ſhe was ſure ſome accident had befallen him; for that he would never ſtay out without ſending her word, as he muſt know how uneaſy it would make her. The other lady, having no other arguments to uſe, betook herſelf to the entreaties uſual on ſuch occaſions, and begged her not to frighten herſelf, for it might be of very ill conſequence to her own health; and, filling out a very large glaſs of wine, adviſed, and at laſt prevailed with, her to drink it.

Mr. Allworthy now returned into the parlour; for he had been himſelf in ſearch after the captain. His countenance ſufficiently ſhewed the conſternation he was under, which indeed had a good deal deprived

him of ſpeech; but as grief operates variouſly on different minds, ſo the ſame apprehenſion which depreſſed his voice, elevated that of Mrs. Blifil. She now began to bewail herſelf in very bitter terms, and floods of tears accompanied her lamentations, which the lady, her companion, declared ſhe could not blame; but, at the ſame time, diſſuaded her from indulging; attempting to moderate the grief of her friend, by philoſophical obſervations on the many diſappointments to which human life is daily ſubject, which, ſhe ſaid, was a ſufficient conſideration to fortify our minds againſt any accidents, how ſudden or terrible ſoever. She ſaid, her brother's example ought to teach her patience, who, though, indeed he could not be ſuppoſed as much concerned as herſelf, yet was, doubtleſs, very uneaſy, though his reſignation to the Divine Will had reſtrained his grief within due bounds.

'Mention not my brother,' ſaid Mrs. Blifil, 'I 'alone am the object of your pity. What are the 'terrors of friendſhip to what a wife feels on theſe 'occaſions? O he is loſt! Somebody hath murdered 'him.—I ſhall never ſee him more'—Here a torrent of tears had the ſame conſequence with what the ſuppreſſion had occaſioned to Mr. Allworthy, and ſhe remained ſilent.

At this interval a ſervant came running in, out of breath, and cry'd out, 'The captain was found;' and, before he could proceed farther, he was followed by two more, bearing the dead body between them.

Here the curious reader may obſerve another diverſity in the operation of grief: for as Mr. Allworthy had been before ſilent, from the ſame cauſe which had made his ſiſter vociferous; ſo did the preſent ſight, which drew tears from the gentleman, put an entire ſtop to thoſe of the lady; who firſt gave a violent ſcream, and preſently after fell into a fit.

The room was ſoon full of ſervants, ſome of whom, with the lady viſitant, were employed in care of the wife; and others, with Mr. Allworthy, aſſiſted in carrying

carrying off the captain to a warm bed; where every method was tried, in order to reſtore him to life.

And glad ſhould we be, could we inform the reader, that both theſe bodies had been attended with equal ſucceſs; for thoſe who undertook the care of the lady, ſucceeded ſo well, that after the fit had continued a decent time, ſhe again revived, to their great ſatisfaction: but as to the captain, all experiments of bleeding, chafing, dropping, &c. proved ineffectual. Death, that inexorable judge, had paſſed ſentence on him, and refuſed to grant him a reprieve, though two doctors who arrived, and were fee'd at one and the ſame inſtant, were his counſel.

Theſe two doctors, whom, to avoid any malicious applications, we ſhall diſtinguiſh by the names of Dr. Y. and Dr. Z. having felt his pulſe; to wit, Dr. Y. his right arm, and Dr. Z. his left, both agreed that he was abſolutely dead; but as to the diſtemper, or cauſe of his death, they differed; Dr. Y. holding that he died of an apoplexy, and Dr. Z. of an epilepſy.

Hence aroſe a diſpute between the learned men; in which each delivered the reaſons of their ſeveral opinions. Theſe were of ſuch equal force, that they ſerved both to confirm either doctor in his own ſentiments, and made not the leaſt impreſſion on his adverſary.

To ſay the truth, every phyſician, almoſt, hath his favourite diſeaſe, to which he aſcribes all the victories obtained over human nature. The gout, the rheumatiſm, the ſtone, the gravel, and the conſumption, have all their ſeveral patrons in the faculty; and none more than the nervous fever, or the fever on the ſpirits. And here we may account for thoſe diſagreements in opinion, concerning the cauſe of a patient's death, which ſometimes occur between the moſt learned of the college; and which have greatly ſurprized that part of the world who have been ignorant of the fact we have above aſſerted.

The reader may, perhaps, be ſurprized, that inſtead of endeavouring to revive the patient, the learned gentlemen ſhould fall immediately into a diſpute on the occaſion of his death; but, in reality, all ſuch

experiments had been made before their arrival: for the captain was put into a warm bed, had his veins ſcarified, his forehead chafed, and all ſorts of ſtrong drops applied to his lips and noſtrils.

The phyſicians, therefore, finding themſelves anticipated in every thing they ordered, were at a loſs how to apply that portion of the time which it is uſual and decent to remain for their fee, and were therefore neceſſitated to find ſome ſubject or other for diſcourſe; and what could more naturally preſent itſelf than that before-mentioned?

Our doctors were about to take their leave, when Mr. Allworthy, having given over the captain, and acquieſced in the Divine Will, began to enquire after his ſiſter, whom he deſired them to viſit before their departure.

This lady was now recovered of her fit, and, to uſe the common phraſe, as well as could be expected for one in her condition. The doctors, therefore, all previous ceremonies being complied with, as this was a new patient, attended, according to deſire, and laid hold on each of her hands, as they had before done on thoſe of the corpſe.

The caſe of the lady was in the other extreme from that of her huſband: for, as he was paſt all the aſſiſtance of phyſic, ſo in reality ſhe required none.

There is nothing more unjuſt than the vulgar opinion, by which phyſicians are miſrepreſented as friends to death. On the contrary, I believe, if the number of thoſe who recover by phyſic could be oppoſed to that of the martyrs to it, the former would rather exceed the latter. Nay, ſome are ſo cautious on this head, that, to avoid a poſſibility of killing the patient, they abſtain from all methods of curing, and preſcribe nothing but what can do neither good nor harm. I have heard ſome of theſe, with great gravity, deliver it as a maxim, 'That nature ſhould be 'left to do her own work, while the phyſician ſtands 'by, as it were, to clap her on the back, and encou'rage her when ſhe doth well.'

So little then did our doctors delight in death, that they diſcharged the corpſe after a ſingle fee; but they were

were not ſo diſguſted with their living patient; concerning whoſe caſe they immediately agreed, and fell to preſcribing with great diligence.

Whether, as the lady had, at firſt, perſuaded the phyſicians to believe her ill, they had now, in return, perſuaded her to believe herſelf ſo, I will not determine; but ſhe continued a whole month with all the decorations of ſickneſs. During this time ſhe was viſited by phyſicians, attended by nurſes, and received conſtant meſſages from her acquaintance, to enquire after her health.

At length, the decent time for ſickneſs and immoderate grief being expired, the doctors were diſcharged, and the lady began to ſee company; being altered only from what ſhe was before, by that colour of ſadneſs in which ſhe had dreſſed her perſon and countenance.

The captain was now interred, and might, perhaps, have already made a large progreſs towards oblivion, had not the friendſhip of Mr. Allworthy taken care to preſerve his memory, by the following epitaph, which was written by a man of as great a genius as integrity, and one who perfectly well knew the captain.

Here lies,
In Expectation of a joyful Riſing,
The Body of
Captain JOHN BLIFIL.
LONDON
had the Honour of his Birth,
OXFORD
of his Education.
His Parts
were an Honour to his Profeſſion
and to his Country:
His life to his Religion
and human Nature.
He was a dutiful Son,
a tender Huſband,
an affectionate Father,
a moſt kind Brother,
a ſincere Friend,
a devout Chriſtian,
and a good Man.
His inconſolable Widow
hath erected this Stone,
The Monument of
His Virtues,
and her Affection.

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK III.

Containing the moſt memorable tranſactions which paſſed in the family of Mr. Allworthy, from the time when Tommy Jones arrived at the age of fourteen, till he attained the age of nineteen. In this book the reader may pick up ſome hints concerning the education of children.

CHAP. I.

Containing little or nothing.

THE reader will be pleaſed to remember, that, at the beginning of the ſecond book of this hiſtory, we gave him a hint of our intention to paſs over ſeveral large periods of time, in which nothing happened worthy of being recorded in a chronicle of this kind.

In ſo doing, we do not only conſult our own dignity and eaſe, but the good and advantage of the reader: for beſides, that, by theſe means, we prevent him from throwing away his time, in reading either without pleaſure or emolument, we give him, at all ſuch ſeaſons, an opportunity of employing that wonderful ſagacity, of which he is maſter, by filling up theſe vacant ſpaces of time with his own conjectures; for which purpoſe, we have taken care to qualify him in the preceding pages.

For inſtance, what reader but knows that Mr. Allworthy felt, at firſt, for the loſs of his friend, thoſe emotions of grief, which, on ſuch occaſions, enter into all men whoſe hearts are not compoſed of flint, or their heads of as ſolid materials? Again, what reader doth not know that philoſophy and religion in time moderated, and at laſt extinguiſhed this grief? The former of theſe, teaching the folly and vanity of it, and the latter, correcting it as unlawful; and at the ſame time aſſuaging it, by raiſing future hopes and aſſurances, which enable a ſtrong and religious mind to take leave of a friend, on his death-bed, with little leſs indifference than if he was preparing for a long journey; and, indeed, with little leſs hope of ſeeing him again.

Nor can the judicious reader be at a greater loſs on account of Mrs. Bridget Blifil, who, he may be aſſured, conducted herſelf through the whole ſeaſon, in which grief is to make its appearance on the outſide of the body, with the ſtricteſt regard to all the rules of cuſtom and decency, ſuiting the alterations of her countenance to the ſeveral alterations of her habit: for as this is changed from weeds to black, from black to grey, from grey to white, ſo did her countenance change from diſmal to ſorrowful, from ſorrowful to ſad, and from ſad to ſerious, till the day came to which ſhe was allowed to return to her former ſerenity.

We have mentioned theſe two, as examples only of the taſk which may be impoſed on readers of the loweſt claſs. Much higher and harder exerciſes of judgment and penetration may reaſonably be expected from the upper graduates in criticiſm. Many notable diſcoveries will, I doubt not, be made by ſuch, of the tranſactions which happened in the family of our worthy man, during all the years which we have thought proper to paſs over: for though nothing worthy of a place in this hiſtory occurred within that period; yet did ſeveral incidents happen of equal importance with thoſe reported by the daily and weekly hiſtorians of the age, in reading which, great numbers

bers of perſons conſume a conſiderable part of their time, very little, I am afraid, to their emolument. Now, in the conjectures here propoſed, ſome of the moſt excellent faculties of the mind may be employed to much advantage, ſince it is a more uſeful capacity to be able to foretel the actions of men, in any circumſtance, from their characters, than to judge of their characters from their actions. The former, I own, requires the greater penetration; but may be accompliſhed by true ſagacity, with no leſs certainty than the latter.

As we are ſenſible that much the greateſt part of our readers are very eminently poſſeſſed of this quality, we have left them a ſpace of twelve years to exert it in; and ſhall now bring forth our hero, at about fourteen years of age, not queſtioning that many have been long impatient to be introduced to his acquaintance.

CHAP. II.

The hero of this great hiſtory appears with very bad omens. A little tale, of ſo LOW *a kind, that ſome may think it not worth their notice. A word or two concerning a ſquire, and more relating to a game-keeper, and a ſchool-maſter.*

AS we determined when we firſt ſat down to write this hiſtory, to flatter no man, but to guide our pen throughout by the direction of truth, we are obliged to bring our hero on the ſtage in a much more diſadvantageous manner than we could wiſh; and to declare honeſtly, even at his firſt appearance, that it was the univerſal opinon of all Mr. Allworthy's family, that he was certainly born to be hanged.

Indeed, I am ſorry to ſay, there was too much reaſon for this conjecture, The lad having, from his earlieſt years, diſcovered a propenſity to many vices, and eſpecially to one, which hath as direct a tendency as any other to that fate, which we have juſt now obſerved

ſerved to have been prophetically denounced againſt him. He had been already convicted of three robberies, viz. of robbing an orchard, of ſtealing a duck out of a farmer's yard, and of picking Maſter Bliſil's pocket of a ball.

The vices of this young man were, moreover, heightened, by the diſadvantageous light in which they appeared, when oppoſed to the virtues of Maſter Bliſil, his companion: a youth of ſo different a caſt from little Jones, that not only the family, but all the neighbourhood, reſounded his praiſes. He was, indeed, a lad of a remarkable diſpoſition; ſober, diſcreet, and pious, beyond his age; qualities which gained him the love of every one who knew him, whilſt Tom Jones was univerſally diſliked; and many expreſſed their wonder, that Mr. Allworthy would ſuffer ſuch a lad to be educated with his nephew, leſt the morals of the latter ſhould be corrupted by his example.

An incident which happened about this time, will ſet the character of theſe two lads more fairly before the diſcerning reader, than is in the power of the longeſt diſſertation.

Tom Jones, who, bad as he is, muſt ſerve for the hero of this hiſtory, had only one friend among all the ſervants of the family; for, as to Mrs. Wilkins, ſhe had long ſince given him up, and was perfectly reconciled to her miſtreſs. This friend was the gamekeeper, a fellow of a looſe kind of diſpoſition, and who was thought not to entertain much ſtricter notions concerning the difference of *meum* and *tuum*, than the young gentleman himſelf. And hence, this friendſhip gave occaſion to many ſarcaſtical remarks among the domeſtics, moſt of which were either proverbs before, or, at leaſt, are become ſo now; and, indeed, the wit of them all may be compriſed in that ſhort Latin proverb, '*Noſcitur a ſocio*,' which, I think, is thus expreſſed in Engliſh, 'You may know him by 'the company he keeps.'

To ſay the truth, ſome of that atrocious wickedneſs in Jones, of which we have juſt mentioned three examples,

amples, might, perhaps, be derived from the encouragement he had received from this fellow, who, in two or three inſtances, had been what the law calls an acceſſary after the fact. For the whole duck, and great part of the apples, were converted to the uſe of the game-keeper, and his family. Though, as Jones alone was diſcovered, the poor lad bore not only the whole ſmart, but the whole blame; both which fell again to his lot, on the following occaſion.

Contiguous to Mr. Allworthy's eſtate, was the manor of one of thoſe gentlemen, who are called preſervers of the game. This ſpecies of men, from the great ſeverity with which they revenge the death of a hare, or a partridge, might be thought to cultivate the ſame ſuperſtition with the Bannians in India; many of whom, we are told, dedicate their whole lives to the preſervation and protection of certain animals, was it not that our Engliſh Bannians, while they preſerve them from other enemies, will moſt unmercifully ſlaughter whole horſe-loads themſelves, ſo that they ſtand clearly acquitted of any ſuch heatheniſh ſuperſtition.

I have, indeed, a much better opinion of this kind of men than is entertained by ſome, as I take them to anſwer the order of nature, and the good purpoſes for which they were ordained, in a more ample manner than many others. Now, as Horace tells us, that there are a ſet of human beings,

Fruges conſumere nati.

'Born to conſume the fruits of the earth.' So, I make no manner of doubt but there are others,

Feras conſumere nati.

'Born to conſume the beaſts of the field,' or, as it is commonly called, the game; and none, I believe, will deny, but that thoſe ſquires fulfil this end of their creation.

Little Jones went one day a ſhooting with the game-keeper; when, happening to ſpring a covey of partridges

tridges, near the border of that manor over which fortune, to fulfil the wiſe purpoſes of nature, had planted one of the game-conſumers, the birds flew into it, and were marked (as it is called) by the two ſportſmen, in ſome furze-buſhes, about two or three hundred paces beyond Mr. Allworthy's dominions.

Mr. Allworthy had given the fellow ſtrict orders, on pain of forfeiting his place, never to treſpaſs on any of his neighbours; no more on thoſe who were leſs rigid in this matter, than on the lord of this manor. With regard to others, indeed, theſe orders had not been always very ſcrupulouſly kept; but as the diſpoſition of the gentleman with whom the partridges had taken ſanctuary, was well known, the game-keeper had never yet attempted to invade his territories. Nor had he done it now, had not the younger ſportſman, who was exceſſively eager to purſue the flying game, over-perſuaded him; but Jones being very importunate, the other, who was himſelf keen enough after the ſport, yielded to his perſuaſions, entered the manor, and ſhot one of the partridges.

The gentleman himſelf was at that time on horſeback, at a little diſtance from them; and hearing the gun go off, he immediately made towards the place, and diſcovered poor Tom: for the game-keeper had leapt into the thickeſt part of the furze-brake, where he had happily concealed himſelf.

The gentleman having ſearched the lad, and found the partridge upon him, denounced great vengeance, ſwearing he would acquaint Mr. Allworthy. He was as good as his word; for he rode immediately to his houſe, and complained of the treſpaſs on his manor, in as high terms, and as bitter language, as if his houſe had been broken open, and the moſt valuable furniture ſtole out of it. He added, that ſome other perſon was in his company, though he could not diſcover him: for that two guns had been diſcharged almoſt in the ſame inſtant. And, ſays he, "we have "found only this partridge, but the Lord knows "what miſchief they have done."

At his return home, Tom was preſently convened before Mr. Allworthy. He owned the fact, and alledged

ledged no other excuſe but what was really true, viz. that the covey was originally ſprung in Mr. Allworthy's own manor.

Tom was then interrogated who was with him, which Mr. Allworthy declared he was reſoled to know, acquainting the culprit with the circumſtance of the two guns, which had been depoſed by the ſquire and both his ſervants; but Tom ſtoutly perſiſted in aſſerting that he was alone: yet, to ſay the truth, he heſitated a little at firſt, which would have confirmed Mr. Allworthy's belief, had what the ſquire and his ſervants ſaid, wanted any further confirmation.

The game-keeper being a ſuſpected perſon, was now ſent for, and the queſtion put to him; but he, relying on the promiſe which Tom had made him, to take all upon himſelf, very reſolutely denied being in company with the young gentleman, or indeed having ſeen him the whole afternoon.

Mr. Allworthy then turned towards Tom, with more than uſual anger in his countenance, and adviſed him to confeſs who was with him; repeating, that he was reſolved to know. The lad, however, ſtill maintained his reſolution, and was diſmiſſed with much wrath by Mr. Allworthy, who told him, he ſhould have to the next morning to conſider of it, when he ſhould be queſtioned by another perſon, and in another manner.

Poor Jones ſpent a very melancholy night, and the more ſo, as he was without his uſual companion: for maſter Bliſil was gone abroad on a viſit with his mother. Fear of the puniſhment he was to ſuffer was on this occaſion his leaſt evil; his chief anxiety being, leſt his conſtancy ſhould fail him, and he ſhould be brought to betray the game-keeper, whoſe ruin he knew muſt now be the conſequence.

Nor did the game-keeper paſs his time much better. He had the ſame apprehenſions with the youth; for whoſe honour he had likewiſe a much tenderer regard than for his ſkin.

In the morning, when Tom attended the reverend Mr. Thwackum, the perſon to whom Mr. Allworthy had committed the inſtruction of the two boys, he had

had the ſame queſtions put to him by that gentleman, which he had been aſked the evening before, to which he returned the ſame anſwers. The conſequence of this was, ſo ſevere a whipping, that it poſſibly fell little ſhort of the torture with which confeſſions are in ſome countries extorted from criminals.

Tom bore his puniſhment with great reſolution; and though his maſter aſked him between every ſtroke, whether he would not confeſs, he was contented to be flead rather than betray his friend, or break the promiſe he had made.

The game-keeper was now relieved from his anxiety, and Mr. Allworthy himſelf began to be concerned at Tom's ſufferings: for, beſides that Mr. Thwackum, being highly enraged that he was not able to make the boy ſay what he himſelf pleaſed, had carried his ſeverity much beyond the good man's intention, this latter began now to ſuſpect that the ſquire had been miſtaken; which his extreme eagerneſs and anger ſeemed to make probable; and as for what the ſervants had ſaid in confirmation of their maſter's account, he laid no great ſtreſs upon that. Now, as cruelty and injuſtice were two ideas, of which Mr. Allworthy could by no means ſupport the conſciouſneſs a ſingle moment, he ſent for Tom, and after many kind and friendly exhortations, ſaid, "I am convinced, my dear child, that my ſuſpicions have 'wronged you; I am ſorry that you have been ſo ſe-'verely puniſhed on this account.'—And at laſt gave him a little horſe to make him amends; again repeating his ſorrow for what had paſt.

Tom's guilt now flew in his face more than any ſeverity could make him. He could more eaſily bear the laſhes of Thwackum, than the generoſity of Allworthy. The tears burſt from his eyes, and he fell upon his knees, crying, "Oh! Sir, you are too good 'for me. Indeed you are. Indeed, I don't deſerve 'it.' And at that very inſtant, from the fullneſs of his heart, had almoſt betrayed the ſecret; but the good genius of the game-keeper ſuggeſted to him what might be the conſequence to the poor fellow, and this conſideration ſealed his lips.

Thwackum

Thwackum did all he could to diſſuade Allworthy from ſhewing any compaſſion or kindneſs to the boy, ſaying, 'He had perſiſted in an untruth;' and gave ſome hints, that a ſecond whipping might probably bring the matter to light.

But Mr. Allworthy abſolutely refuſed to conſent to the experiment. He ſaid, the boy had ſuffered enough already, for concealing the truth, even if he was guilty, ſeeing that he could have no motive but a miſtaken point of honour for ſo doing.

Honour, cry'd Thwackum, with ſome warmth, mere ſtubborneſs and obſtinacy! Can honour teach any one to tell a lie, or can any honour exiſt independent of religion?

This diſcourſe happened at table when dinner was juſt ended; and there were preſent Mr. Allworthy, Mr. Thwackum, and a third gentleman, who now entered into the debate, and whom, before we proceed any farther, we ſhall briefly introduce to our reader's acquaintance.

CHAP. III.

The character of Mr. Square the philoſopher, and of Mr. Thwackum the divine; with a diſpute concerning——.

THE name of this gentleman who had then reſided ſome time at Mr. Allworthy's houſe, was Mr. Square. His natural parts were not of the firſt rate, but he had greatly improved them by a learned education. He was deeply read in the antients, and a profeſt maſter of all the works of Plato and Ariſtotle. Upon which great models he had principally formed himſelf, ſometimes according with the opinions of the one, and ſometimes with that of the other. In morals he was a profeſt Platoniſt, and in religion he inclined to be an Ariſtotelian.

But though he had, as we have ſaid, formed his morals on the Platonic model, yet he perfectly agreed with the opinion of Ariſtotle, in conſidering that great man rather in the quality of a philoſopher or a ſpeculatiſt, than as a legiſlator. This ſentiment he carried a great way: indeed, ſo far, as to regard all vir-

tue

tue as matter of theory only. This, it is true, he never affirmed, as I have heard, to any one; and yet upon the leaſt attention to his conduct, I cannot help thinking, it was his real opinion, as it will perfectly reconcile ſome contradictions, which might otherwiſe appear in his character.

This gentleman and Mr. Thwackum ſcarce ever met without a diſputation; for their tenets were indeed diametrically oppoſite to each other. Square held human nature to be the perfection of all virtue, and that vice was a deviation from our nature in the ſame manner as deformity of body is. Thwackum, on the contrary, maintained that the human mind, ſince the fall, was nothing but a ſink of iniquity, till purified and reedeemed by grace. In one point only they agreed, which was, in all their diſcourſes on morality never to mention the word goodneſs. The favourite phraſe of the former, was the natural beauty of virtue; that of the latter, was the divine power of grace. The former meaſured all actions by the unalterable rule of right, and the eternal fitneſs of things; the latter decided all matters by authority; but, in doing this, he always uſed the ſcriptures and their commentators, as the lawyer doth his Coke upon Littleton, where the comment is of equal authority with the text.

After this ſhort introduction, the reader will be pleaſed to remember, that the parſon had concluded his ſpeech with a triumphant queſtion, to which he had apprehended no anſwer, viz. Can any honour exiſt independent on religion?

To this Square anſwered, that it was impoſſible to diſcourſe philoſophically concerning words, till their meaning was firſt eſtabliſhed; that there were ſcarce any two words of a more vague and uncertain ſignification, than the two he had mentioned; for that there were almoſt as many different opinions concerning honour, as concerning religion. 'But, ſays he, if by 'honour you mean the true natural beauty of virtue, 'I will maintain it may exiſt independent of any re-'ligion whatever. Nay, (added he) you yourſelf 'will allow it may exiſt independent of all but one:

'So

'So will a Mahometan, a Jew, and all the maintainers of all the different ſects in the world.'

Thwackum replied, this was arguing with the uſual malice of all the enemies to the true church. He ſaid, he doubted not but that all the infidels and heretics in the world would, if they could, confine honour to their own abſurd errors, and damnable deceptions; 'but honour,' ſays he, 'it not therefore manifold, 'becauſe there are many abſurd opinions about it; 'nor is religion manifold, becauſe there are various 'ſects and hereſies in the world. When I mention 'religion, I mean the chriſtian religion; and not 'only the chriſtian religion, but the proteſtant religion; and not only the proteſtant religion, but the 'church of England. And when I mention honour, 'I mean that mode of divine grace which is not only 'conſiſtent with, but dependent upon, this religion; 'and is conſiſtent with, and dependent upon, no other. 'Now to ſay that the honour I here mean, and which 'was, I thought, all the honour I could be ſuppoſed 'to mean, will uphold, much leſs dictate, an untruth, is to aſſert an abſurdity too ſhocking to be 'conceived.'

'I purpoſely avoided,' ſays Square, 'drawing a 'concluſion which I thought evident from what I 'have ſaid; but if you perceived it, I am ſure you 'have not attempted to anſwer it. However, to drop 'the article of religion, I think it is plain, from what 'you have ſaid, that we have different ideas of honour; 'or why do we not agree in the ſame terms of its explanation? I have aſſerted, that true honour and true 'virtue are almoſt ſynonymous terms, and they are 'both founded on the unalterable rule of right, and 'the eternal fitneſs of things; to which an untruth 'being abſolutely repugnant and contrary, it is certain 'that true honour cannot ſupport an untruth. In this, 'therefore, I think we are agreed; but that this 'honour can be ſaid to be founded on religion, to 'which it is antecedent, if by religion be meant any 'poſitive law.——

'I agree,' anſwered Thwackum, with great warmth,

'with

'with a man who aſſerts honour to be antecedent to 'religion!—Mr. Allworthy, did I agree———?'

He was proceeding, when Mr. Allworthy interpoſed, telling them very coldly, they had both miſtaken his meaning; for that he had ſaid nothing of true honour.—It is poſſible, however, he would not have eaſily quieted the diſputants, who were growing equally warm, had not another matter now fallen out, which put a final end to the converſation at preſent.

CHAP. IV.

Containing a neceſſary apology for the author; and a childiſh incident, which perhaps requires an apology likewiſe.

BEFORE I proceed further, I ſhall beg leave to obviate ſome miſconſtructions, into which the zeal of ſome few readers may lead them; for I would not willingly give offence to any, eſpecially to men who are warm in the cauſe of virtue or religion.

I hope, therefore, no man will, by the groſſeſt miſunderſtanding, or perverſion, of my meaning, miſrepreſent me, as endeavouring to caſt any ridicule on the greateſt perfections of human nature; and which do, indeed, alone purify and enoble the heart of man, and raiſe him above the brute creation. This, reader, I will venture to ſay, (and by how much the better man you are yourſelf, by ſo much the more will you be inclined to believe me) that I would rather have buried the ſentiments of theſe two perſons in eternal oblivion, than have done any injury to either of theſe glorious cauſes.

On the contrary, it is with a view to their ſervice that I have taken upon me to record the lives and actions of two of their falſe and pretended champions. A treacherous friend is the moſt dangerous enemy; and I will ſay boldly, that both religion and virtue have received more real diſcredit from hypocrites, than the wittieſt profligates or infidels could ever caſt upon them: nay farther, as theſe two, in their purity, are rightly called the bands of civil ſociety, and are indeed

deed the greateſt of bleſſings; ſo when poiſoned and corrupted with fraud, pretence, and affectation, they have become the worſt of civil curſes, and have enabled men to perpetrate the moſt cruel miſchiefs to their own ſpecies.

Indeed, I doubt not but this ridicule will in general be allowed; my chief apprehenſion is, as many true and juſt ſentiments often came from the mouths of theſe perſons, leſt the whole ſhould be taken together, and I ſhould be conceived to ridicule all alike. Now the reader will be pleaſed to conſider, that as neither of theſe men were fools, they could not be ſuppoſed to have holden none but wrong principles, and to have uttered nothing but abſurdities; what injuſtice, therefore, muſt I have done to their characters, had I ſelected only what was bad, and how horribly wretched and mained muſt their arguments have appeared!

Upon the whole, it is not religion or virtue, but the want of them, which is here expoſed. Had not Thwackum too much neglected virtue, and Square religion, in the compoſition of their ſeveral ſyſtems, and had not both utterly diſcarded all natural goodneſs of heart, they had never been repreſented as the objects of deriſion in this hiſtory, in which we will now proceed.

This matter, then, which put an end to the debate mentioned in the laſt chapter, was no other than a quarrel between Maſter Blifil and Tom Jones, the conſequence of which had been a bloody noſe to the former; for though Maſter Blifil, notwithſtanding he was the younger, was in ſize above the other's match, yet Tom was much his ſuperior at the noble art of boxing.

Tom, however, cautiouſly avoided all engagements with that youth; for beſides that Tommy Jones was an inoffenſive lad amidſt all his roguery, and really loved Blifil, Mr. Thwackum being always the ſecond of the latter, would have been ſufficient to deter him.

But well ſays a certain Author, no man is wiſe at all hours; it is therefore no wonder that a boy is not ſo. A difference ariſing at play between the two lads, Maſter Blifil called Tom a beggarly baſtard. Upon which

which the latter, who was ſomewhat paſſionate in his diſpoſition, immediately cauſed that phænomenon in the face of the former, which we have above remembered.

Maſter Bliſil now, with his blood running from his noſe, and the tears galloping after from his eyes, appeared before his uncle, and the tremendous Thwackum. In which court an indictment of aſſault, battery, and wounding, was inſtantly preferred againſt Tom; who in his excuſe only pleaded the provocation, which was indeed all the matter that Maſter Bliſil had omitted.

It is indeed poſſible, that this circumſtance might have eſcaped his memory; for, in his reply, he poſitively inſiſted, that he had made uſe of no ſuch appellation; adding, 'Heaven forbid ſuch naughty words 'ſhould ever come out of his mouth.'

Tom, though againſt all form of law, rejoined in affirmance of the words. Upon which Maſter Bliſil ſaid, 'It is no wonder. Thoſe who will tell one fib, 'will hardly ſtick at another. If I had told my maſter 'ſuch a wicked fib as you have done, I ſhould be 'aſhamed to ſhew my face.'

'What fib, child?' cries Thwackum pretty eagerly.

'Why, he told you that nobody was with him a 'ſhooting when he killed the partridge; but he 'knows, (here he burſt into a flood of tears) yes, he 'knows; for he confeſſed it to me, that Black George 'the game-keeper was there. Nay, he ſaid,—yes, you 'did,—deny it if you can, that you would not have 'confeſt the truth, though maſter had cut you to 'pieces.'

At this the fire flaſhed from Thwackum's eyes, and he cried out in triumph: 'Oh! oh! this is your 'miſtaken notion of honour! This is the boy who 'was not to be whipped again!' But Mr. Allworthy, 'with a more gentle aſpect, turned towards the lad, 'and ſaid, Is this true, child? How came you to 'perſiſt ſo obſtinately in a falſhood?'

Tom ſaid, 'He ſcorned a lie as much as any one; 'but he thought his honour engaged him to act as he 'did; for he had promiſed the poor fellow to conceal 'him: which,' he ſaid, 'he thought himſelf farther

'obliged

'obliged to, as the game-keeper had begged him not 'to go into the gentleman's manor, and had at laſt 'gone himſelf in compliance with his perſuaſions.' He ſaid, 'this was the whole truth of the matter, and 'he would take his oath of it;' and concluded with very paſſionately begging Mr. Allworthy, 'to have 'compaſſion on the poor fellow's family, eſpecially as 'he himſelf only had been guilty, and the other had 'been very difficultly prevailed on to do what he did. 'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid he, 'it could hardly be called a 'lie that I told; for the poor fellow was intirely in-'nocent of the whole matter. I ſhould have gone 'alone after the birds; nay, I did go at firſt, and he 'only followed me to prevent more miſchief. Do, 'pray Sir, let me be puniſhed; take my little horſe 'away again; but pray, Sir, forgive poor George.'

Mr. Allworthy heſitated a few moments, and then diſmiſſed the boys, adviſing them to live more friendly and peaceably together.

CHAP. V.

The opinions of the divine and the philoſopher concerning the two boys; with ſome reaſons for their opinions, and other matters.

IT is probable, that by diſcloſing this ſecret, which had been communicated in the utmoſt confidence to him, young Bliſil preſerved his companion from a good laſhing: for the offence of the bloody noſe would have been of itſelf ſufficient cauſe for Thwackum to have proceeded to correction: but now this was totally abſorbed, in the conſideration of the other matter; and with regard to this, Mr. Allworthy declared privately, he thought the boy deſerved reward rather than puniſhment; ſo that Thwackum's hand was withheld by a general pardon.

Thwackum, whoſe meditations were full of birch, exclaimed againſt this weak, and, as he ſaid he would venture to call it, wicked lenity. To remit the puniſhment of ſuch crimes was, he ſaid, to encourage them. He enlarged much on the correction of children, and

quoted many texts from Solomon, and others; which being to be found in ſo many other books, ſhall not be found here. He then applied himſelf to the vice of lying, on which head he was altogether as learned as he had been on the other.

Square ſaid, he had been endeavouring to reconcile the behaviour of Tom with his idea of perfect virtue; but could not. He owned there was ſomething which at firſt ſight appeared like fortitude in the action; but as fortitude was a virtue, and falſhood a vice, they could by no means agree to unite together. He added, that as this was in ſome meaſure to confound virtue and vice, it might be worth Mr. Thwackum's conſideration, whether a large caſtigation might not be laid on, upon that account.

As both theſe learned men concurred in cenſuring Jones, ſo were they no leſs unanimous in applauding Maſter Blifil. To bring truth to light, was by the parſon aſſerted to be the duty of every religious man; and by the philoſopher this was declared to be highly conformable with the rule of right, and the eternal and unalterable fitneſs of things.

All this, however, weighed very little with Mr. Allworthy. He could not be prevailed on to ſign the warrant for the execution of Jones. There was ſomething within his own breaſt, with which the invincible fidelity which that youth had preſerved, correſponded much better than it had done with the religion of Thwackum, or with the virtue of Square. He therefore ſtrictly ordered the former of theſe gentlemen to abſtain from laying violent hands on Tom for what had paſt. The pedagogue was obliged to obey theſe orders; but not without great reluctance, and frequent mutterings, that the boy would be certainly ſpoiled.

Towards the game-keeper the good man behaved with more ſeverity. He preſently ſummoned that poor fellow before him, and after many bitter remonſtrances, paid him his wages, and diſmiſt him from his ſervice; for Mr. Allworthy rightly obſerved, that there was a great difference between being guilty of a falſehood to excuſe yourſelf, and to excuſe another. He likewiſe urged, as the principal motive to his inflexible ſeverity againſt

againſt this man, that he had baſely ſuffered Tom Jones to undergo ſo heavy a puniſhment for his ſake, whereas he ought to have prevented it by making the diſcovery himſelf.

When this ſtory became public, many people differed from Square and Thwackum, in judging the conduct of the two lads on the occaſion. Maſter Blifil was generally called a ſneaking raſcal, a poor-ſpirited wretch, with other epithets of the like kind; whilſt Tom was honoured with the appellations of a brave lad, a jolly dog, and an honeſt fellow. Indeed his behaviour to black George much ingratiated him with all the ſervants; for though that fellow was before univerſally diſliked, yet he was no ſooner turned away than he was univerſally pitied; and the friendſhip and gallantry of Tom Jones was celebrated by them all with the higheſt applauſe; and they condemned Maſter Blifil, as openly as they durſt, without incurring the danger of offending his mother. For all this, however, poor Tom ſmarted in the fleſh; for though Thwackum had been inhibited to exerciſe his arm on the foregoing account, yet, as the proverb ſays, It is eaſy to find a ſtick, &c. So was it eaſy to find a rod; and, indeed, the not being able to find one was the only thing which could have kept Thwackum any long time from chaſtiſing poor Jones.

Had the bare delight in the ſport been the only inducement to the pedagogue, it is probable, Maſter Blifil would likewiſe have had his ſhare; but though Mr. Allworthy had given him frequent orders to make no difference between the lads, yet was Thwackum altogether as kind and gentle to this youth, as he was harſh, nay even barbarous, to the other. To ſay the truth, Blifil had greatly gained his maſter's affections; partly by the profound reſpect he always ſhewed his perſon, but much more by the decent reverence with which he received his doctrine; for he had got by heart, and frequently repeated his phraſes, and maintained all his maſter's religious principles with a zeal which was ſurprizing in one ſo young, and which greatly endeared him to the worthy preceptor.

48228

Tom Jones, on the other hand, was not only deficient in outward tokens of reſpect, often forgetting to pull off his hat, or to bow at his maſter's approach; but was altogether as unmindful both of his maſter's precepts and example. He was indeed a thoughtleſs giddy youth, with little ſobriety in his manners, and leſs in his countenance; and would often very impudently and indecently laugh at his companion for his ſerious behaviour.

Mr. Square had the ſame reaſon for his preference of the former lad; for Tom Jones ſhewed no more regard to the learned diſcourſes which this gentleman would ſometimes throw away upon him, than to thoſe of Thwackum. He once ventured to make a jeſt of the rule of right; and at another time ſaid, he believed there was no rule in the world capable of making ſuch a man as his father (for ſo Mr. Allworthy ſuffered himſelf to be called).

Maſter Blifil, on the contrary, had addreſs enough at ſixteen to recommend himſelf at one and the ſame time to both theſe oppoſites. With one he was all religion, with the other he was all virtue. And when both were preſent, he was profoundly ſilent, which both interpreted in his favour and in their own.

Nor was Blifil contented with flattering both theſe gentlemen to their faces; he took frequent occaſions of praiſing them behind their backs to Allworthy; before whom, when they two were alone, and his uncle commended any religious or virtuous ſentiment (for many ſuch came conſtantly from him) he ſeldom failed to aſcribe it to the good inſtructions he had received from either Thwackum or Square; for he knew his uncle repeated all ſuch compliments to the perſons for whoſe uſe they were meant; and he found by experience the great impreſſions which they made on the philoſopher, as well as on the divine: for, to ſay the truth, there is no kind of flattery ſo irreſiſtible as this, at ſecond hand.

The young gentleman, moreover, ſoon perceived how extremely grateful all thoſe panegyrics on his inſtructors were to Mr. Allworthy himſelf, as they ſo loudly reſounded the praiſe of that ſingular plan of edu-

education which he had laid down: for this worthy man having obſerved the imperfect inſtitution of our public ſchools, and the many vices which boys were there liable to learn, had reſolved to educate his nephew, as well as the other lad, whom he had in a manner adopted, in his own houſe; where he thought their morals would eſcape all that danger of being corrupted, to which they would be unavoidably expoſed in any public ſchool or univerſity.

Having therefore determined to commit theſe boys to the tuition of a private tutor, Mr. Thwackum was recommended to him for that office, by a very particular friend, of whoſe underſtanding Mr. Allworthy had a great opinion, and in whoſe integrity he placed much confidence. This Thwackum was fellow of a college, where he almoſt entirely reſided; and had a great reputation for learning, religion, and ſobriety of manners. And theſe were doubtleſs the qualifications by which Mr. Allworthy's friend had been induced to recommend him; though indeed this friend had ſome obligations to Thwackum's family, who were the moſt conſiderable perſons in a borough which that gentleman repreſented in parliament.

Thwackum, on his firſt arrival, was extremely agreeable to Allworthy; and indeed he perfectly anſwered the character which had been given of him. Upon longer acquaintance, however, and more intimate converſation, this worthy man ſaw infirmities in the tutor, which he could have wiſhed him to have been without; though as thoſe ſeemed greatly over-balanced by his good qualities, they did not incline Mr. Allworthy to part with him; nor would they indeed have juſtified ſuch a proceeding: for the reader is greatly miſtaken, if he conceives that Thwackum appeared to Mr. Allworthy in the ſame light as he doth to him in this hiſtory; and he is as much deceived, if he imagines, that the moſt intimate acquaintance which he himſelf could have had with that divine, would have informed him of thoſe things which we, from our inſpiration, are enabled to open and diſcover. Of readers who from ſuch conceits as theſe condemn the wiſdom or penetration of Mr. Allworthy, I ſhall not ſcruple to ſay

ſay, that they make a very bad and ungrateful uſe of that knowledge which we have communicated to them.

Theſe apparent errors in the doctrine of Thwackum, ſerved greatly to palliate the contrary errors in that of Square, which our good man no leſs ſaw and condemned. He thought indeed that the different exuberancies of theſe gentlemen, would correct their different imperfections; and that from both, eſpecially with his aſſiſtance, the two lads would derive ſufficient precepts of true religion and virtue. If the event happened contrary to his expectations, this poſſibly proceeded from ſome fault in the plan itſelf; which the reader hath my leave to diſcover, if he can: for we do not pretend to introduce any infallible characters into this hiſtory; where we hope nothing will be found which hath never yet been ſeen in human nature.

To return therefore; the reader will not, I think, wonder that the different behaviour of the two lads above commemorated, produced the different effects, of which he hath already ſeen ſome inſtances; and beſides this, there was another reaſon for the conduct of the philoſopher and the pedagogue; but this being matter of great importance, we ſhall reveal it in the next chapter.

CHAP. VI.

Containing a better reaſon ſtill for the before-mentioned opinions.

IT is to be known then, that thoſe two learned perſonages, who have lately made a conſiderable figure on the theatre of this hiſtory, had from their firſt arrival at Mr. Allworthy's houſe, taken ſo great an affection, the one to his virtue, the other to his religion, that they had meditated the cloſeſt alliance with him.

For this purpoſe they had caſt their eyes on that fair widow, whom, though we have not for ſome time made any mention of her, the reader, we truſt, hath not forgot. Mrs. Bliſil was indeed the object to which they both aſpired.

It

It may ſeem remarkable, that of four perſons whom we have commemorated at Mr. Allworthy's houſe, three of them ſhould fix their inclinations on a lady who was never greatly celebrated for her beauty, and who was, moreover, now a little deſcended into the vale of years; but in reality boſom friends, and intimate acquaintance, have a kind of natural propenſity to particular females at the houſe of a friend, *viz.* to his grand-mother, mother, ſiſter, daughter, aunt, niece, or couſin, when they are rich; and to his wife, ſiſter, daughter, niece, couſin, miſtreſs, or ſervant-maid, if they ſhould be handſome.

We would not, however, have our reader imagine, that perſons of ſuch characters as were ſupported by Thwackum and Square, would undertake a matter of this kind, which hath been a little cenſured by ſome rigid moraliſts, before they had thoroughly examined it, and conſidered whether it was, (as Shakeſpear phraſes it) 'Stuff o'th' conſcience' or no. Thwackum was encouraged to the undertaking by reflecting, that to covet your neighbour's ſiſter is no where forbidden; and he knew it was a rule in the conſtruction of all laws, that '*Expreſſum facit ceſſare tacitume.*' The ſenſe of which is, 'When a law-giver ſets down 'plainly his whole meaning, we are prevented from 'making him mean what we pleaſe ourſelves.' As ſome inſtances of women, therefore, are mentioned in the divine law, which forbids us to covet our neighbour's goods, and that of a ſiſter omitted, he concluded it to be lawful. And as to Square, who was in his perſon what is called a jolly fellow, or a widow's man, he eaſily reconciled his choice to the eternal fitneſs of things.

Now, as both theſe gentlemen were induſtrious in taking every opportunity of recommending themſelves to the widow, they apprehended one certain method was, by giving her ſon the conſtant preference to the other lad; and, as they conceived the kindneſs and affection which Mr. Allworthy ſhewed the latter, muſt be highly diſagreeable to her, they doubted not but the laying hold on all occaſions to degrade and vilify him, would be highly pleaſing to her; who, as ſhe

hated the boy, muſt love all thoſe who did him any hurt. In this Thwackum had the advantage; for while Square could only ſcarify the poor lads reputation, he could flea his ſkin; and, indeed, he conſidered every laſh he gave him as a compliment paid to his miſtreſs; ſo that he could, with the utmoſt propriety, repeat this old flogging line, '*Caſtigo te non* '*quod odio habeam, ſed quod* AMEM. I chaſtiſe thee 'not out of hatred, but out of love.' And this, indeed, he often had in his mouth, or rather, according to the old phraſe, never more properly applied, at his fingers ends.

For this reaſon principally, the two gentlemen concurred, as we have ſeen above, in their opinion concerning the two lads; this being, indeed, almoſt the only inſtance of their concurring in any point: for, beſide the difference of their principles, they had both long ago ſtrongly ſuſpected each other's deſign, and hated one another with no little degree of inveteracy.

This mutual animoſity was a good deal increaſed by their alternate ſucceſſes; for Mrs. Blifil knew what they would be at long before they imagined it; or, indeed, intended ſhe ſhould: for they proceeded with great caution, leſt ſhe ſhould be offended, and acquaint Mr. Allworthy. But they had no reaſon for any ſuch fear; ſhe was well enough pleaſed with a paſſion, of which ſhe intended none ſhould have any fruits but herſelf. And the only fruit ſhe deſigned for herſelf, were flattery and courtſhip; for which purpoſe, ſhe ſoothed them by turns, and a long time equally. She was, indeed, rather inclined to favour the parſon's principles; but Square's perſon was more agreeable to her eye, for he was a comely man; whereas the pedagogue did in countenance very nearly reſemble that gentleman, who, in the Harlot's Progreſs, is ſeen correcting the ladies in Bridewell.

Whether Mrs. Blifil had been ſurfeited with the ſweets of marriage, or diſguſted by its bitters, or from what other cauſe it proceeded, I will not determine; but ſhe could never be brought to liſten to any ſecond propoſals. However, ſhe at laſt converſed with Square with ſuch a degree of intimacy, that malicious tongues

began

began to whiſper things of her, to which, as well for the ſake of the lady, as that they were highly diſagreeable to the rule of right, and the fitneſs of things, we will give no credit, and therefore ſhall not blot our paper with them. The pedagogue, 'tis certain, whipt on, without getting a ſtep nearer to his journey's end.

Indeed he had committed a great error, and that Square diſcovered much ſooner than himſelf. Mrs. Blifil (as, perhaps, the reader may have formerly gueſſed) was not over and above pleaſed with the behaviour of her huſband; nay, to be honeſt, ſhe abſolutely hated him, till his death, at laſt, a little reconciled him to her affections. It will not be therefore greatly wondered at, if ſhe had not the moſt violent regard to the offspring ſhe had by him. And, in fact, ſhe had ſo little of this regard that in his infancy ſhe ſeldom ſaw her ſon, or took any notice of him; and hence ſhe acquieſced, after a little reluctance, in all the favours which Mr. Allworthy ſhowered on the foundling; whom the good man called his own boy, and in all things put on an entire equality with Maſter Blifil. This acquieſcence in Mrs. Blifil was conſidered by the neighbours, and by the family, as a mark of her condeſcenſion to her brother's humour, and ſhe was imagined by all others, as well as Thwackum and Square, to hate the foundling in her heart; nay, the more civility ſhe ſhewed him, the more they conceived ſhe deteſted him, and the ſurer ſchemes ſhe was laying for his ruin: for as they thought it her intereſt to hate him, it was very difficult for her to perſuade them ſhe did not.

Thwackum was the more confirmed in his opinion, as ſhe had more than once ſlily cauſed him to whip Tom Jones, when Mr. Allworthy, who was an enemy to this exerciſe, was abroad; whereas ſhe had never given any ſuch orders concerning young Blifil. And this had likewiſe impoſed upon Square. In reality, though ſhe certainly hated her own ſon; of which, however monſtrous it appears, I am aſſured ſhe is not a ſingular inſtance, ſhe appeared, notwithſtanding all her outward compliance, to be in her heart ſufficiently diſpleaſed with all the favour ſhewn by Mr. Allworthy

to the foundling. She frequently complained of this behind her brother's back, and very ſharply cenſured him for it, both to Thwackum and Square; nay, ſhe would throw it in the teeth of Allworthy himſelf, when a little quarrel, or miff, as it is vulgarly called, aroſe between them.

However, when Tom grew up, and gave tokens of that gallantry of temper which greatly recommends men to women, this diſinclination, which ſhe had diſcovered to him when a child, by degrees abated, and at laſt ſhe ſo evidently demonſtrated her affection to him to be much ſtronger than what ſhe bore her own ſon, that it was impoſſible to miſtake her any longer. She was deſirous of often ſeeing him, and diſcovered ſuch ſatisfaction and delight in his company, that before he was eighteen years old, he was become a rival of both Square and Thwackum; and what is worſe, the whole country began to talk as loudly of her inclination to Tom, as they had before done of that which ſhe had ſhewn to Square; on which account the philoſopher conceived the moſt implacable hatred for our poor hero.

CHAP. VII.

In which the author himſelf makes his appearance on the ſtage.

THOUGH Mr. Allworthy was not of himſelf haſty to ſee things in a diſadvantageous light, and was a ſtranger to the public voice, which ſeldom reaches to a brother or a huſband, though it rings in the ears of all the neighbourhood; yet was this affection of Mrs. Blifil to Tom, and the preference which ſhe too viſibly gave him to her own ſon, of the utmoſt diſadvantage to that youth.

For ſuch was the compaſſion which inhabited Mr. Allworthy's mind, that nothing but the ſteel of juſtice could ever ſubdue it. To be unfortunate in any reſpect was ſufficient, if there was no demerit to counterpoiſe it, to turn the ſcale of that good man's pity, and to engage his friendſhip, and his benefaction.

When

When therefore he plainly ſaw Maſter Blifil was abſolutely deteſted (for that he was) by his own mother, he began, on that account only, to look with an eye of compaſſion upon him; and what the effects of compaſſion are in good and benevolent minds, I need not here explain to moſt of my readers.

Henceforward, he ſaw every appearance of virtue in the youth through the magnifying end, and viewed all his faults with the glaſs inverted, ſo that they became ſcarce perceptible. And this perhaps the amiable temper of pity may make commendable; but the next ſtep the weakneſs of human nature alone muſt excuſe: for he no ſooner perceived that preference which Mrs. Blifil gave to Tom, than that poor youth (however innocent) began to ſink in his affections as he roſe in hers. This, it is true, would of itſelf alone never have been able to eradicate Jones from his boſom; but it was greatly injurious to him, and prepared Mr. Allworthy's mind for thoſe impreſſions, which afterwards produced the mighty events that will be contained hereafter in this hiſtory; and to which, it muſt be confeſt, the unfortunate lad, by his own wantonneſs, wildneſs, and want of caution, too much contributed.

In recording ſome inſtances of theſe, we ſhall, if rightly underſtood, afford a very uſeful leſſon to thoſe well-diſpoſed youths, who ſhall hereafter be our readers: for they may here find that goodneſs of heart, and openneſs of temper, though theſe may give them great comfort within, and adminiſter to an honeſt pride in their own minds, will by no means, alas! do their buſineſs in the world. Prudence and circumſpection are neceſſary even to the beſt of men. They are indeed as it were a guard to virtue, without which ſhe can never be ſafe. It is not enough that your deſigns, nay that your actions, are intrinſically good, you muſt take care they ſhall appear ſo. If your inſide be never ſo beautiful, you muſt preſerve a fair outſide alſo. This muſt be conſtantly looked to, or malice and envy will take care to blacken it ſo, that the ſagacity and goodneſs of an Allworthy will not be able to ſee through it, and to diſcern the beau-

ties within. Let this, my young readers, be your conſtant maxim, that no man can be good enough to enable him to neglect the rules of prudence; nor will virtue herſelf look beautiful, unleſs ſhe be bedecked with the outward ornaments of decency and decorum. And this precept, my worthy diſciples, if you read with due attention, you will, I hope, find ſufficiently enforced by examples in the following pages.

I aſk pardon for this ſhort appearance, by way of chorus, on the ſtage. It is in reality for my own ſake, that while I am diſcovering the rocks on which innocence and goodneſs often ſplit, I may not be miſunderſtood to recommend the very means to my worthy readers, by which I intend to ſhew them they will be undone. And this, as I could not prevail on any of my actors to ſpeak, I myſelf was obliged to declare.

CHAP. VIII.

A childiſh incident, in which, however, is ſeen a good-natured diſpoſition in Tom Jones.

THE reader may remember, that Mr. Allworthy gave Tom Jones a little horſe, as a kind of ſmart-money for the puniſhment, which he imagined he had ſuffered innocently.

This horſe Tom kept above half a year, and then rode him to a neighbouring fair and ſold him.

At his return, being queſtioned by Thwackum, what he had done with the money for which the horſe was ſold, he frankly declared he would not tell him.

'Oho!' ſays Thwackum, 'you will not! then I 'will have it out of your br—h;' that being the place to which he always applied for information on every doubtful occaſion.

Tom was now mounted on the back of a footman, and every thing prepared for execution, when Mr. Allworthy entering the room, gave the criminal a reprieve, and took him with him into another apartment; where being alone with Tom, he put the ſame queſtion

queſtion to him which Thwackum had before aſked him.

Tom anſwered, he could in duty refuſe him nothing; but as for that tyrannical raſcal, he would never make him any other anſwer than with a cudgel, with which he hoped ſoon to be able to pay him for all his barbarities.

Mr. Allworthy very ſeverely reprimanded the lad, for his indecent and diſreſpectful expreſſions concerning his maſter; but much more for his avowing an intention of revenge. He threatened him with the entire loſs of his favour, if he ever heard ſuch another word from his mouth; for he ſaid, he would never ſupport or befriend a reprobate. By theſe and the like declarations, he extorted ſome compunction from Tom, in which that youth was not over ſincere: for he really meditated ſome return for all the ſmarting favours he had received at the hands of the pedagogue. He was, however, brought by Mr. Allworthy to expreſs a concern for his reſentment againſt Thwackum; and then the good man, after ſome wholeſome admonition, permitted him to proceed, which he did, as follows:

'Indeed, my dear Sir, I love and honour you more 'than all the world: I know the great obligations I 'have to you, and ſhould deteſt myſelf, if I thought 'my heart was capable of ingratitude. Could the 'little horſe you gave me ſpeak, I am ſure he could 'tell you how fond I was of your preſent: for I had 'more pleaſure in feeding him, than in riding him. 'Indeed, Sir, it went to my heart to part with him; 'nor would I have ſold him upon any other account 'in the world than what I did. You yourſelf, Sir, 'I am convinced, in my caſe, would have done the 'ſame: for none ever ſo ſenſibly felt the misfortunes 'of others. What would you feel, dear Sir, if you 'thought yourſelf the occaſion of them!—Indeed, 'Sir, there never was any miſery like theirs.'—— 'Like whoſe, child?' ſays Allworthy: 'What do 'you mean?' 'Oh, Sir,' anſwered Tom, 'your 'poor game-keeper, with all his large family, ever 'ſince your diſcarding him, have been periſhing with

'all

crime, as it appeared to him; inveighing againſt Tom in the moſt bitter terms, and likening him to the buyers and ſellers who were driven out of the temple.

Square ſaw this matter in a very different light. He ſaid, he could not perceive any higher crime in ſelling one book, than in ſelling another. That to ſell bibles was ſtrictly lawful by all the laws both divine and human, and conſequently there was no unfitneſs in it. He told Thwackum that his great concern on this occaſion brought to his mind the ſtory of a very devout woman, who, out of pure regard to religion, ſtole Tillotſon's ſermons from a lady of her acquaintance.

This ſtory cauſed a vaſt quantity of blood to ruſh into the parſon's face, which of itſelf was none of the paleſt; and he was going to reply with great warmth and anger, had not Mrs. Blifil, who was preſent at this debate, interpoſed. That lady declared herſelf abſolutely of Mr. Square's ſide. She argued, indeed, very learnedly in ſupport of his opinion; and concluded with ſaying, if Tom had been guilty of any fault, ſhe muſt confeſs her own ſon appeared to be equally culpable; for that ſhe could ſee no difference between the buyer and the ſeller; both of whom were alike to be driven out of the temple.

Mrs. Blifil having declared her opinion put an end to the debate. Square's triumph would almoſt have ſtopt his words, had he needed them; and Thwackum, who, for reaſons before-mentioned, durſt not venture at diſobliging the lady, was almoſt choaked with indignation. As to Mr. Allworthy, he ſaid, ſince the boy had been already puniſhed, he would not deliver his ſentiments on the occaſion; and whether he was, or was not angry with the lad, I muſt leave to the reader's own conjecture.

Soon after this, an action was brought againſt the game-keeper by 'Squire Weſtern (the gentleman in whoſe manor the partridge was killed) for depredations of the like kind. This was a moſt unfortunate circumſtance for the fellow, as it not only of itſelf threatened his ruin, but actually prevented Mr. Allworthy

worthy from reſtoring him to his favour: for as that gentleman was walking out one evening with Maſter Blifil and young Jones, the latter ſlily drew him to the habitation of Black George; where the family of that poor wretch, namely, his wife and children, were found in all the miſery with which cold, hunger, and nakedneſs, can affect human creatures: for as to the money they had received from Jones, former debts had conſumed almoſt the whole.

Such a ſcene as this could not fail of affecting the heart of Mr. Allworthy. He immediately gave the mother a couple of guineas, with which he bid her cloath her children. The poor woman burſt into tears at this goodneſs, and while ſhe was thanking him, could not refrain from expreſſing her gratitude to Tom; who had, ſhe ſaid, long preſerved both her and hers from ſtarving. 'We have not,' ſays ſhe, 'had a morſel to eat, nor have theſe poor children 'had a rag to put on, but what his goodneſs had be-'ſtowed on us.' For indeed, beſides the horſe and the bible, Tom had ſacrificed a night-gown and other things to the uſe of this diſtreſſed family.

On their return home Tom made uſe of all his eloquence to diſplay the wretchedneſs of theſe people, and the penitence of Black George himſelf; and in this he ſucceeded ſo well, that Mr. Allworthy ſaid he thought the man had ſuffered enough for what was paſt; that he would forgive him, and think of ſome means of providing for him and his family.

Jones was ſo delighted with this news, that though it was dark when they returned home, he could not help going back a mile, in a ſhower of rain, to acquaint the poor woman with the glad tidings; but, like other haſty divulgers of news, he only brought on himſelf the trouble of contracting it: for the ill-fortune of Black George made uſe of the very opportunity of his friend's abſence to overturn all again.

CHAP.

CHAP X.

In which Maſter Blifil and Jones appear in different lights.

MASTER Blifil fell very ſhort of his companion in the amiable quality of mercy; but he as greatly exceeded him in one of a much higher kind, namely, in juſtice: in which he followed both the precepts and example of Thwackum and Square; for though they would both make frequent uſe of the word mercy, yet it was plain, that in reality Square held it to be inconſiſtent with the rule of right; and Thwackum was for doing juſtice, and leaving mercy to heaven. The two gentlemen did indeed ſomewhat differ in opinion concerning the objects of this ſublime virtue; by which Thwackum would probably have deſtroyed one half of mankind, and Square the other half.

Maſter Blifil then, though he had kept ſilence in the preſence of Jones, yet when he had better conſidered the matter, could by no means endure the thoughts of ſuffering his uncle to confer favours on the undeſerving. He therefore reſolved immediately to acquaint him with the fact which we have above ſlightly hinted to the readers. The truth of which was as follows:

The game-keeper about a year after he was diſmiſſed from Mr. Allworthy's ſervice, and before Tom's ſelling the horſe, being in want of bread, either to fill his own mouth, or thoſe of his family, as he paſſed through a field belonging to Mr. Weſtern, eſpied a hare ſitting in her form. This hare he had baſely and barbarouſly knocked on the head, againſt the laws of the land, and no leſs againſt the laws of ſportſmen.

The higler to whom the hare was ſold, being unfortunately taken many months after with a quantity of game upon him, was obliged to make his peace with the 'ſquire, by becoming evidence againſt ſome poacher. And now Black George was pitched upon by

by him, as being a perſon already obnoxious to Mr. Weſtern, and one of no good fame in the country. He was, beſides, the beſt ſacrifice the higler could make, as he had ſupplied him with no game ſince; and by this means the witneſs had an opportunity of ſcreening his better cuſtomers: for the 'ſquire, being charmed with the power of puniſhing Black George, whom a ſingle tranſgreſſion was ſufficient to ruin, made no further enquiry.

Had this fact been truly laid before Mr. Allworthy, it might probably have done the game-keeper very little miſchief. But there is no zeal blinder than that which is inſpired with the love of juſtice againſt offenders. Maſter Blifil had forgot the diſtance of the time. He varied likewiſe in the manner of the fact: and, by the haſty addition of the ſingle letter S, he conſiderably altered the ſtory: for he ſaid that George had wired hares. Theſe alterations might probably have been ſet right, had not Maſter Blifil unluckily inſiſted on a promiſe of ſecrecy from Mr. Allworthy, before he revealed the matter to him; but, by that means, the poor game-keeper was condemned, without having any opportunity to defend himſelf; for as the fact of killing the hare, and of the action brought, were certainly true, Mr. Allworthy had no doubt concerning the reſt.

Short-lived then was the joy of theſe poor people; for Mr. Allworthy the next morning declared he had freſh reaſon, without aſſigning it, for his anger, and ſtrictly forbad Tom to mention George any more; though as for his family, he ſaid, he would endeavour to keep them from ſtarving; but as to the fellow himſelf, he would leave him to the laws, which nothing could keep him from breaking.

Tom could by no means divine what had incenſed Mr. Allworthy: for of Maſter Blifil he had not the leaſt ſuſpicion. However, as his friendſhip was to be tired out by no diſappointments, he now determined to try another method of preſerving the poor game-keeper from ruin.

Jones was lately grown very intimate with Mr. Weſtern. He had ſo greatly recommended himſelf to that

that gentleman, by leaping over five-barred gates, and by other acts of ſportmanſhip, that the 'ſquire had declared Tom would certainly make a great man, if he had but ſufficient encouragement. He often wiſhed he had himſelf a ſon with ſuch parts; and one day very ſolemnly aſſerted at a drinking bout, that Tom ſhould hunt a pack of hounds for a thouſand pounds of his money, with any huntſman in the whole country.

By ſuch kind of talents he had ſo ingratiated himſelf with the 'ſquire, that he was a moſt welcome gueſt at his table, and a favourite companion in his ſport: every thing which the 'ſquire held moſt dear, to wit, his guns, dogs, and horſes, were now as much at the command of Jones, as if they had been his own. He reſolved therefore to make uſe of this favour on behalf of his friend Black George, whom he hoped to introduce into Mr. Weſtern's family, in the ſame capacity in which he had before ſerved Mr. Allworthy.

The reader, if he conſiders that this fellow was already obnoxious to Mr. Weſtern, and if he conſiders farther the weighty buſineſs by which that gentleman's diſpleaſure had been incurred, will perhaps condemn this as a fooliſh and deſperate undertaking; but if he ſhould totally condemn young Jones on that account, he will greatly applaud him for ſtrengthening himſelf with all imaginable intereſt on ſo arduous an occaſion.

For this purpoſe then Tom applied to Mr. Weſtern's daughter, a young lady of about ſeventeen years of age, whom her father, next after thoſe neceſſary implements of ſport juſt before-mentioned, loved and eſteemed above all the world. Now, as ſhe had ſome influence on the 'ſquire, ſo Tom had ſome little influence on her. But this being the intended heroine of this work, a lady with whom we ourſelves are greatly in love, and with whom many of our readers will probably be in love too before we part, it is by no means proper ſhe ſhould make her appearance in the end of a book.

THE

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK IV.

Containing the time of a year.

CHAP. I.

Containing four pages of paper.

AS truth diſtinguiſhes our writings from thoſe idle romances which are filled with monſters, the productions, not of nature, but of diſtempered brains; and which have been therefore recommended by an eminent critic to the ſole uſe of the paſtry-cook: ſo, on the other hand, we would avoid any reſemblance to that kind of hiſtory which a celebrated poet ſeems to think is no leſs calculated for the emolument of the brewer, as the reading it ſhould be always attended with a tankard of good ale.

While—hiſtory with her comrade ale,
Sooths the ſad ſeries of her ſerious tale.

For as this is the liquor of modern hiſtorians, nay, perhaps their muſe, if we may believe the opinion of Butler, who attributes inſpiration to ale, it ought likewiſe to be the potation of their readers, ſince every book ought to be read with the ſame ſpirit, and in the ſame manner, as it is writ. Thus the famous Author of Hurlothrumbo, told a learned biſhop, that the

the reaſon his lordſhip could not taſte the excellence of his piece, was, that he did not read it with a fiddle in his hand; which inſtrument he himſelf had always had in his own, when he compoſed it.

That our work, therefore, might be in no danger of being likened to the labours of theſe hiſtorians, we have taken every occaſion of interſperſing through the whole ſundry ſimilies, deſcriptions, and other kind of poetical embelliſhments. Theſe are, indeed, deſigned to ſupply the place of the ſaid ale, and to refreſh the mind, whenever thoſe ſlumbers which in a long work are apt to invade the reader as well as the writer, ſhall begin to creep upon him. Without interruptions of this kind, the beſt narrative of plain matter of fact muſt over-power every reader; for nothing but the everlaſting watchfulneſs, which Homer has aſcribed only to Jove himſelf, can be proof againſt a newſpaper of many volumes.

We ſhall leave to the reader to determine with what judgment we have choſen the ſeveral occaſions for inſerting thoſe ornamental parts of our work. Surely it will be allowed that none could be more proper than the preſent; where we are about to introduce a conſiderable character on the ſcene; no leſs, indeed, than the heroine of this heroic, hiſtorical, proſaic poem. Here, therefore, we have thought proper to prepare the mind of the reader for her reception, by filling it with every pleaſing image, which we can draw from the face of nature. And for this method we plead many precedents. Firſt, this is an art well known to, and much practiſed by, our tragick poets; who ſeldom fail to prepare their audience for the reception of their principal characters.

Thus the hero is always introduced with a flouriſh of drums and trumpets, in order to rouſe a martial ſpirit in the audience, and to accommodate their ears to bombaſt and fuſtian, which Mr. Lock's blind man would not have groſsly erred in likening to the ſound of a trumpet. Again, when lovers are coming forth, ſoft muſic often conducts them on the ſtage, either to ſooth the audience with the ſoftneſs of the tender paſſion, or to lull and prepare them for that gentle ſlumber

ber in which they will moſt probably be compoſed by the enſuing ſcene.

And not only the poets, but the maſters of theſe poets, the managers of play-houſes, ſeem to be in this ſecret; for, beſides the aforeſaid kettle drums, &c. which denote the hero's approach, he is generally uſhered on the ſtage by a large troop of half a dozen ſcene-ſhifters; and how neceſſary theſe are imagined to his appearance, may be concluded from the following theatrical ſtory.

King Pyrrhus was at dinner at an alehouſe bordering on the theatre, when he was ſummoned to go on the ſtage. The hero, being unwilling to quit his ſhoulder of mutton, and as unwilling to draw on himſelf the indignation of Mr. Wilks, (his brother manager) for making the audience wait, had bribed theſe his harbingers to be out of the way. While Mr. Wilks, therefore, was thundering out, 'Where are 'the carpenters to walk on before King Pyrrhus,' that monarch very quietly eat his mutton, and the audience, however impatient, were obliged to entertain themſelves with muſic in his abſence.

To be plain, I much queſtion whether the politician, who hath generally a good noſe, had not ſcented out ſomewhat of the utility of this practice. I am convinced that awful magiſtrate my lord-mayor contracts a good deal of that reverence which attends him thro' the year, by the ſeveral pageants which precede his pomp. Nay, I muſt confeſs, that even I myſelf, who am not remarkably liable to be captivated with ſhow, have yielded not a little to the impreſſions of much preceding ſtate. When I have ſeen a man ſtrutting in a proceſſion, after others whoſe buſineſs was only to walk before him, I have conceived a higher notion of his dignity, than I have felt on ſeeing him in a common ſituation. But there is one inſtance, which comes exactly up to my purpoſe. This is the cuſtom of ſending on a baſket-woman, who is to precede the pomp at a coronation, and to ſtrew the ſtage with flowers, before the great perſonages begin their proceſſion. The antients would certainly have invoked the goddeſs Flora for this purpoſe, and it would have

beer

been no difficulty for their prieſts or politicians to have perſuaded the people of the real preſence of the deity, though a plain mortal had perſonated her, and performed her office. But we have no ſuch deſign of impoſing on our reader; and therefore thoſe who object to the heathen theology, may, if they pleaſe, change our goddeſs into the above-mentioned baſket-woman. Our intention, in ſhort, is to introduce our heroine with the utmoſt ſolemnity in our power, with an elevation of ſtile, and all other circumſtances proper to raiſe the veneration of our reader. Indeed we would, for certain cauſes, adviſe thoſe of our male readers who have any hearts, to read no farther, were we not well aſſured, that how amiable ſoever the picture of our heroine will appear, as it is really a copy from nature, many of our fair country-women will be found worthy to ſatisfy any paſſion, and to anſwer any idea of female perfection, which our pencil will be able to raiſe.

And now, without any further preface, we proceed to our next chapter.

CHAP. II.

A ſhort hint of what we can do in the ſublime, and a deſcription of Miſs Sophia Weſtern.

HUSHED be every ruder breath. May the heathen ruler of the winds confine in iron chains the boiſterous limbs of noiſy Boreas, and the ſharp-pointed noſe of bitter, biting Eurus. Do thou, ſweet Zephyrus, riſing from thy fragrant bed, mount the weſtern ſky, and lead on thoſe delicious gales, the charms of which call forth the lovely Flora from her chamber, perfumed with pearly dews, when on the firſt of June, her birth-day, the blooming maid, in looſe attire, gently trips it over the verdant mead, where every flower riſes to do her homage, 'till the whole field become enamelled, and colours contend with ſweets which ſhall raviſh her moſt.

So charming may ſhe now appear; and you the feather'd choriſters of nature, whoſe ſweeteſt notes not even

even Handel can excell, tune your melodious throats, to celebrate her appearance. From love proceeds your muſic, and to love it returns. Awaken therefore that gentle paſſion in every ſwain: for, lo! adorned with all the charms in which nature can array her; bedecked with beauty, youth, ſprightlineſs, innocence, modeſty, and tenderneſs, breathing ſweetneſs from her roſy lips, and darting brightneſs from her ſparkling eyes, the lovely Sophia comes.

Reader, perhaps thou haſt ſeen the ſtatue of the *Venus de Medicis*. Perhaps too, thou haſt ſeen the gallery of beauties at Hampton-Court. Thou may'ſt remember each bright Churchill of the gallaxy, and all the toaſts of the Kit-cat. Or if their reign was before thy times, at leaſt thou haſt ſeen their daughters, the no leſs dazling beauties of the preſent age; whoſe names, ſhould we here inſert, we apprehend they would fill the whole volume.

Now if thou haſt ſeen all theſe, be not afraid of the rude anſwer which lord Rocheſter once gave to a man, who had ſeen many things. No. If thou haſt ſeen all theſe without knowing what beauty is, thou haſt no eyes; if without feeling its power, thou haſt no heart.

Yet is it poſſible, my friend, that thou mayeſt have ſeen all theſe, without being able to form an exact idea of Sophia: for ſhe did not exactly reſemble any of them. She was moſt like the picture of lady Ranelagh; and I have heard more ſtill to the famous dutcheſs of Mazarine; but moſt of all, ſhe reſembled one whoſe image never can depart from my breaſt, and whom if thou doſt remember, thou haſt then, my friend, an adequate idea of Sophia.

But leſt this ſhould not have been thy fortune, we will endeavour with our utmoſt ſkill, to deſcribe this paragon, though we are ſenſible that our higheſt abilities are very inadequate to the taſk.

Sophia then, the only daughter of Mr. Weſtern, was a middle ſized woman; but rather inclining to tall. Her ſhape was not only exact, but extremely delicate; and the nice proportion of her arms promiſed the trueſt ſymmetry in her limbs. Her hair, which

was black, was ſo luxuriant, that it reached her middle, before ſhe cut it to comply with the modern faſhion; and it was now curled ſo gracefully in her neck, that few could believe it to be her own. If envy could find any part of the face which demanded leſs commendation than the reſt, it might poſſibly think her forehead might have been higher without prejudice to her. Her eye-brows were full, even, and arched beyond the power of art to imitate. Her black eyes had a luſtre in them, which all her ſoftneſs could not extinguiſh. Her noſe was exactly regular, and her mouth, in which were two rows of ivory, exactly anſwered Sir John Suckling's deſcription in thoſe lines:

Her lips were red, and one was thin,
Compar'd to that was next her chin.
Some bee had ſtung it newly.

Her cheeks were of the oval kind; and in her right ſhe had a dimple, which the leaſt ſmile diſcovered. Her chin had certainly its ſhare in forming the beauty of her face; but it was difficult to ſay it was either large or ſmall, though perhaps it was rather of the former kind. Her complexion had rather more of the lilly than of the roſe; but when exerciſe, or modeſty, encreaſed her natural colour, no vermillion could equal it. Then one might indeed cry out with the celebrated Dr. Donne,

——Her pure and eloquent blood
Spoke in her cheeks, and ſo diſtinctly wrought,
That one might almoſt ſay her body thought.

Her neck was long and finely turned: and here, if I was not afraid of offending her delicacy, I might juſtly ſay, the higheſt beauties of the famous *Venus de Medicis* were outdone. Here was whiteneſs which no lillies, ivory, nor alabaſter could match. The fineſt cambric might indeed be ſuppoſed from envy to cover that boſom, which was much whiter than itſelf.—It was indeed,

Nitor ſplendens pario marmore purius.

A gloſs

'A gloſs ſhining beyond the pureſt brightneſs of 'Parian marble.'

Such was the outſide of Sophia; nor was this beautiful frame diſgraced by an inhabitant unworthy of it. Her mind was every way equal to her perſon; nay, the latter borrowed ſome charms from the former: for when ſhe ſmiled, the ſweetneſs of her temper diffuſed that glory over her countenance, which no regularity of features can give. But as there are no perfections of the mind which do not diſcover themſelves, in that perfect intimacy, to which we intend to introduce our reader, with this charming young creature; ſo it is needleſs to mention them here; nay, it is a kind of tacit affront to our reader's underſtanding, and may alſo rob him of that pleaſure which he will receive in forming his own judgment of her character.

It may, however, be proper to ſay, that whatever mental accompliſhments ſhe had derived from nature, they were ſomewhat improved and cultivated by art: for ſhe had been educated under the care of an aunt, who was a lady of great diſcretion, and was thoroughly acquainted with the world, having lived in her youth about the court, whence ſhe had retired ſome years ſince into the country. By her converſation and inſtructions, Sophia was perfectly well bred, though perhaps ſhe wanted a little of that eaſe in her behaviour, which is to be acquired only by habit, and living within what is called the polite circle. But this, to ſay the truth, is often too dearly purchaſed; and though it hath charms ſo inexpreſſible, that the French, perhaps, among other qualities, mean to expreſs this, when they declare they know not what it is; yet its abſence is well compenſated by innocence; nor can good ſenſe, and a natural gentility, ever ſtand in need of it.

CHAP. III.

Wherein the history goes back to commemorate a trifling incident that happened some years since; but which, trifling as it was, had some future consequences.

THE amiable Sophia was now in her eighteenth year, when she is introduced into this history. Her father, as hath been said, was fonder of her than of any other human creature. To her, therefore, Tom Jones applied, in order to engage her interest on the behalf of his friend the game-keeper.

But before we proceed to this business, a short recapitulation of some previous matters may be necessary.

Though the different tempers of Mr. Allworthy, and of Mr. Western, did not admit of a very intimate correspondence, yet they lived upon what is called a decent footing together; by which means the young people of both families had been acquainted from their infancy; and as they were all near of the same age, had been frequent play-mates together.

The gaiety of Tom's temper suited better with Sophia, than the grave and sober disposition of Master Blifil. And the preference which she gave the former of these, would often appear so plainly, that a lad of a more passionate turn than Master Blifil was, might have shewn some displeasure at it.

As he did not, however, outwardly express any such disgust, it would be an ill office in us to pay a visit to the inmost recesses of his mind, as some scandalous people search into the most secret affairs of their friends, and often pry into their closets and cupboards, only to discover their poverty and meanness to the world.

However, as persons who suspect they have given others cause of offence, are apt to conclude they are offended; so Sophia imputed an action of Master Blifil to his anger, which the superior sagacity of Thwackum and Square discerned to have arisen from a much better principle.

Tom

Tom Jones, when very young, had preſented Sophia with a little bird, which he had taken from the neſt, had nurſed up, and taught to ſing.

Of this bird, Sophia, then about thirteen years old, was ſo extremely fond, that her chief buſineſs was to feed and tend it, and her chief pleaſure to play with it. By theſe means little Tommy, for ſo the bird was called, was become ſo tame, that it would feed out of the hand of its miſtreſs, would perch upon her finger, and lie contented in her boſom, where it ſeemed almoſt ſenſible of its own happineſs; though ſhe always kept a ſmall ſtring about its leg, nor would ever truſt it with the liberty of flying away.

One day, when Mr. Allworthy and his whole family dned at Mr. Weſtern's, Maſter Blifil, being in the garden with little Sophia, and obſerving the extreme fondneſs that ſhe ſhewed for her little bird, deſired her to truſt it for a moment in his hands. Sophia preſently complied with the young gentleman's requeſt, and after ſome previous caution, delivered him her bird; of which he was no ſooner in poſſeſſion, than he ſlipt the ſtring from its leg, and toſſed it into the air.

The fooliſh animal no ſooner perceived itſelf at liberty, than forgetting all the favours it had received from Sophia, it flew directly from her, and perched on a bough at ſome diſtance.

Sophia, ſeeing her bird gone, ſcreamed out ſo loud, that Tom Jones, who was at a little diſtance, immediately ran to her aſſiſtance.

He was no ſooner informed of what had happened, than he curſed Blifil for a pitiful, malicious raſcal, and then immediately ſtripping off his coat, he applied himſelf to climbing the tree to which the bird eſcaped.

Tom had almoſt recovered his little name-ſake, when the branch on which it was perched, and that hung over a canal, broke, and the poor lad plumped over head and ears into the water.

Sophia's concern now changed its object. And as ſhe apprehended the boy's life was in danger, ſhe ſcreamed ten times louder than before; and indeed Maſter Blifil himſelf now ſeconded her with all the vociferation in his power.

The company, who were ſitting in a room next the garden, were inſtantly alarmed, and came all forth; but juſt as they reached the canal, Tom, (for the water was luckily pretty ſhallow in that part) arrived ſafely on ſhore.

Thwackum fell violently on poor Tom, who ſtood dropping and ſhivering before him, when Mr. Allworthy deſired him to have patience, and turning to Maſter Blifil, ſaid, pray child, what is the reaſon of all this diſturbance?

Maſter Blifil anſwered, 'Indeed, uncle, I am very 'ſorry for what I have done; I have been unhappily 'the occaſion of it all. I had Miſs Sophia's bird in 'my hand, and thinking the poor creature languiſhed 'for liberty, I own, I could not forbear giving it 'what it deſired: for I always thought there was 'ſomething very cruel in confining any thing. It 'ſeemed to be againſt the law of nature, by which 'every thing hath a right to liberty; nay, it is even 'unchriſtian; for it is not doing what we would be 'done by: but if I had imagined Miſs Sophia would 'have been ſo much concerned at it, I am ſure I would 'never have done it; nay, if I had known what 'would have happened to the bird itſelf: for when 'Maſter Jones, who climbed up the tree after it, fell 'into the water, the bird took a ſecond flight, and 'preſently a naſty hawk carried it away.'

Poor Sophia, who now firſt heard of her little Tommy's fate, (for her concern for Jones had prevented her perceiving it when it happened) ſhed a ſhower of tears. Theſe Mr. Allworthy endeavoured to aſſuage, promiſing her a much finer bird: but ſhe declared ſhe would never have another. Her father chid her for crying ſo for a fooliſh bird; but could not help telling young Blifil, if he was a ſon of his, his backſide ſhould be well flea'd.

Sophia now returned to her chamber, the two young gentlemen were ſent home, and the reſt of the company returned to their bottle; where a converſation enſued on the ſubject of the bird, ſo curious, that we think it deſerves a chapter by itſelf.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Containing ſuch very deep and grave matters, that ſome readers, perhaps, may not reliſh it.

SQUARE had no ſooner lighted his pipe, than addreſſing himſelf to Allworthy, he thus began: 'Sir, I cannot help congratulating you on your nephew; who, at an age when few lads have any ideas 'but of ſenſible objects, is arrived at a capacity of 'diſtinguiſhing right from wrong. To confine any 'thing ſeems to me againſt the law of nature, by 'which every thing hath a right to liberty. Theſe 'were his words; and the impreſſion they have made 'on me is never to be eradicated. Can any man 'have a higher notion of the rule of right, and the 'eternal fitneſs of things? I cannot help promiſing 'myſelf from ſuch a dawn, that the meridian of this 'youth will be equal to that of either the elder or the 'younger BRUTUS.'

Here Thwackum haſtily interrupted, and ſpilling ſome of his wine, and ſwallowing the reſt with great eagerneſs, anſwered, 'From another expreſſion he 'made uſe of, I hope he will reſemble much better 'men. The law of nature is a jargon of words, 'which means nothing. I know not of any ſuch 'law, nor of any right which can be derived from it. 'To do as we would be done by, is indeed a chriſtian 'motive, as the boy well expreſſed himſelf, and I am 'glad to find my inſtructions have borne ſuch good 'fruit.'

'If vanity was a thing fit, (ſays Square) I might 'indulge ſome on the ſame occaſion; from whence 'only he can have learnt his notions of right or wrong, 'I think it is pretty apparent. If there be no law of 'nature, there is no right nor wrong.'

'How! (ſays the parſon) do you then baniſh re'velation? Am I talking with a deiſt or an atheiſt?'

'Drink about, (ſays Weſtern) pox of your laws 'of nature. I don't know what you mean either of

'you, by right and wrong. To take away my girl's 'bird was wrong in my opinion; and my neighbour 'Allworthy may do as he pleaſes; but to encourage 'boys in ſuch practices is to breed them up to the 'gallows.'

Allworthy anſwered, 'That he was ſorry for what 'his nephew had done; but could not conſent to pu-'niſh him, as he acted rather from a generous than 'unworthy motive.' He ſaid, 'If the boy had ſtolen 'the bird, none would have been more ready to vote 'for a ſevere chaſtiſement than himſelf; but it was 'plain that was not his deſign:' and, indeed, it was as apparent to him, that he could have no other view but what he had himſelf avowed. (For as to that malicious purpoſe which Sophia ſuſpected, it never once entered into the head of Mr. Allworthy.) He, at length, concluded with again blaming the action as inconſiderate, and which, he ſaid, was pardonable only in a child.

Square had delivered his opinion ſo openly, that if he was now ſilent, he muſt ſubmit to have his judgment cenſured. He ſaid, therefore, with ſome warmth, 'That Mr. Allworthy had too much reſpect to the 'dirty conſideration of property. That in paſſing 'our judgments on great and mighty actions, all pri-'vate regards ſhould be laid aſide; for by adhering 'to thoſe narrow rules, the younger Brutus had been 'condemned of ingratitude, and the elder of parri-'cide.'

'And if they had been hanged too for thoſe crimes,' cried Thwackum, 'they would have had no more 'than their deſerts. A couple of heatheniſh villains! 'Heaven be praiſed, we have no Brutus's now-a-days. 'I wiſh, Mr. Square, you would deſiſt from filling 'the minds of my pupils with ſuch antichriſtian ſtuff: 'for the conſequence muſt be, while they are under 'my care, its being well ſcourged out of them again. 'There is your diſciple Tom almoſt ſpoiled already. 'I over-heard him the other day diſputing with 'Maſter Bliſil, that there was no merit in faith with-'out works. I know that is one of your tenets, and 'I ſuppoſe he had it from you.'

'Don't

'Don't accuſe me of ſpoiling him,' ſays Square. 'Who taught him to laugh at whatever is virtuous 'and decent, and fit and right in the nature of things? 'He is your own ſcholar, and I diſclaim him. No, 'no, Maſter Bliſil is my boy. Young as he is, that 'lad's notions of moral rectitude I defy you ever to 'eradicate.'

Thwackum put on a contemptuous ſneer at this; and replied, 'Ay, ay, I will venture him with you. 'He is too well grounded for all your philoſophical 'cant to hurt. No, no, I have taken care to inſtil 'ſuch principles into him.'

'And I have inſtilled principles into him too,' cries Square. 'What but the ſublime idea of virtue could 'inſpire a human mind with the generous thought of 'giving liberty? And I repeat to you again, if it was 'a fit thing to be proud, I might claim the honour of 'having infuſed that idea.'

'And if pride was not forbidden,' ſaid Thwackum, 'I might boaſt of having taught him that duty which 'he himſelf aſſigned as his motive.'

'So, between you both,' ſays the 'ſquire, 'the 'young gentleman hath been taught to rob my 'daughter of her bird. I find I muſt take care of my 'partridge mew. I ſhall have ſome virtuous religious 'man or other ſet all my partridges at liberty.' Then ſlapping a gentleman of the law, who was preſent, on the back, he cried out, 'What ſay you to 'this, Mr. Counſellor? Is not this againſt law?'

The lawyer with great gravity delivered himſelf as follows:

'If the caſe be put of a partridge, there can be no 'doubt but an action would lie: for though this be '*Feræ Naturæ*, yet being reclaimed, property veſts: 'but being the caſe of a ſinging bird, though re-'claimed, as it is a thing of baſe nature, it muſt be 'conſidered as *nullius in bonis*. In this caſe, there-'fore, I conceive the plaintiff muſt be nonſuited; and 'I ſhould diſadviſe the bringing any ſuch action.'

'Well, (ſays the 'ſquire) if it be *nullus bonus*, let us 'drink about, and talk a little of the ſtate of the 'nation, or ſome ſuch diſcourſe that we all underſtand;

'for I am ſure I don't underſtand a word of this. It 'may be learning and ſenſe for aught I know; but 'you ſhall never perſuade me into it. Pox! you have 'neither of you mentioned a word of that poor lad 'who deſerves to be commended; to venture breaking 'his neck to oblige my girl, was a generous ſpirited 'action: I have learning enough to ſee that. D—n 'me, here's Tom health. I ſhall love the boy for it 'the longeſt day I have to live.'

Thus was the debate interrupted; but it would probably have been ſoon reſumed, had not Mr. Allworthy preſently called for his coach, and carried off the two combatants.

Such was the concluſion of this adventure of the bird, and of the dialogue occaſioned by it, which we could not help recounting to our reader, though it happened ſome years before that ſtage, or period of time, at which our hiſtory is now arrived.

CHAP. V.

Containing matter accommodated to every taſte.

PARVA leves capiunt animos, 'Small things affect light minds,' was the ſentiment of a great maſter of the paſſion of love. And certain it is, that from this day Sophia began to have ſome little kindneſs for Tom Jones, and no little averſion for his companion.

Many accidents from time to time improved both theſe paſſions in her breaſt; which, without our recounting, the reader may well conclude, from what we have before hinted of the different tempers of theſe lads, and how much the one ſuited with her own inclinations more than the other. To ſay the truth, Sophia, when very young, diſcerned that Tom, though an idle, thoughtleſs, rattling raſcal, was no-body's enemy but his own; and that Maſter Blifil, though a prudent, diſcreet, ſober, young gentleman, was, at the ſame time, ſtrongly attached to the intereſt only of one ſingle perſon; and who that ſingle perſon was, the

reader

reader will be able to divine without any aſſiſtance of ours.

Theſe two characters are not always received in the world with the different regard which ſeems ſeverally due to either; and which one would imagine mankind, from ſelf-intereſt, ſhould ſhew towards them. But perhaps there may be a political reaſon for it: in finding one of a truly benevolent diſpoſition, men may very reaſonably ſuppoſe, they have found a treaſure, and be deſirous of keeping it, like all other good things, to themſelves. Hence they may imagine, that to trumpet forth the praiſes of ſuch a perſon, would, in the vulgar phraſe, be crying Roaſt-meat: and calling in partakers of what they intend to apply ſolely to their own uſe. If this reaſon does not ſatisfy the reader, I know no other means of accounting for the little reſpect which I have commonly ſeen paid to a character which really does great honour to human nature, and is productive of the higheſt good to ſociety. But it was otherwiſe with Sophia. She honoured Tom Jones, and ſcorned Maſter Blifil, almoſt as ſoon as ſhe knew the meaning of thoſe two words.

Sophia had been abſent upwards of three years with her aunt; during all which time ſhe had ſeldom ſeen either of theſe young gentlemen. She dined, however, once, together with her aunt, at Mr. Allworthy's. This was a few days after the adventure of the partridge, before commemorated. Sophia heard the whole ſtory at table, where ſhe ſaid nothing; nor indeed could her aunt get many words from her, as ſhe returned home; but her maid, when undreſſing her, happening to ſay, 'Well, Miſs, I ſuppoſe you 'have ſeen young Maſter Blifil to-day.' She anſwered with much paſſion, 'I hate the name of Maſter Blifil, 'as I do whatever is baſe and treacherous; and I wonder Mr. Allworthy would ſuffer that old barbarous 'ſchool-maſter to puniſh a poor boy ſo cruelly, for 'what was only the effect of his good-nature.' She then recounted the ſtory to her maid, and concluded with ſaying,—'Don't you think he is a boy of a noble 'ſpirit?'

This young lady was now returned to her father; who gave her the command of his houſe, and placed her at the upper end of his table, where Tom, (who for his great love of hunting was become a great favourite of the 'ſquire) often dined. Young men of open, generous diſpoſitions are naturally inclined to gallantry, which if they have good underſtandings, as was in reality Tom's caſe, exerts itſelf in an obliging, complaiſant behaviour to all women in general. This greatly diſtinguiſhed Tom from the boiſterous brutality of mere country 'ſquires on the one hand; and from the ſolemn, and ſomewhat ſullen deportment of Maſter Blifil on the other: and he began now, at twenty, to have the name of a pretty fellow, among all the women in the neighbourhood.

Tom behaved to Sophia with no particularity, unleſs, perhaps, by ſhewing her a higher reſpect than he paid to any other. This diſtinction her beauty, fortune, ſenſe, and amiable carriage, ſeemed to demand; but as to deſign upon her perſon he had none; for which we ſhall at preſent ſuffer the reader to condemn him of ſtupidity; but perhaps we ſhall be able indifferently well to account for it hereafter.

Sophia, with the higheſt degree of innocence and modeſty, had a remarkable ſprightlineſs in her temper. This was ſo greatly increaſed whenever ſhe was in company with Tom, that, had he not been very young and thoughtleſs, he muſt have obſerved it; or had not Mr. Weſtern's thoughts been generally either in the field, the ſtable, or the dog-kennel, it might have, perhaps, created ſome jealouſy in him: but ſo far was the good gentleman from entertaining any ſuch ſuſpicions, that he gave Tom every opportunity with his daughter which any lover could have wiſhed. And this Tom innocently improved to better advantage, by following only the dictates of his natural gallantry and good-nature, than he might, perhaps, have done, had he had the deepeſt deſigns on the young lady.

But, indeed, it can occaſion little wonder, that this matter eſcaped the obſervation of others, ſince poor Sophia herſelf never remarked it, and her heart was irretrievably loſt before ſhe ſuſpected it was in danger.

Matters

Matters were in this ſituation, when Tom one afternoon, finding Sophia alone, began, after a ſhort apology, with a very ſerious face, to acquaint her, that he had a favour to aſk of her, which he hoped her goodneſs would comply with.

Though neither the young man's behaviour, nor indeed his manner of opening this buſineſs, were ſuch as could give her any juſt cauſe of ſuſpecting he intended to make love to her; yet, whether nature whiſpered ſomething into her ear, or from what cauſe it aroſe I will not determine, certain it is, ſome idea of that kind muſt have intruded itſelf; for her colour forſook her cheeks, her limbs trembled, and her tongue would have faultered, had Tom ſtopped for an anſwer: but he ſoon relieved her from her perplexity, by proceeding to inform her of his requeſt, which was to ſolicit her intereſt on behalf of the game-keeper, whoſe own ruin, and that of a large family, muſt be, he ſaid, the conſequence of Mr. Weſtern's purſuing his action againſt him.

Sophia preſently recovered her confuſion, and with a ſmile full of ſweetneſs, ſaid, 'Is this the mighty 'favour you aſked with ſo much gravity? I will do it 'with all my heart. I really pity the poor fellow, 'and no longer ago than yeſterday ſent a ſmall matter 'to his wife.' This ſmall matter was one of her gowns, ſome linnen, and ten ſhillings in money, of which Tom had heard, and it had, in reality, put this ſolicitation into his head.

Our youth, now emboldened with his ſucceſs, reſolved to puſh the matter farther; and ventured even to beg her recommendation of him to her father's ſervice; proteſting that he thought him one of the honeſteſt fellows in the country, and extremely well qualified for the place of a game-keeper, which luckily then happened to be vacant.

Sophia anſwered; 'Well, I will undertake this 'too; but I cannot promiſe you as much ſucceſs as 'in the former part, which I aſſure you I will not 'quit my father without obtaining. However, I will 'do what I can for the poor fellow: for I ſincerely 'look upon him and his family as objects of great

'compaſſion

'compaſſion.—And now, Mr. Jones, I muſt aſk you a 'favour.'—

'A favour! Madam, (cries Tom) if you knew the 'pleaſure you have given me in the hopes of receiving 'a command from you, you would think by mention-'ing it you did confer the greateſt favour on me; for 'by this dear hand I would ſacrifice my life to oblige 'you.'

He then ſnatched her hand, and eagerly kiſſed it, which was the firſt time his lips had ever touched her. The blood, which before had forſaken her cheeks, now made her ſufficient amends, by ruſhing all over her face and neck with ſuch violence, that they became all of a ſcarlet colour. She now firſt felt a ſenſation to which ſhe had been before a ſtranger, and which, when ſhe had leiſure to reflect on it, began to acquaint her with ſome ſecrets, which the reader, if he does not already gueſs them, will know in due time.

Sophia, as ſoon as ſhe could ſpeak, (which was not inſtantly) informed him, that the favour ſhe had to deſire of him, was not to lead her father through ſo many dangers in hunting: for that, from what ſhe had heard, ſhe was terribly frightened every time they went out together, and expected ſome day or other to ſee her father brought home with broken limbs. She therefore begged him, for her ſake, to be more cautious; and, as he well knew Mr. Weſtern would follow him, not to ride ſo madly, nor to take thoſe dangerous leaps for the future.

Tom promiſed faithfully to obey her commands; and, after thanking her for her kind compliance with his requeſt, took his leave, and departed highly charmed with his ſucceſs.

Poor Sophia was charmed too; but in a very different way. Her ſenſation, however, the reader's heart, (if he or ſhe have any) will better repreſent than I can, if I had as many mouths as ever poet wiſhed for, to eat, I ſuppoſe, thoſe many dainties with which he was ſo plentifully provided.

It was Mr. Weſtern's cuſtom every afternoon, as ſoon as he was drunk, to hear his daughter play on the harpſichord: for he was a great lover of muſic, and

and perhaps, had he lived in town, might have paſſed for a connoiſſeur: for he always excepted againſt the fineſt compoſitions of Mr. Handel. He never reliſhed any muſic but what was light and airy; and indeed his moſt favaurite tunes, were Old Sir Simon the King, St. George he was for England, Bobbing Joan, and ſome others.

His daughter, though ſhe was a perfect miſtreſs of muſic, and would never willingly have played any but Handel's, was ſo devoted to her father's pleaſure, that ſhe learnt all thoſe tunes to oblige him. However ſhe would now and then endeavour to lead him into her own taſte, and when he required the repetition of his ballads, would anſwer with a 'nay, dear, Sir;' and would often beg him to ſuffer her to play ſomething elſe.

This evening however, when the gentleman was retired from his bottle, ſhe played all his favourites three times over, without any ſolicitation. This ſo pleaſed the good'ſquire, that he ſtarted from his couch, gave his daughter a kiſs, and ſwore her hand was greatly improved. She took this opportunity to execute her promiſe to Tom; in which ſhe ſucceeded ſo well, that the 'ſquire declared, if ſhe would give him t'other bout of old Sir Simon, he would give the gamekeeper his deputation the next morning. Sir Simon was played again and again, till the the charms of the muſic ſoothed Mr. Weſtern to ſleep. In the morning Sophia did not fail to remind him of his engagement; and his attorney was immediately ſent for, and ordered to ſtop any further proceedings in the action, and to make out the deputation.

Tom's ſucceſs in this affair ſoon began to ring over the country, and various were the cenſures paſt upon it. Some greatly applauding it as an act of good nature; others ſneering, and ſaying, 'No wonder 'that one idle fellow ſhould love another.' Young Bliſil was greatly enraged at it. He had long hated Black George in the ſame proportion as Jones delighted in him; not from any offence which he had ever received, but from his great love to religion and virtue: for Black George had the reputation of a looſe kind of a fellow. Bliſil therefore repreſented this as

flying

flying in Mr. Allworthy's face; and declared with great concern, that it was impoſſible to find any other motive for doing good to ſuch a wretch.

Thwackum and Square likewiſe ſung to the ſame tune: they were now (eſpecially the latter) become greatly jealous of young Jones with the widow: for he now approached the age of twenty, was really a fine young fellow, and that lady, by her encouragements to him, ſeemed daily more and more to think him ſo.

Allworthy was not, however, moved with their malice. He declared himſelf very well ſatisfied with what Jones had done. He ſaid, the perſeverance and integrity of his friendſhip was highly commendable, and he wiſhed he could ſee more frequent inſtances of that virtue.

But fortune, who ſeldom greatly reliſhes ſuch ſparks as my friend Tom, perhaps, becauſe they do not pay more ardent addreſſes to her, gave now a very different turn to all his actions, and ſhewed them to Mr. Allworthy in a light far leſs agreeable than that gentleman's goodneſs had hitherto ſeen them in.

CHAP VI.

An apology for the inſenſibility of Mr. Jones, to all the charms of the lovely Sophia; in which poſſibly we may, in a conſiderable degree, lower his character in the eſtimation of thoſe men of wit and gallantry, who approve the heroes in moſt of our modern comedies.

THERE are two ſorts of people, who, I am afraid, have already conceived ſome contempt for my hero, on account of his behaviour to Sophia. The former of theſe will blame his prudence in neglecting an opportunity to poſſeſs himſelf of Mr. Weſteen's fortune; and the latter will no leſs deſpiſe him for his backwardneſs to ſo fine a girl, who ſeemed ready to fly into his arms, if he would open them to receive her.

Now, though I ſhall not, perhaps, be able abſolutely to acquit him of either of theſe charges; (for want

want of prudence admits of no excuſe; and what I ſhall produce againſt the latter charge, will, I apprehend, be ſcarce ſatisfactory;) yet as evidence may ſometimes be offered in mitigation, I ſhall ſet forth the plain matter of fact, and leave the whole to the reader's determination.

Mr. Jones had ſomewhat about him, which, though I think writers are not thoroughly agreed in its name, doth certainly inhabit ſome human breaſts; whoſe uſe is not ſo properly to diſtinguiſh right from wrong, as to prompt and incite them to the former, and to reſtrain and with-hold them from the latter.

This ſomewhat may be indeed reſembled to the famous trunk-maker in the play-houſe: for whenever the perſon who is poſſeſſed of it doth what is right, no raviſhed or friendly ſpectator is ſo eager, or ſo loud in his applauſe; on the contrary, when he doth wrong, no critic is ſo apt to hiſs and explode him.

To give a higher idea of the principle I mean, as well as one more familiar to the preſent age; it may be conſidered as ſitting on its throne in the mind, like the LORD HIGH CHANCELLOR of this kingdom in his court; where it preſides, governs, directs, judges, acquits and condemns according to merit and juſtice; with a knowledge which nothing eſcapes, a penetration which nothing can deceive, and an integrity which nothing can corrupt.

This active principle may perhaps be ſaid to conſtitute the moſt eſſential barrier between us and our neighbours the brutes; for if there be ſome in the human ſhape, who are not under any ſuch dominion, I chuſe rather to conſider them as deſerters from us to our neighbours; among whom they will have the fate of deſerters, and not be placed in the firſt rank.

Our hero, whether he derived it from Thwackum or Square I will not determine, was very ſtrongly under the guidance of this principle: for though he did not always act rightly, yet he never did otherwiſe, without feeling and ſuffering for it. It was this which taught him, that to repay the civilities and little friendſhips of hoſpitality by robbing the houſe where you have received them, is to be the baſeſt and meaneſt

meaneſt of thieves. He did not think the baſeneſs of this offence leſſened by the height of the injury committed; on the contrary, if to ſteal another's plate deſerved death and infamy, it ſeemed to him difficult to aſſign a puniſhment adequate to the robbing a man of his whole fortune, and of his child into the bargain.

This principle therefore prevented him from any thought of making his fortune by ſuch means (for this, as I have ſaid, is an active principle, and doth not content itſelf with knowledge or belief only.) Had he been greatly enamoured of Sophia, he poſſibly might have thought otherwiſe; but give me leave to ſay, there is great difference between running away with a man's daughter from the motive of love, and doing the ſame thing from the motive of theft.

Now though this young gentleman was not inſenſible of the charms of Sophia; though he greatly liked her beauty, and eſteemed all her other qualifications, ſhe had made, however, no deep impreſſion on his heart: for which, as it renders him liable to the charge of ſtupidity, or at leaſt of want of taſte, we ſhall now proceed to account.

The truth then is, his heart was in the poſſeſſion of another woman. Here I queſtion not, but the reader will be ſurprized at our long taciturnity as to this matter; and quite at a loſs to divine who this woman was; ſince we have hitherto not dropt a hint of any one likely to be a rival to Sophia; for as to Mrs. Blifil, though we have been obliged to mention ſome ſuſpicions of her affection for Tom, we have not hitherto given the leaſt latitude for imagining that he had any for her; and, indeed, I am ſorry to ſay it, but the youth of both ſexes are too apt to be deficient in their gratitude, for that regard with which perſons more advanced in years are ſometimes ſo kind to honour them.

That the reader may be no longer in ſuſpence, he will be pleaſed to remember, that we have often mentioned the family of George Seagrim (commonly called Black George, the Game-keeper) which conſiſted at preſent of a wife and five children.

The

The ſecond of theſe children was a daughter, whoſe name was Molly, and who was eſteemed one of the handſomeſt girls in the whole country.

Congreve well ſays, there is in true beauty ſomething which vulgar ſouls cannot admire; ſo can no dirt or rags hide this ſomething from thoſe ſouls which are not of the vulgar ſtamp.

The beauty of this girl made, however, no impreſſion on Tom, till ſhe grew towards the age of ſixteen, when Tom, who was near three years older, began firſt to caſt the eyes of affection upon her. And this affection he had fixed on the girl long before he could bring himſelf to attempt the poſſeſſion of her perſon: for though his conſtitution urged him greatly to this, his principles no leſs forcibly reſtrained him. To debauch a young woman, however low her condition was, appeared to him a very heinous crime; and the good-will he bore the father, with the compaſſion he had for his family, very ſtrongly corroborated all ſuch ſober reflections; ſo that he once reſolved to get the better of his inclinations, and he actually abſtained three whole months without ever going to Seagrim's houſe, or ſeeing his daughter.

Now though Molly was, as we have ſaid, generally thought a very fine girl, and in reality ſhe was ſo, yet her beauty was not of the moſt amiable kind. It had indeed very little of feminine in it, and would have become a man at leaſt as well as a woman; for, to ſay the truth, youth and florid health had a very conſiderable ſhare in the compoſition.

Nor was her mind more effeminate than her perſon. As this was tall and robuſt, ſo was that bold and forward. So little had ſhe of modeſty, that Jones had more regard for her virtue than ſhe herſelf. And as moſt probably ſhe liked Tom as well as he liked her; ſo when ſhe perceived his backwardneſs, ſhe herſelf grew proportionably forward; and when ſhe ſaw he had entirely deſerted the houſe, ſhe found means of throwing herſelf in his way, and behaved in ſuch a manner, that the youth muſt have had very much, or very little of the hero, if her endeavours had proved unſucceſsful. In a word, ſhe ſoon triumphed

over

over all the virtuous reſolutions of Jones: for though ſhe behaved at laſt with all decent reluctance, yet I rather chuſe to attribute the triumph to her; ſince, in fact, it was her deſign which ſucceeded.

In the conduct of this matter, I ſay, Molly ſo well played her part, that Jones attributed the conqueſt entirely to himſelf, and conſidered the young woman as one who had yielded to the violent attacks of his paſſion. He likewiſe imputed her yielding to the ungovernable force of her love towards him; and this the reader will allow to have been a very natural and probable ſuppoſition, as we have more than once mentioned the uncommon comelineſs of his perſon: and indeed he was one of the handſomeſt young fellows in the world.

As there are ſome minds whoſe affections, like Maſter Bliſil's, are ſolely placed on one ſingle perſon, whoſe intereſt and indulgence alone they conſider on every occaſion; regarding the good and ill of all others as merely indifferent, any farther than as they contribute to the pleaſure or advantage of that perſon: ſo there is a different temper of mind which bo.rows a degree of virtue even from ſelf-love. Such can never receive any kind of ſatisfaction from another, without loving the creature to whom that ſatisfaction is owing, and without making its well-being in ſome ſort neceſſary to their own eaſe.

Of this latter ſpecies was our hero. He conſidered this poor girl as one whoſe happineſs or miſery he had cauſed to be dependent on himſelf. Her beauty was ſtill the object of deſire, though greater beauty, or a freſher object, might have been more ſo; but the little abatement which fruition had occaſioned to this, was highly over-balanced by the conſiderations of the affection which ſhe viſibly bore him, and of the ſituation into which he had brought her. The former of theſe created gratitude, the latter compaſſion: and both together, with his deſire for her perſon, raiſed in him a paſſion, which might, without any great violence to the word, be called love; though, perhaps, it was at firſt not very judiciouſly placed.

This

This then was the true reaſon of that inſenſibility which he had ſhewn to the charms of Sophia, and that behaviour in her, which might have been reaſonably enough interpreted as an encouragement to his addreſſes: for as he could not think of abandoning his Molly, poor and deſtitute as ſhe was, ſo no more could he entertain a notion of betraying ſuch a creature as Sophia. And ſurely, had he given the leaſt encouragement to any paſſion for that young lady, he muſt have been abſolutely guilty of one or other of thoſe crimes; either of which would, in my opinion, have very juſtly ſubjected him to that fate, which, at his firſt introduction into this hiſtory, I mentioned to have been generally predicted as his certain deſtiny.

CHAP. VII.

Being the ſhorteſt chapter in this book.

HER mother firſt perceived the alteration in the ſhape of Molly; and in order to hide it from her neighbours, ſhe fooliſhly clothed her in that ſack which Sophia had ſent her. Though indeed that young lady had little apprehenſion, that the poor woman would have been weak enough to let any of her daughters wear it in that form.

Molly was charmed with the firſt opportunity ſhe ever had of ſhewing her beauty to advantage; for though ſhe could very well bear to contemplate herſelf in the glaſs, even when dreſt in rags; and though ſhe had in that dreſs conquered the heart of Jones, and perhaps of ſome others; yet ſhe thought the addition of finery would much improve her charms, and extend her conqueſts.

Molly, therefore, having dreſſed herſelf out in this ſack, with a new laced cap, and ſome other ornaments which Tom had given her, repairs to church with her fan in her hand the very next Sunday. The great are deceived, if they imagine they have appropriated ambition and vanity to themſelves. Theſe noble qualities flouriſh as notably in a country-church, and

church-yard, as in the drawing-room, or in the cloſet. Schemes have indeed been laid in the veſtry, which would hardly diſgrace the conclave. Here is a miniſtry, and here is an oppoſition. Here are plots and circumventions, parties, and factions, equal to thoſe which are to be found in courts.

Nor are the women here leſs practiſed in the higheſt feminine arts than their fair ſuperiors in quality and fortune. Here are prudes and coquets. Here are dreſſing and ogling, falſhood, envy, malice, ſcandal; in ſhort, every thing which is common to the moſt ſplendid aſſembly, or politeſt circle. Let thoſe of high life, therefore, no longer deſpiſe the ignorance of their inferiors; nor the vulgar any longer rail at the vices of their betters.

Molly had ſeated herſelf ſome time, before ſhe was known by her neighbours. And then a whiſper ran through the whole congregation, 'Who is ſhe?' but when ſhe was diſcovered, ſuch ſneering, giggling, tittering, and laughing, enſued among the women, that Mr. Allworthy was obliged to exert his authority to preſerve any decency among them.

CHAP. VIII.

A battle ſung by the muſe in the Homerican ſtile, and which none but the claſſical reader can taſte.

MR. Weſtern had an eſtate in this pariſh; and as his houſe ſtood at little greater diſtance from this church than from his own, he very often came to divine ſervice here; and both he and the charming Sophia happened to be preſent at this time.

Sophia was much pleaſed with the beauty of the girl, whom ſhe pitied for her ſimplicity, in having dreſſed herſelf in that manner, as ſhe ſaw the envy which it had occaſioned among her equals. She no ſooner came home, than ſhe ſent for the game-keeper, and ordered him to bring his daughter to her; ſaying, ſhe would provide for her in the family, and might poſſibly place the girl about her own perſon, when her own maid, who was now going away, had left her.

Poor

Poor Seagrim was thunderſtruck at this; for he was no ſtranger to the fault in the ſhape of his daughter. He anſwered, in a ſtammering voice, 'That he was afraid Molly would be too aukward to 'wait on her ladyſhip, as ſhe had never been at ſer-'vice.' No matter for that,' ſays Sophia, 'ſhe will 'ſoon improve. I am pleaſed with the girl, and am 'reſolved to try her.'

Black George now repaired to his wife, on whoſe prudent counſel he depended to extricate him out of this dilemma; but when he came thither, he found his houſe in ſome confuſion. So great envy had this ſack occaſioned, that when Mr. Allworthy and the other gentry were gone from church, the rage, which had hitherto been confined, burſt into an uproar; and, having vented itſelf at firſt in opprobrious words, laughs, hiſſes, and geſtures, betook itſelf at laſt to certain miſſile weapons; which though, from their plaſtic nature they threatened neither the loſs of life or of limb, were however ſufficiently dreadful to a well-dreſſed lady. Molly had too much ſpirit to bear this treatment tamely. Having therefore—but hold, as we are diffident of our own abilities, let us here invite a ſuperior power to our aſſiſtance.

Ye muſes then, whoever ye are, who love to ſing battles, and principally thou, who whilom didſt recount the ſlaughter in thoſe fields where Hudibraſs and Trulla fought, if thou wert not ſtarved with thy friend Butler, aſſiſt me on this great occaſion. All things are not in the power of all.

As a vaſt herd of cows in a rich farmer's yard, if, while they are milked, they hear their calves at a diſtance, lamenting the robbery which is then committing, roar, and bellow: ſo roared forth the Somerſetſhire mob an hallaloo, made up of almoſt as many ſquawls, ſcreams, and other different ſounds, as there were perſons, or indeed paſſions, among them: ſome were inſpired by rage, others alarmed by fear, and others had nothing in their heads but the love of fun; but chiefly envy, the ſiſter of Satan, and his conſtant companion, ruſhed among the crowd, and blew up the fury of the women; who no ſooner came

up to Molly, than they pelted her with dirt and rubbiſh.

Molly, having endeavoured in vain to make a handſome retreat, faced about; and laying hold of ragged Beſs, who advanced in the front of the enemy, ſhe at one blow felled her to the ground. The whole army of the enemy (though near a hundred in number) ſeeing the fate of their general, gave back many paces, and retired behind a new-dug grave; for the church-yard was the field of battle, where there was to be a funeral that very evening. Molly purſued her victory, and catching up a ſkull which lay on the ſide of the grave, diſcharged it with ſuch fury, that having hit a taylor on the head, the two ſkulls ſent equally forth a hollow ſound at their meeting, and the taylor took preſently meaſure of his length on the ground, where the ſkulls lay ſide by ſide, and it was doubtful which was the more valuable of the two. Molly then taking a thigh-bone in her hand, fell in among the flying ranks, and dealing her blows with great liberality on either ſide, overthrew the carcaſs of many a mighty hero and heroine.

Recount, O muſe, the names of thoſe who fell on this fatal day. Firſt Jemmy Tweedle felt on his hinder head the direful bone. Him the pleaſant banks of ſweetly winding Stour had nouriſhed, where he firſt learnt the vocal art, with which, wandering up and down at wakes and fairs, he cheered the rural nymphs and ſwains, when upon the green they interweav'd the ſprightly dance; while he himſelf ſtood fiddling and jumping to his own muſic. How little now avails his fiddle? He thumps the verdant floor with his carcaſs. Next old Echepole, the ſowgelder, received a blow in his forehead from our Amazonian heroine, and immediately fell to the ground. He was a ſwingeing fat fellow, and fell with almoſt as much noiſe as a houſe. His tobacco-box dropt at the ſame time from his pocket, which Molly took up as lawful ſpoil. Then Kate of the Mill tumbled unfortunately over a tombſtone, which catching hold of her ungartered ſtocking, inverted the order of nature, and gave her heels the ſuperiority to her head.

Betty

H. Rooker del. *J. Collyer sc.*

Published according to Act of Parliament. Nov.1st 1783. by T. Cadell in the Strand.

Betty Pippin, with young Roger her lover, fell both to the ground; where, O perverſe fate! ſhe ſalutes the earth, and he the ſky. Tom Freckle, the ſmith's ſon, was the next victim to her rage. He was an ingenious workman, and made excellent pattins; nay the very pattin with which he was knocked down, was his own workmanſhip. Had he been at that time ſinging pſalms in the church, he would have avoided a broken head. Miſs Crow, the daughter of a farmer; John Giddiſh, himſelf a farmer; Nan Slouch; Eſther Codling, Will Spray, Tom Bennet; the three Miſſes Potter, whoſe father keeps the ſign of the Red-Lion, Betty Chambermaid, Jack Oſtler, and many others of inferior note, lay rolling among the graves.

Not that the ſtrenuous arm of Molly reached all theſe; for many of them in their flight overthrew each other.

But now fortune, fearing ſhe had acted out of character, and had inclined too long to the ſame ſide, eſpecially as it was the right ſide, haſtily turned about: for now goody Brown,—whom Zekiel Brown careſſed in his arms; nor he alone, but half the pariſh beſides; ſo famous was ſhe in the fields of Venus, nor indeed leſs in thoſe of Mars. The trophies of both theſe her huſband always bore about on his head and face; for if ever human head did by its horns diſplay the amorous glories of a wife, Zekiel's did; nor did his well-ſcratched face leſs denote her talents (or rather talons) of a different kind.

No longer bore this amazon the ſhameful flight of her party. She ſtopt ſhort, and calling aloud to all who fled, ſpoke as follows: 'Ye Somerſetſhire men, 'or rather ye Somerſetſhire women, are ye not aſham-'ed, thus to fly from a ſingle woman? but if no other 'will oppoſe her, I myſelf and Joan Top here will 'have the honour of the victory.' Having thus ſaid, ſhe flew at Molly Seagrim, and eaſily wrenched the thigh-bone from her hand, at the ſame time clawing off her cap from her head. Then laying hold of the hair of Molly, with her left hand, ſhe attacked her ſo furiouſly in the face with the right, that the

blood ſoon began to trickle from her noſe. Molly was not idle this while. She ſoon removed the clout from the head of goody Brown, and then faſtening on her hair with one hand, with the other ſhe cauſed another bloody ſtream to iſſue forth from the noſtrils of the enemy.

When each of the combatants had borne off ſufficient ſpoils of hair from the head of her antagoniſt, the next rage was againſt the garments. In this attack they exerted ſo much violence, that in a very few minutes, they were both naked to the middle.

It is lucky for the women, that the ſeat of fifty-cuff-war is not the ſame with them as among men; but though they may ſeem a little to deviate from their ſex, when they go forth to battle, yet I have obſerved they never ſo far forget, as to aſſail the boſom of each other; where a few blows would be fatal to moſt of them. This, I know, ſome derive from their being of a more bloody inclination than the males. On which account they apply to the noſe, as to the part whence blood may moſt eaſily be drawn; but this ſeems a far-fetched, as well as ill-natured ſuppoſition.

Goody Brown had great advantage of Molly in this particular; for the former had indeed no breaſts, her boſom (if it may be ſo called) as well in colour as in many other properties, exactly reſembling an antient piece of parchment, upon which any one might have drummed a conſiderable while, without doing her any great damage.

Molly, beſide her preſent unhappy condition, was differently formed in thoſe parts, and might, perhaps, have tempted the envy of Brown to give her a fatal blow, had not the lucky arrival of Tom Jones at this inſtant put an immediate end to the bloody ſcene.

This accident was luckily owing to Mr. Square; for he, Maſter Bliſil, and Jones, had mounted their horſes, after church, to take the air, and had ridden about a quarter of a mile, when Square, changing his mind, (not idly, but for a reaſon which we ſhall unfold as ſoon as we have leiſure) deſired the young gentlemen to ride with him another way than they had

at

at firſt purpoſed. This motion being complied with, brought them of neceſſity back again to the church-yard.

Maſter Blifil, who rode firſt, ſeeing ſuch a mob aſſembled, and two women in the poſture in which we left the combatants, ſtopt his horſe to enquire what was the matter. A country fellow, ſcratching his head, anſwered him; 'I don't know meaſter un't I; 'and pleaſe your honour, here hath been a yight, I 'think, between goody Brown and Mol Seagrim.' 'Who, who?' cries Tom; but without waiting for an anſwer, having diſcovered the features of his Molly through all the diſcompoſure in which they now were, he haſtily alighted, turned his horſe looſe, and leaping over the wall ran to her. She now firſt burſting into tears, told him how barbarouſly ſhe had been treated. Upon which, forgetting the ſex of goody Brown, or perhaps not knowing it, in his rage; for, in reality, ſhe had no feminine appearance but a petticoat, which he might not obſerve, he gave her a laſh or two with his horſe-whip; and then flying at the mob, who were all accuſed by Moll, he dealt his blows ſo profuſely on all ſides, that unleſs I would again invoke the muſe, (which the good-natured reader may think a little too hard upon her, as ſhe hath ſo lately been violently ſweated) it would be impoſſible for me to recount the horſe-whipping of that day.

Having ſcoured the whole coaſt of the enemy, as well as any of Homer's heroes ever did, or as Don Quixote, or any knight-errant in the world could have done, he returned to Molly, whom he found in a condition, which muſt give both me and my reader pain, was it to be deſcribed here. Tom raved like a mad-man, beat his breaſt, tore his hair, ſtamped on the ground, and vowed the utmoſt vengeance on all who had been concerned. He then pulled off his coat, and buttoned it round her, put his hat upon her head, wiped the blood from her face as well as he could with his handkerchief, and called out to the ſervant to ride as faſt as poſſible for a ſide-ſaddle, or a pillion, that he might carry her ſafe home.

Maſter Blifil objected to the ſending away the ſervant, as they had only one with them; but as Square ſeconded the order of Jones, he was obliged to comply.

The ſervant returned in a very ſhort time with the pillion, and Molly, having collected her rags as well as ſhe could, was placed behind him. In which manner ſhe was carried home, Square, Blifil, and Jones attending.

Here Jones having received his coat, giving her a ſly kiſs, and whiſpered her, that he would return in the evening, quitted his Molly, and rode on after his companions.

CHAP. IX.

Containing matter of no very peaceable colour.

MOLLY had no ſooner apparelled herſelf in her accuſtomed rags, than her ſiſters began to fall violently upon her; particularly her eldeſt ſiſter, who told her ſhe was well-enough ſerved. 'How had ſhe the aſſurance to wear a gown which 'young madam Weſtern had given to mother! If 'one of us was to wear it, I think, ſays ſhe, 'I myſelf have the beſt right; but I warrant you think it 'belongs to your beauty. I ſuppoſe you think yourſelf more handſomer than any of us.' 'Hand her 'down the bit of glaſs from over the cupboard,' cries another; 'I'd waſh the blood from my face before 'I talked of my beauty.' 'You'd better have minded 'what the parſon ſays,' cries the eldeſt, 'and not 'a harkened after men voke.' 'Indeed, child, and 'ſo ſhe had,' ſays the mother ſobbing, 'ſhe hath 'brought a diſgrace upon us all. She's the vurſt of 'the vamily that ever was a whore.' 'You need not 'upbraid me with that, mother,' cries Molly; 'you 'yourſelf was brought-to-bed of ſiſter there, within a 'week after you was married.' 'Yes, huſſy,' anſwered the enraged mother, 'ſo I was, and what was the 'mighty matter of that? I was made an honeſt wo-'man then; and if you was to be made an honeſt

'woman

'woman, I ſhould not be angry; but you muſt have 'to doing with a gentleman, you naſty ſlut; you 'will have a baſtard, huſſy, you will; and that I defy 'any one to ſay of me.'

In this ſituation Black George found his family, when he came home for the purpoſe before-mentioned. As his wife and three daughters were all of them talking together, and moſt of them crying, it was ſome time before he could get an opportunity of being heard; but as ſoon as ſuch an interval occurred, he acquainted the company with what Sophia had ſaid to him.

Goody Seagrim than began to revile her daughter afreſh. 'Here,' ſays ſhe, 'you have brought us 'into a fine quandary indeed. What will Madam ſay 'to that big belly? Oh that ever I ſhould live to ſee 'this day!'

Molly anſwered with great ſpirit, 'And what is this 'mighty place which you have got for me, father?' (for he had not well underſtood the phraſe uſed by Sophia of being about her perſon) 'I ſuppoſe it is 'to be under the cook; but I ſhan't waſh diſhes for 'any body. My gentleman will provide better for 'me. See what he hath given me this afternoon: 'he hath promiſed I ſhall never want, mother; 'and you ſhan't want money neither, if you will 'hold your tongue, and know when you are well.' And ſo ſaying, ſhe pulled out ſeveral guineas, and gave her mother one of them.

This good woman no ſooner felt the gold within her palm, than her temper began (ſuch is the efficacy of that panacea) to be mollified. 'Why, huſband, ſays ſhe, 'would any but ſuch a blockhead as you 'not have enquired what place this was before he 'had accepted it? Perhaps, as Molly ſays, it may be 'in the kitchen; and truly I don't care my daughter 'ſhould be a ſcullion wench: for, poor as I am, I 'am a gentlewoman. And thof I was obliged, as 'my father, who was a clergyman, died worſe than 'nothing, and ſo could not give me a ſhilling of 'potion, to undervalue myſelf, by marrying a poor 'man; yet I would have you know, I have a ſpirit

'above all them things. Marry come up! it would 'better become Madam Weſtern to look at home, 'and remember who her own grand-father was. Some 'of my family, for ought I know, might ride in their 'coaches, when the grand-fathers of ſome voke walk-'ed a voot. I warrant ſhe fancies ſhe did a mighty 'matter, when ſhe ſent us that old gownd; ſome of 'my family would not have picked up ſuch rags 'in the ſtreet; but poor people are always trampled 'upon.—The pariſh need not have been in ſuch a 'fluſter with Molly.—You might have told them, 'child, your grand-mother wore better things new 'out of the ſhop.'

'Well, but conſider,' cried George, 'What anſwer 'ſhall I make to Madam?' 'I don't know what 'anſwer,' ſays ſhe. 'You are always bringing your 'family into one quandary or other. Do you re-'member when you ſhot the partridge, the occaſion of 'all our misfortunes? Did I not adviſe you never to 'go into 'ſquire Weſtern's manor? Did not I tell you 'many a good year ago what would come of it? But 'you would have your own headſtrong ways; yes, 'you would, you villain.'—

Black George was, in the main, a peaceable kind of a fellow, and nothing choleric, nor raſh; yet did he bear about him ſomething of what the antients called the iraſcible, and which his wife, if ſhe had been endowed with much wiſdom, would have feared. He had long experienced, that when the ſtorm grew very high, arguments were but wind, which ſerved rather to increaſe than to abate it. He was therefore ſeldom unprovided with a ſmall ſwitch, a remedy of wonderful force, as he had often eſſayed, and which the word villain ſerved as a hint for his applying.

No ſooner, therefore, had this ſymptom appeared, than he had immediate recourſe to the ſaid remedy, which though, as it is uſual in all very efficacious medicines, it at firſt ſeemed to heighten and inflame the diſeaſe, ſoon produced a total calm, and reſtored the patient to perfect eaſe and tranquillity.

This is, however, a kind of horſe-medicine, which requires a very robuſt conſtitution to digeſt, and is

therefore

therefore proper only for the vulgar, unleſs in one ſingle inſtance, viz. where ſuperiority of birth breaks out; in which caſe, we ſhould not think it very improperly applied by any huſband whatever, if the application was not in itſelf ſo baſe, that, like certain applications of the phyſical kind which need not be mentioned, it ſo much degrades and contaminates the hand employed in it, that no gentleman ſhould endure the thought of any thing ſo low and deteſtable.

The whole family were ſoon reduced to a ſtate of perfect quiet; for the virtue of this medicine, like that of electricity, is often communicated through one perſon to many others, who are not touched by the inſtrument. To ſay the truth, as they both operate by friction, it may be doubted whether there is not ſomething analogous between them, of which Mr. Freke would do well to enquire, before he publiſhes the next edition of his book.

A council was now called, in which, after many debates, Molly ſtill perſiſting that ſhe would not go to ſervice, it was at length reſolved, that goody Seagrim herſelf ſhould wait on Miſs Weſtern, and endeavour to procure the place for her eldeſt daughter, who declared great readineſs to accept it: but fortune, who ſeems to have been an enemy of this little family, afterwards put a ſtop to her promotion.

CHAP. X.

A ſtory told by Mr. Supple, the curate. The penetration of 'ſquire Weſtern. His great love for his daughter, and the return to it made by her.

THE next morning Tom Jones hunted with Mr. Weſtern, and was at his return invited by that gentleman to dinner.

The lovely Sophia ſhone forth that day with more gaiety and ſprightlineſs than uſual. Her battery was certainly levelled at our hero; though, I believe, ſhe herſelf ſcarce yet knew her own intention; but it

ſhe had any deſign of charming him, ſhe now ſucceeded.

Mr. Supple, the curate of Mr. Allworthy's pariſh, made one of the company. He was a good-natured worthy man; but chiefly remarkable for his great taciturnity at table, though his mouth was never ſhut at it. In ſhort, he had one of the beſt appetites in the world. However, the cloth was no ſooner taken away, than he always made ſufficient amends for his ſilence: for he was a very hearty fellow; and his converſation was often entertaining, never offenſive.

At his firſt arrival, which was immediately before the entrance of the roaſt-beef, he had given an intimation that he had brought ſome news with him, and was beginning to tell, that he came that moment from Mr. Allworthy's, when the ſight of the roaſt-beef ſtruck him dumb, permitting him only to ſay grace, and to declare, he muſt pay his reſpect to the baronet: for ſo he called the ſirloin.

When dinner was over, being reminded by Sophia of his news, he began as follows, 'I believe, lady, 'your ladyſhip obſerved a young woman at church 'yeſterday at even-ſong, who was dreſt in one of your 'outlandiſh garments; I think I have ſeen your lady-'ſhip in ſuch a one. However, in the country, ſuch 'dreſſes are

'*Rara avis in Terris, nigroque ſimillima Cygno,*

'That is, Madam, as much as to ſay,

'A rare bird upon the earth, and very like a black 'ſwan.

'The verſe is in Juvenal: but to return to what I 'was relating. I was ſaying ſuch garments are rare 'ſights in the country; and perchance too, it was 'thought more rare, reſpect being had to the perſon 'who wore it, who, they tell me, is the daughter 'of Black George, your worſhip's game-keeper, 'whoſe ſufferings I ſhould have opined, might have 'taught him more wit, than to dreſs forth his wenches

'in

'in ſuch gaudy apparel. She created ſo much con-
'fuſion in the congregation, that if 'ſquire Allworthy
'had not ſilenced it, it would have interrupted the
'ſervice: for I was once about to ſtop in the middle
'of the firſt leſſon. Howbeit, nevertheleſs, after
'prayer was over, and I was departed home, this oc-
'caſioned a battle in the church-yard, where, amongſt
'other miſchief, the head of a travelling fidler was
'very much broken. This morning the fidler came
'to 'ſquire Allworthy for a warrant, and the wench
'was brought before him. The 'ſquire was inclined
'to have compounded matters; when, lo! on a ſud-
'den, the wench appeared (I aſk your ladyſhip's
'pardon) to be, as it were, at the eve of bringing
'forth a baſtard. The 'ſquire demanded of her who
'was the father? But ſhe pertinaciouſly refuſed to
'make any reſponſe. So that he was about to make
'her mittimus to Bridewell, when I departed.'

'And is a wench having a baſtard all your news,
'doctor?' cries Weſtern, 'I thought it might have
'been ſome public matter, ſomething about the na-
'tion.'

'I am afraid it is too common, indeed,' anſwered the parſon, 'but I thought the whole ſtory all to-
'gether deſerved commemorating. As to national
'matters, your worſhip knows them beſt. My con-
'cerns extend no farther than my own pariſh.'

'Why, ay,' ſays the 'ſquire, 'I believe I do know
'a little of that matter, as you ſay; but, come,
'Tommy, drink about, the bottle ſtands with you.'

Tom begged to be accuſed, for that he had particular buſineſs; and getting up from table, eſcaped the clutches of the 'ſquire, who was riſing to ſtop him, and went off with very little ceremony.

The 'ſquire gave him a good curſe at his departure; and then turning to the parſon, he cried out, 'I
'ſmoke it, I ſmoke it. Tom is certainly the father
'of this baſtard.' 'Zooks, parſon, you remember
'how he recommended the veather o'her to me.—
'D—n un, what a ſly b—ch 'tis. Ay, ay, as ſure as
'two-pence, Tom is the veather of the baſtard.'

'I ſhould be very ſorry for that,' ſays the parſon.

'Why ſorry,' cries the 'ſquire, 'Where is the 'mighty matter o't? What, I ſuppoſe, doſt pretend 'that thee haſt never got a baſtard? Pox! more good 'luck's thine: for I warrant haſt a done *therefore* 'many's the good time and often.' 'Your worſhip 'is pleaſed to be jocular,' anſwered the parſon, 'but 'I do not only animadvert on the ſinfulneſs of the 'action, though that ſurely is to be greatly depre-'cated; but I fear his unrighteouſneſs may injure 'him with Mr. Allworthy. And truly I muſt ſay, 'though he hath the character of being a little wild, 'I never ſaw any harm in the young man; nor can I 'ſay I have heard any, ſave what your worſhip now 'mentions. I wiſh, indeed, he was a little more 'regular in his reſponſes at church; but altogether he 'ſeems

'*Ingenui vultus puer ingenuique pudoris.*

'That is a claſſical line, young lady, and being 'rendered into Engliſh is, "A lad of an ingenuous 'countenance, and of an ingenuous modeſty:" for 'this was a virtue in great repute both among the 'Latins and Greeks. I muſt ſay the young gentle-'man (for ſo I think I may call him, notwithſtand-'ing his birth) appears to me a very modeſt, civil lad, 'and I ſhould be ſorry that he ſhould do himſelf any 'injury in 'ſquire Allworthy's opinion.'

'Poogh!' ſays the 'ſquire, 'Injury with Allwor-'thy! Why Allworthy loves a wench himſelf. Doth 'not all the country know whoſe ſon Tom is? You 'muſt talk to another perſon in that manner. I re-'member Allworthy at college.'

'I thought,' ſaid the parſon, 'he had never been 'at the univerſity.'

'Yes, yes, he was,' ſays the 'ſquire, 'and many 'a wench have we two had together. As arrant a 'whoremaſter as any within five miles o'un. No, 'no. It will do'n no harm with he, aſſure yourſelf; 'nor with any body elſe. Aſk Sophy there——You

have

'have not the worſe opinion of a young fellow for 'getting a baſtard, have you, girl? No, no, the 'women will like un the better for't.'

This was a cruel queſtion to poor Sophia. She had obſerved Tom's colour change at the parſon's ſtory; and that, with his haſty and abrupt departure, gave her ſufficient reaſon to think her father's ſuſpicion not groundleſs. Her heart now, at once, diſcovered the great ſecret to her, which it had been ſo long diſcloſing by little and little; and ſhe found herſelf highly intereſted in this matter. In ſuch a ſituation, her father's malapert queſtion ruſhing ſuddenly upon her, produced ſome ſymptoms which might have alarmed a ſuſpicious heart; but to do the 'ſquire juſtice, that was not his fault. When ſhe roſe therefore from her chair, and told him, a hint from him was always ſufficient to make her withdraw, he ſuffered her to leave the room, and then with great gravity of countenance remarked, 'That it was better to ſee a daughter 'over-modeſt, than over-forward;' a ſentiment which was highly applauded by the parſon.

There now enſued between the 'ſquire and the parſon, a moſt excellent political diſcourſe, framed out of news-papers, and political pamphlets; in which they made a libation of four bottles of wine to the good of their country; and then, the 'ſquire being faſt aſleep, the parſon lighted his pipe, mounted his horſe, and rode home.

When the 'ſquire had finiſhed his half-hour's nap, he ſummoned his daughter to her harpſichord; but ſhe begged to be excuſed that evening, on account of a violent head-ach. This remiſſion was preſently granted: for indeed ſhe ſeldom had occaſion to aſk him twice, as he loved her with ſuch ardent affection, that by gratifying her, he commonly conveyed the higheſt gratification to himſelf. She was really what he frequently called her, his little darling, and ſhe well deſerved to be ſo; for ſhe returned all his affection in the moſt ample manner. She had preſerved the moſt inviolable duty to him in all things; and this her love made not only eaſy, but ſo delightful, that

when one of her companions laughed at her, for placing ſo much merit in ſuch ſcrupulous obedience, as that young lady called it, Sophia anſwered, 'You miſtake me, Madam, if you think I value myſelf upon this account: for beſides that I am barely diſcharging my duty, I am likewiſe pleaſing myſelf. I can truly ſay, I have no delight equal to that of contributing to my father's happineſs; and if I value myſelf, my dear, it is on having this power, and not on executing it.'

This was a ſatisfaction, however, which poor Sophia was incapable of taſting this evening. She therefore not only deſired to be excuſed from her attendance at the harpſichord, but likewiſe begged that he would ſuffer her to abſent herſelf from ſupper. To this requeſt likewiſe the 'ſquire agreed, though not without ſome reluctance; for he ſcarce ever permitted her to be out of his ſight, unleſs when he was engaged with his horſes, dogs, or bottle. Nevertheleſs he yielded to the deſire of his daughter, though the poor man was, at the ſame time, obliged to avoid his own company, (if I may ſo expreſs myſelf) by ſending for a neighbouring farmer to ſit with him.

CHAP. XI.

The narrow eſcape of Molly Seagrim, with ſome obſervations for which we have been forced to dive pretty deep into nature.

TOM JONES had ridden one of Mr. Weſtern's horſes that morning in the chace; ſo that having no horſe of his own in the 'ſquire's ſtable, he was obliged to go home on foot: this he did ſo expeditiouſly, that he ran upwards of three miles within the half hour.

Juſt as he arrived at Mr. Allworthy's outward gate, he met the conſtable and company, with Molly in their poſſeſſion, whom they were conducting to that houſe where the inferior ſort of people may learn one good leſſon, viz. reſpect and deference to their ſuperiors; ſince it muſt ſhew them the wide diſtinction

fortune

fortune intends between thoſe perſons who are to be corrected for their faults, and thoſe who are not; which leſſon, if they do not learn, I am afraid, they very rarely learn any other good leſſon, or improve their morals, at the houſe of correction.

A lawyer may, perhaps, think Mr. Allworthy exceeded his authority a little in this inſtance. And, to ſay the truth, I queſtion, as here was no regular information before him, whether his conduct was ſtrictly regular. However, as his intention was truly upright, he ought to be excuſed in *Foro Conſcientiæ*; ſince ſo many arbitrary acts are daily committed by magiſtrates, who have not this excuſe to plead for themſelves.

Tom was no ſooner informed by the conſtable whither they were proceeding, (indeed he pretty well gueſſed it of himſelf) than he caught Molly in his arms, and embracing her tenderly before them all, ſwore he would murder the firſt man who offered to lay hold of her. He bid her dry her eyes, and be comforted; for wherever ſhe went he would accompany her. Then turning to the conſtable, who ſtood trembling with his hat off, he deſired him, in a very mild voice, to return with him for a moment only to his father, (ſo he now called Allworthy) for he durſt, he ſaid, be aſſured, that when he had alledged what he had to ſay in her favour, the girl would be diſcharged.

The conſtable, who, I make no doubt, would have ſurrendered his priſoner, had Tom demanded her, very readily conſented to this requeſt. So back they all went into Mr. Allworthy's hall; where Tom deſired them to ſtay till his return, and then went himſelf in purſuit of the good man. As ſoon as he was found, Tom threw himſelf at his feet, and having begged a patient hearing, confeſſed himſelf to be the father of the child, of which Molly was then big. He entreated him to have compaſſion on the poor girl, and to conſider, if there was any guilt in the caſe, it lay principally at his door.

'If there is any guilt in the caſe!' anſwered Allworthy warmly, 'Are you then ſo profligate and

'abandoned

'abandoned a libertine, to doubt whether the breaking the laws of God and man, the corrupting and ruining a poor girl, be guilt? I own, indeed, it doth lie principally upon you, and ſo heavy it is, that you ought to expect it ſhould cruſh you.'

'Whatever may be my fate,' ſays Tom, 'let me ſucceed in my interceſſions for the poor girl. I confeſs I have corrupted her; but whether ſhe ſhall be ruined, depends on you. For Heaven's ſake, Sir, revoke your warrant, and do not ſend her to a place which muſt unavoidably prove her deſtruction.'

Allworthy bid him immediately call a ſervant. Tom anſwered, there was no occaſion; for he had luckily met them at the gate, and relying upon his goodneſs, had brought them all back into his hall, where they now waited his final reſolution, which, upon his knees, he beſought him might be in favour of the girl; that ſhe might be permitted to go home to her parents, and not be expoſed to a greater degree of ſhame and ſcorn than muſt neceſſarily fall upon her. 'I know,' ſaid he, 'that is too much. I know I am the wicked occaſion of it. I will endeavour to make amends, if poſſible; and if you ſhall have hereafter the goodneſs to forgive me, I hope I ſhall deſerve it.'

Allworthy heſitated ſome time, and at laſt ſaid, 'Well, I will diſcharge my mittimus.—You may ſend the conſtable to me, he was inſtantly called, diſcharged, and ſo was the girl.'

It will be believed that Mr. Allworthy failed not to read Tom a very ſevere lecture on this occaſion; but it is unneceſſary to inſert it here, as we have faithfully tranſcribed what he ſaid to Jenny Jones in the firſt book, moſt of which may be applied to the men, equally with the women. So ſenſible an effect had theſe reproofs on the young man, who was no hardened ſinner, that he retired to his own room, where he paſſed the evening alone, in much melancholy contemplation.

Allworthy was ſufficiently offended by this tranſgreſſion of Jones; for, notwithſtanding the aſſertions of Mr. Weſtern, it is certain, this worthy man had never

never indulged himſelf in any looſe pleaſures with women, and greatly condemned the vice of incontinence in others. Indeed there is much reaſon to imagine, that there was not the leaſt truth in what Mr. Weſtern affirmed, eſpecially as he laid the ſcene of thoſe impurities at the univerſity, where Mr. Allworthy had never been. In fact, the good 'ſquire was a little to apt to indulge that kind of pleaſantry which is generally called rhodomontade; but which may, with as much propriety, be expreſſed by a much ſhorter word; and, perhaps, we too often ſupply the uſe of this little monoſyllable by others; ſince very much of what frequently paſſes in the world for wit and humour, ſhould, in the ſtricteſt purity of language, receive that ſhort appellation, which, in conformity to the well-bred laws of cuſtom, I here ſuppreſs.

But whatever deteſtation Mr. Allworthy had to this or to any other vice, he was not ſo blinded by it, but that he could diſcern any virtue in the guilty perſon, as clearly, indeed, as if there had been no mixture of vice in the ſame character. While he was angry, therefore, with the incontinence of Jones, he was no leſs pleaſed with the honour and honeſty of his ſelf-accuſation. He began now to form in his mind the fame opinion of this young fellow, which, we hope, our reader may have conceived. And in balancing his faults with his perfections, the latter ſeemed rather to preponderate.

It was to no purpoſe, therefore, that Thwackum, who was immediately charged by Mr. Blifil with the ſtory, unbended all his rancour againſt poor Tom. Allworthy gave a patient hearing to their invectives, and then anſwered coldly: 'That young men of 'Tom's complexion were too generally addicted to 'this vice; but he believed That youth was ſincerely 'affected with what he had ſaid to him on the occa-'ſion, and he hoped he would not tranſgreſs again.' So that the days of whipping were at an end, the tutor had no other vent but his own mouth for his gall, the uſual poor reſource of impotent revenge.

But

But Square, who was a leſs violent, was a much more artful man; and as he hated Jones more, perhaps, than Thwackum himſelf did, ſo he contrived to do him more miſchief in the mind of Mr. Allworthy.

The reader muſt remember the ſeveral little incidents of the partridge, the horſe, and the bible, which were recounted in the ſecond book. By all which Jones had rather improved than injured the affection which Mr. Allworthy was inclined to entertain for him. The ſame, I believe, muſt have happened to him with every other perſon who had any idea of friendſhip, generoſity, and greatneſs of ſpirit; that is to ſay, who hath any traces of goodneſs in his mind.

Square himſelf was not unacquainted with the true impreſſion which thoſe ſeveral inſtances of goodneſs had made on the excellent heart of Allworthy; for the philoſopher very well knew what virtue was, tho' he was not always, perhaps, ſteady in its purſuit: but as for Thwackum, from what reaſon I will not determine, no ſuch thoughts ever entered into his head: he ſaw Jones in a bad light, and he imagined Allworthy ſaw him in the ſame, but that he was reſolved, from pride and ſtubbornneſs of ſpirit, not to give up the boy whom he had once cheriſhed; ſince, by ſo doing, he muſt tacitly acknowledge, that his former opinion of him had been wrong.

Square therefore embraced this opportunity of injuring Jones in the tendereſt part, by giving a very bad turn to all theſe before-mentioned occurrences. 'I am ſorry, Sir,' ſaid he, 'to own I have been deceived as well as yourſelf. I could not, I confeſs, 'help being pleaſed with what I aſcribed to the motive of friendſhip, though it was carried to an exceſs, and all exceſs is faulty and vicious; but in this 'I made allowance for youth. Little did I ſuſpect 'that the ſacrifice of truth, which we both imagined 'to have been made to friendſhip, was, in reality, 'proſtitution of it to a depraved and debauched appetite. You now plainly ſee whence all the ſeeming generoſity of this young man to the family of the 'game-keeper proceeded. He ſupported the father,

'in

'in order to corrupt the daughter, and preſerved the 'family from ſtarving, to bring one of them to ſhame 'and ruin. This is friendſhip! this is generoſity!' As Sir Richard Steele ſays, "Gluttons who give "high prices for delicacies, are very worthy to be "called generous." 'In ſhort, I am reſolved, from 'this inſtance, never to give way to the weakneſs of 'human nature more, nor to think any thing virtue 'which doth not exactly quadrate with the unerring 'rule of right.'

The goodneſs of Allworthy had prevented thoſe conſiderations from occurring to himſelf; yet were they too plauſible to be abſolutely and haſtily rejected, when laid before his eyes by another. Indeed what Square had ſaid ſunk very deeply into his mind, and the uneaſineſs which it there created, was very viſible to the other; though the good man would not acknowledge this, but made a very ſlight anſwer, and forcibly drove off the diſcourſe to ſome other ſubject. It was well, perhaps, for poor Tom, that no ſuch ſuggeſtions had been made before he was pardoned; for they certainly ſtamped in the mind of Allworthy the firſt bad impreſſion concerning Jones.

CHAP. XII.

Containing much clearer matters; but which flowed from the ſame fountain with thoſe in the preceding chapter.

THE reader will be pleaſed, I believe, to return with me to Sophia. She paſſed the night, after we ſaw her laſt, in no very agreeable manner. Sleep befriended her but little, and dreams leſs. In the morning, when Mrs. Honour her maid attended her, at the uſual hour, ſhe was found already up and dreſt.

Perſons who live two or three miles diſtance in the country are conſidered as next door neighbours, and tranſactions at the one houſe fly with incredible celerity to the other. Mrs. Honour, therefore, had heard the whole ſtory of Molly's ſhame; which ſhe, being of a very communicative temper, had no ſooner entered

entered the apartment of her miſtreſs, than ſhe began to relate in the following manner:

'La Ma'am, what doth your la'ſhip think? the 'girl that your la'ſhip ſaw at church on Sunday, 'whom you thought ſo handſome; though you 'would not have thought her ſo handſome neither, 'if you had ſeen her nearer; but to be ſure ſhe hath 'been carried before the juſtice for being big with 'child. She ſeemed to me to look like a confident 'ſlut; and to be ſure ſhe hath laid the child to young 'Mr. Jones. And all the pariſh ſays Mr. Allworthy 'is ſo angry with young Mr. Jones, that he won't ſee 'him. To be ſure, one can't help pitying the poor 'young man, and yet he doth not deſerve much pity 'neither, for demeaning himſelf with ſuch kind of 'trumpery. Yet he is ſo pretty a gentleman, I ſhould 'be ſorry to have him turned out of doors. I dares 'to ſwear the wench was as willing as he; for ſhe 'was always a forward kind of body. And when 'wenches are ſo coming, young men are not ſo much 'to be blamed neither, for to be ſure they do no more 'than what is natural. Indeed it is beneath them to 'meddle with ſuch dirty draggle tails; and whatever 'happens to them, it is good enough for them. And 'yet to be ſure the vile baggages are moſt in fault. 'I wiſhes, with all my heart, they were well to be 'whipped at the cart's tail; for it is pity they ſhould 'be the ruin of a pretty young gentleman; and no-'body can deny but that Mr. Jones is one of the moſt 'handſomeſt young men that ever——

She was running on thus, when Sophia, with a more peeviſh voice than ſhe had ever ſpoken to her in before, cried, 'Prithee why do'ſt thou trouble me with all 'this ſtuff? What concern have I in what Mr. Jones 'doth? I ſuppoſe you are all alike. And you ſeem 'to me to be angry it was not your own caſe.'

'I, Ma'am!' anſwered Mrs. Honour, 'I am 'ſorry your ladyſhip ſhould have ſuch an opinion of 'me. I am ſure no-body can ſay any ſuch thing of 'me. All the young fellows in the world may go to 'the devil for me. Becauſe I ſaid he was a handſome 'man! Every body ſays it as well as I.—To be ſure,

'I never

'I never thought as it was any harm to ſay a young 'man was handſome; but to be ſure I ſhall never 'think him ſo any more now; for handſome is that 'handſome does. A beggar wench!——

'Stop thy torrent of impertinence,' cries Sophia, 'and ſee whether my father wants me at breakfaſt.'

Mrs. Honour then flung out of the room muttering much to herſelf,——of which——'Marry come 'up, I aſſure you,' was all that could be plainly diſtinguiſhed.

Whether Mrs. Honour really deſerved that ſuſpicion, of which her miſtreſs gave her a hint, is a matter which we cannot indulge our reader's curioſity by reſolving. We will however make him amends in diſcloſing what paſſed in the mind of Sophia.

The reader will be pleaſed to recollect, that a ſecret affection for Mr. Jones had inſenſibly ſtolen into the boſom of this young lady. That it had there grown to a pretty great height before ſhe herſelf had diſcovered it. When ſhe firſt began to perceive its ſymptoms, the ſenſations were ſo ſweet and pleaſing, that ſhe had not reſolution ſufficient to check or repel them; and thus ſhe went on cheriſhing a paſſion of which ſhe never once conſidered the conſequences.

This incident relating to Molly firſt opened her eyes. She now firſt perceived the weakneſs of which ſhe had been guilty; and though it cauſed the utmoſt perturbation in her mind, yet it had the effect of other nauſeous phyſic, and for the time expelled her diſtemper. Its operation indeed was moſt wonderfully quick; and in the ſhort interval, while her maid was abſent, ſo entirely removed all ſymptoms, that when Mrs. Honour returned with a ſummons from her father, ſhe was become perfectly eaſy, and had brought herſelf to a thorough indifference for Mr. Jones.

The diſeaſes of the mind do in almoſt every particular imitate thoſe of the body. For which reaſon, we hope, that learned faculty, for whom we have ſo profound a reſpect, will pardon us the violent hands we have been neceſſitated to lay on ſeve-

ral

ral words and phraſes, which of right belon
them, and without which our deſcriptions
have been often unintelligible.

Now there is no one circumſtance in which
diſtempers of the mind bear a more exact analog
thoſe which are called bodily, than that ap
which both have to a relapſe. This is plain, in
violent diſeaſes of ambition and avarice. I
known ambition, when cured at court by freq
diſappointments, (which are the only phyſic for
to break out again in a conteſt for foreman o
grand jury at an aſſizes; and have heard of a
who had ſo far conquered avarice, as to give
many a ſix-pence, that comforted himſelf, at laſ
his death-bed, by making a crafty and advanta
bargain concerning his enſuing funeral, with a
dertaker who had married his only child.

In the affair of love, which out of ſtrict
formity with the ſtoic philoſophy, we ſhall here
as a diſeaſe, this proneneſs to relapſe is no
conſpicuous. Thus it happened to poor So
upon whom, the very next time ſhe ſaw y
Jones, all the former ſymptoms returned, and
that time cold and hot fits alternately ſeized
heart.

The ſituation of this young lady was now
different from what it had ever been before.
paſſion, which had formerly been ſo exquiſitely
cious, became now a ſcorpion in her boſom.
reſiſted it therefore with her utmoſt force, and
moned every argument her reaſon (which was
prizingly ſtrong for her age) could ſuggeſt, to ſt
and expel it. In this ſhe ſo far ſucceeded, th
began to hope from time and abſence a perfect
She reſolved therefore to avoid Tom Jones as
as poſſible; for which purpoſe ſhe began to cor
a deſign of viſiting her aunt, to which ſhe ma
doubt of obtaining her father's conſent.

But fortune, who had other deſigns in her
put an immediate ſtop to any ſuch proceeding
introducing an accident, which will be relat
the next chapter.

CH

CHAP. XIII.

A dreadful accident which befel Sophia. The gallant behaviour of Jones, and the more dreadful conſequence of that behaviour to the young lady; with a ſhort digreſſion in favour of the female ſex.

MR. Weſtern grew every day fonder and fonder of Sophia, inſomuch that his beloved dogs themſelves almoſt gave place to her in his affections; but as he could not prevail on himſelf to abandon theſe, he contrived very cunningly to enjoy their company, together with that of his daughter, by inſiſting on her riding a hunting with him.

Sophia, to whom her father's word was a law, readily complied with his deſires, though ſhe had not the leaſt delight in a ſport, which was of too rough and maſculine a nature to ſuit with her diſpoſition. She had however, another motive, beſide her obedience, to accompany the old gentleman in the chace; for by her preſence ſhe hoped in ſome meaſure to reſtrain his impetuoſity, and to prevent him from ſo frequently expoſing his neck to the utmoſt hazard.

The ſtrongeſt objection was that which would have formerly been an inducement to her, namely, the frequent meeting with young Jones, whom ſhe had determined to avoid; but as the end of the hunting ſeaſon now approached, ſhe hoped, by a ſhort abſence with her aunt, to reaſon herſelf entirely out of her unfortunate paſſion; and had not any doubt of being able to meet him in the field the ſubſequent ſeaſon without the leaſt danger.

On the ſecond day of her hunting, as ſhe was returning from the chace, and was arrived within a little diſtance from Mr. Weſtern's houſe, her horſe, whoſe mettleſome ſpirit required a better rider, fell ſuddenly to prancing and capering in ſuch a manner, that ſhe was in the moſt imminent peril of falling. Tom Jones, who was at a little diſtance behind, ſaw this, and immediately galloped up to her aſſiſtance. As ſoon as he came up, he leapt from his own horſe, and

and caught hold of her's by the bridle. The unruly beaſt preſently reared himſelf an end on his hind legs, and threw his lovely burthen from his back, and Jones caught her in his arms.

She was ſo affected with the fright, that ſhe was not immediately able to ſatisfy Jones, who was very ſollicitous to know whether ſhe had received any hurt. She ſoon after, however, recovered her ſpirits, aſſured him ſhe was ſafe, and thanked him for the care he had taken of her. Jones anſwered, 'if I have preſerved 'you, madam, I am ſufficiently repaid; for I promiſe 'you I would have ſecured you from the leaſt harm, 'at the expence of a much greater misfortune to my-'ſelf, than I have ſuffered on this occaſion.'

'What misfortune,' replies Sophia, eagerly, 'I 'hope you have come to no miſchief?'

'Be not concerned, madam,' anſwered Jones, 'Heaven be praiſed, you have eſcaped ſo well, con-'ſidering the danger you was in. If I have broke my 'arm, I conſider it as a trifle, in compariſon of what I 'feared upon your account.'

Sophia then ſcreamed out, 'Broke your arm! 'Heaven forbid.'

'I am afraid I have, madam,' ſays Jones, 'but 'I beg you will ſuffer me firſt to take care of you. I 'have a right-hand yet at your ſervice, to help you 'into the next field, whence we have but a very little 'walk to your father's houſe.'

Sophia ſeeing his left arm dangling by his ſide, while he was uſing the other to lead her, no longer doubted of the truth. She now grew much paler than her fears for herſelf had made her before. All her limbs were ſeized with a trembling, inſomuch that Jones could ſcarce ſupport her; and as her thoughts were in no leſs agitation, ſhe could not refrain from giving Jones a look ſo full of tenderneſs, that it almoſt argued a ſtronger ſenſation in her mind, than even grati-tude and pity united can raiſe in the gentleſt female boſom, without the aſſiſtance of a third more powerful paſſion.

Mr. Weſtern, who was advanced at ſome diſtance when this accident happened, was now returned, as

were

were the reſt of the horſe-men. Sophia immediately acquainted them with what had befallen Jones, and begged them to take care of him. Upon which, Weſtern, who had been much alarmed by meeting his daughter's horſe without its rider, and was now overjoyed to find her unhurt, cried out, 'I am glad it is 'no worſe; if Tom hath broken his arm, we will get 'a joiner to mend un again.'

The 'ſquire alighted from his horſe and proceeded to his houſe on foot, with his daughter and Jones. An impartial ſpectator, who had met them on the way, would, on viewing their ſeveral countenances, have concluded Sophia alone to have been the object of compaſſion: for as to Jones, he exulted in having probably ſaved the life of the young lady, at the price only of a broken bone; and Mr. Weſtern, though he was not unconcerned at the accident which had befallen Jones, was, however, delighted in a much higher degree with the fortunate eſcape of his daughter.

The generoſity of Sophia's temper conſtrued this behaviour of Jones into great bravery; and it made a deep impreſſion on her heart: for certain it is, that there is not one quality which ſo generally recommends men to women as this; proceeding, if we believe the common opinion, from that natural timidity of the ſex; 'which is,' ſays Mr. Oſborne, 'ſo great, that a woman is the moſt cowardly of 'all the creatures God ever made.' A ſentiment more remarkable for its bluntneſs than for its truth. Ariſtotle, in his politics, doth them, I believe, more juſtice, when he ſays, 'The modeſty and fortitude 'of men differ from thoſe virtues in women; for 'the fortitude which becomes a woman, would be 'cowardice in a man; and the modeſty which becomes a man, would be pertneſs in a woman.' Nor is there, perhaps, more of truth in the opinion of thoſe who derive the partiality which women are inclined to ſhew to the brave, from this exceſs of their fear. Mr. Bayle, (I think, in his article of Helen) imputes this, and with great probability, to their violent

violent love of glory; for the truth of which, we have the authority of him, who, of all others, ſaw fartheſt into human nature; and who introduces the heroine of his Odyſſey, the great patron of matrimonial love and conſtancy, aſſigning the glory of her huſband as the only ſource of her affection towards him. *.

However this be, certain it is that the accident operated very ſtrongly on Sophia; and, indeed, after much enquiry into the matter, I am inclined to believe, that at this very time, the charming Sophia made no leſs impreſſion on the heart of Jones; to ſay truth, he had for ſome time become ſenſible of the irreſiſtible power of her charms.

CHAP. XIV.

The arrival of a ſurgeon. His operations, and a long dialogue between Sophia and her maid.

WHEN they arrived in Mr. Weſtern's hall, Sophia, who had tottered along with much difficulty, ſunk down in a chair; but by the aſſiſtance of hartſhorn and water, ſhe was prevented from fainting away, and had pretty well recovered her ſpirits, when the ſurgeon, who was ſent for to Jones, appeared. Mr. Weſtern, who imputed theſe ſymptoms in his daughter to her fall, adviſed her to be preſently blooded by way of prevention. In this opinion he was ſeconded by the ſurgeon, who gave ſo many reaſons for bleeding, and quoted ſo many caſes where perſons had miſcarried for want of it, that the 'ſquire became very importunate, and indeed inſiſted preremptorily that his daughter ſhould be blooded.

Sophia ſoon yielded to the commands of her father, though entirely contrary to her own inclinations: for ſhe ſuſpected, I believe, leſs danger from the fright, than either the 'ſquire or the ſurgeon.

* The Engliſh reader will not find this in the poem, for the ſentiment is entirely left out in the tranſlation.

She

She then ſtretched out her beautiful arm, and the operator began to prepare for his work.

While the ſervants were buſied in providng materials; the ſurgeon, who imputed the backwardneſs which had appeared in Sophia to her fears, began to comfort her with aſſurances that there was not the leaſt danger; for no accident, he ſaid, could ever happen in bleeding, but from the monſtrous ignorance of pretenders to ſurgery, which he pretty plainly inſinuated was not at preſent to be apprehended. Sophia declared ſhe was not under the leaſt apprehenſion; adding, if you open an artery, I promiſe you I'll forgive you; 'Will you,' cries Weſtern, 'D—n me, 'if I will; if he does thee the leaſt miſchief, d—n me, 'if I don't ha' the heart's blood o'un out.' The ſurgeon aſſented to bleed her upon theſe conditions, and then proceeded to his operation, which he performed with as much dexterity as he had promiſed; and with as much quickneſs: for he took but little blood from her, ſaying, it was much ſafer to bleed again and again, than to take away too much at once.

Sophia, when her arm was bound up, retired: for ſhe was not willing (nor was it, perhaps, ſtrictly decent) to be preſent at the operation on Jones. Indeed one objection which ſhe had to bleeding, (though ſhe did not make it) was the delay which it would occaſion to ſetting the broken bone. For Weſtern, when Sophia was concerned, had no conſideration, but for her; and as for Jones himſelf, he 'ſat like 'patience on a monument ſmiling at grief.' To ſay the truth, when he ſaw the blood ſpringing from the lovely arm of Sophia, he ſcarce thought of what had happened to himſelf.

The ſurgeon now ordered his patient to be ſtript to his ſhirt, and then entirely baring the arm, he began to ſtretch and examine it, in ſuch a manner, that the tortures he put him to, cauſed Jones to make ſeveral wry faces; which the ſurgeon obſerving, greatly wondered at, crying, 'What is the 'matter, Sir? I am ſure it is impoſſible I ſhould 'hurt you.' And then holding forth the broken

arm, he began a long and very learned lecture of anatomy, in which ſimple and double fractures were moſt accurately conſidered; and the ſeveral ways in which Jones might have broken his arm, were diſcuſſed, with proper annotations, ſhewing how many of theſe would have been better, and how many worſe than the preſent caſe.

Having at length finiſhed his laboured harangue, with which the audience, though it had greatly raiſed their attention and admiration, were not much edified, as they really underſtood not a ſingle ſyllable of all he had ſaid, he proceeded to buſineſs, which he was more expeditious in finiſhing, than he had been in beginning.

Jones was then ordered into a bed, which Mr. Weſtern compelled him to accept at his own houſe, and ſentence of water-gruel was paſſed upon him.

Among the good company which had attended in the hall during the bone-ſetting, Mrs. Honour was one; who being ſummoned to her miſtreſs as ſoon as it was over, and aſked by her how the young gentleman did, preſently launched into extravagant praiſes on the magnimity, as ſhe called it, of his behaviour, which, ſhe ſaid, 'was ſo charming in ſo pretty a 'creature.' She then burſt forth into much warmer encomiums on the beauty of his perſon; enumerating many particulars, and ending with the whiteneſs of his ſkin.

This diſcourſe had an effect on Sophia's countenance, which would not perhaps have eſcaped the obſervance of the ſagacious waiting-woman, had ſhe once looked her miſtreſs in the face, all the time ſhe was ſpeaking; but as a looking-glaſs, which was moſt commodiouſly placed oppoſite to her, gave her an opportunity of ſurveying thoſe features, in which, of all others, ſhe took moſt delight; ſo ſhe had not once removed her eyes from that amiable object during her whole ſpeech.

Mrs. Honour was ſo intirely wrapped up in the ſubject on which ſhe exerciſed her tongue, and the object before her eyes, that ſhe gave her miſtreſs time to conquer her confuſion; which having done,

ſhe

ſhe ſmiled on her maid, and told her, 'ſhe was cer-
'tainly in love with this young fellow.' 'I in love,
'Madam!' anſwers ſhe, 'upon my word, Ma'am,
'I aſſure you Ma'am, upon my ſoul, Ma'am, I am
'not.' 'Why if you was,' cries her miſtreſs, 'I
'ſee no reaſon that you ſhould be aſhamed of it;
'for he is certainly a pretty fellow,'—'Yes, Ma'am,'
anſwered the other, 'that he is, the moſt hand-
'ſomeſt man I ever ſaw in my life. Yes, to be
'ſure that he is, and, as your ladyſhip ſays, I don't
'know why I ſhould be aſhamed of loving him,
'though he is my betters. To be ſure gentle folks
'are but fleſh and blood no more than us ſervants.
'Beſides, as for Mr. Jones, thof 'ſquire Allworthy
'hath made a gentleman of him, he was not ſo good
'as myſelf by birth: for thof I am a poor body, I
'am an honeſt perſon's child, and my father and
'mother were married, which is more than ſome
'people can ſay, as high as they hold their heads.
'Marry, come up! I aſſure you, my dirty couſin!
'thof his ſkin be ſo white, and to be ſure, it is the
'moſt whiteſt that ever was ſeen, I am a chriſtian as
'well as he, and no-body can ſay that I am baſe born;
'my grandfather was a clergyman *, and would have
'been very angry, I believe, to have thought any of
'his family ſhould have taken up with Molly
'Seagrim's dirty leavings.'

Perhaps Sophia might have ſuffered her maid to run on in this manner, from wanting ſufficient ſpirits to ſtop her tongue, which the reader may probably conjecture was no very eaſy taſk: for, certainly there were ſome paſſages in her ſpeech, which were far from being agreeable to the lady. However, ſhe now checked the torrent, as there ſeemed no end of its flowing. 'I wonder,' ſays ſhe, 'at your aſſur-
'ance in daring to talk thus of one of my father's
'friends. As to the wench, I order you never to

* This is the ſecond perſon of low condition whom we have recorded in this hiſtory, to have ſprung from the clergy. It is to be hoped ſuch inſtances will, in future ages, when ſome proviſion is made for the families of the inferior clergy, appear ſtranger than they can be thought at preſent.

'mention her name to me. And, with regard to 'to the young gentleman's birth, thoſe who can ſay 'nothing more to his diſadvantage, may as well be 'ſilent on that head, as I deſire you will be for the 'future.'

'I am ſorry I have offended your ladyſhip,' anſwered Mrs. Honour, 'I am ſure I hate Molly 'Seagrim as much as your ladyſhip can, and as for 'abuſing 'ſquire Jones, I can call all the ſervants 'in the houſe to witneſs, that whenever any talk 'hath been about baſtards, I have always taken his 'part: for which of you,' ſays I to the footman, 'would not be a baſtard, if he could, to be made 'a gentleman of? and,' ſays I, 'I am ſure he is a 'very fine gentleman; and he hath one of the 'whiteſt hands in the world: for to be ſure ſo he 'hath; and,' ſays I, 'one of the ſweeteſt temper-'edeſt, beſt naturedeſt men in the world he is,' and ſays I, 'all the ſervants and neighbours all round 'the country loves him. And, to be ſure, I could 'tell your ladyſhip ſomething, but that I am afraid 'it would offend you.'—'What could you tell me, 'Honour?' ſays Sophia. 'Nay, Ma'am, to be ſure 'he meant nothing by it, therefore I would not have 'your ladyſhip be offended.'—'Prithee tell me,' ſays Sophia.—'I will know it this inſtant.' 'Why, 'Ma'am,' anſwered Mrs. Honour, 'he came into 'the room, one day laſt week when I was at work, 'and there lay your ladyſhip's muff on a chair, and 'to be ſure he put his hands into it, that very muff 'your ladyſhip gave me but yeſterday; La,' ſays I, 'Mr. Jones, you will ſtretch my lady's muff and 'ſpoil it; but he ſtill kept his hands in it, and then 'he kiſſed it—to be ſure, I hardly ever ſaw ſuch a 'kiſs in my life as he gave it.'—'I ſuppoſe he 'did not know it was mine,' replied Sophia. 'Your 'ladyſhip ſhall hear, Ma'am. He kiſſed it again 'and again, and ſaid it was the prettieſt muff in the 'world.' 'La! Sir,' ſays I, 'you have ſeen it a 'hundred times.'—'Yes, Mrs. Honour,' cry'd he: 'but who can ſee any thing beautiful in the pre-'ſence of your lady but herſelf: nay, that's not all

'neither,

'neither, but I hope your ladyſhip won't be offend-
'ed, for to be ſure he meant nothing: one day as
'your ladyſhip was playing on the harpſichord to
'my maſter, Mr. Jones was ſitting in the next
'room, and methought he looked melancholy.
'La! ſays I, Mr. Jones, what's the matter? a
'penny for you thoughts,' ſays I; 'Why, huſſy,'
'ſays he, ſtarting up from a dream, 'what can I be
'thinking of, when that angel your miſtreſs is play-
'ing?' and then ſqueezing me by the hand—'Oh!
'Mrs. Honour,' ſays he, 'how happy will that
'man be!'—and then he ſighed, upon my troth,
'his breath is as ſweet as noſegay—but to be ſure
'he meant no harm by it. So I hope your lady-
'ſhip will not mention a word; for he gave me a
'crown never to mention it, and made me ſwear
'upon a book, but I believe, indeed, it was not the
'bible.'

Till ſomething of a more beautiful red than ver-
million be found out, I ſhall ſay nothing of Sophia's
colour on this occaſion. 'Ho—nour,' ſays ſhe,
'I—if you will not mention this any more to me,—
'nor to any body elſe, I will not betray you—I
'mean I will not be angry: but I am afraid of
'your tongue. Why, my girl, will you give it
'ſuch liberties?' 'Nay, Ma'am' anſwered ſhe,
'to be ſure, I would ſooner cut out my tongue
'than offend your ladyſhip—to be ſure I ſhall
'never mention a word that your ladyſhip would
'not have me.' '—Why I would not have you
'mention this any more.' ſaid Sophia, 'for it may
'come to my father's ears, and he would be angry
'with Mr. Jones, though I really believe, as you
'ſay, he meant nothing. I ſhould be very angry
'myſelf if I imagined'—'Nay, Ma'am,' ſays Honour,
'I proteſt I believe he meant nothing. I thought
'he talked, as if he was out of his ſenſes; nay,
'he ſaid he believed he was beſide himſelf when he
'had ſpoken the words. Ay, Sir,' ſays I, 'I be-
'lieve ſo too.' 'Yes,' ſays he, 'Honour,—but I
'aſk your ladyſhip's pardon; I could tear my
'tongue out for offending you.' 'Go on,' ſays

Sophia, you may mention any thing you have 'not told me before.' 'Yes, Honour,' ſays he, (this was ſome time afterwards when he gave me the crown) 'I am neither ſuch a coxcomb, or ſuch 'a villain as to think of her, in any other delight, 'but as my goddeſs; as ſuch I will always worſhip 'and adore her while I have breath. This was all, 'Ma'am, I will be ſworn, to the beſt of my remem-'brance; I was in a paſſion with him myſelf, till I 'found he meant no harm.' 'Indeed, Honour,' ſays Sophia, 'I believe you have a real affection for 'me; I was provoked the other day when I gave 'you warning; but if you have a deſire to ſtay 'with me, you ſhall.' 'To be ſure, Ma'am,' anſwered Mrs. Honour, 'I ſhall never deſire to 'part with your ladyſhip. To be ſure I almoſt 'cried my eyes out when you gave me warning. It 'would be very ungrateful in me, to deſire to leave 'your ladyſhip; becauſe as why, I ſhould never 'get ſo good a place again. I am ſure I would live 'and die with your ladyſhip—for, as poor Mr. Jones 'ſaid, happy is the man——

Here the dinner-bell interrupted the converſation which had wrought ſuch an effect on Sophia, that ſhe was, perhaps, more obliged to her bleeding in the morning, than ſhe, at the time, had apprehended ſhe ſhould be. As to the preſent ſituation of her mind, I ſhall adhere to a rule of Horace, by not attempting to deſcribe it, from deſpair of ſucceſs. Moſt of my readers will ſuggeſt it eaſily to themſelves; and the few who cannot, would not underſtand the picture, or at leaſt would deny it to be natural, if ever ſo well drawn.

THE

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK V.

Containing a portion of time, ſomewhat longer than half a year.

CHAP. I.

Of THE SERIOUS *in writing, and for what purpoſe it is introduced.*

PEradventure there may be no part in this prodigious work which will give the reader leſs pleaſure in peruſing, than thoſe which have given the author the greateſt pains in compoſing. Among theſe, probably, may be reckoned thoſe initial eſſays which we have prefixed to the hiſtorical matter contained in every book; and which we have determined to be eſſentially neceſſary to this kind of writing, of which we ſet ourſelves at the head.

For this our determination we do not hold ourſelves ſtrictly bound to aſſign any reaſon; it being abundantly ſufficient that we have laid it down as a rule neceſſary to be obſerved in all proſai-comi-epic writing. Who ever demanded the reaſons of that nice unity of time or place which is now eſtabliſhed to be ſo eſſential to dramatic poetry? What critic hath been ever aſked, why a play may not contain two days as well as one? Or why the audience (provided they travel, like electors, without any expence) may not

be waſted fifty miles as well as five? Hath any commentator well accounted for the limitation which an antient critic hath ſet to the drama, which he will have contain neither more nor leſs than five acts? Or hath any one living attempted to explain, what the modern judges of our theatres mean by that word Low; by which they have happily ſucceeded in baniſhing all humour from the ſtage, and have made the theatre as dull as a drawing-room? Upon all theſe occaſions, the world ſeems to have embraced a maxim of our law, viz. *cuicunque in arte ſua perito credendum eſt*: for it ſeems, perhaps, difficult to conceive that any one ſhould have had enough of impudence, to lay down dogmatical rules in any art or ſcience without the leaſt foundation. In ſuch caſes, therefore, we are apt to conclude, there are ſound and good reaſons at the bottom, though we are unfortunately not able to ſee ſo far.

Now, in reality, the world have paid too great a compliment to critics, and have imagined them men of much greater profundity than they really are. From this complaiſance, the critics have been emboldened to aſſume a dictatorial power, and have ſo far ſucceeded, that they are now become the maſters, and have the aſſurance to give laws to thoſe authors, from whoſe predeceſſors they originally received them.

The critic, rightly conſidered, is no more than the clerk, whoſe office it is to tranſcribe the rules and laws laid down by thoſe great judges, whoſe vaſt ſtrength of genius hath placed them in the light of legiſlators, in the ſeveral ſciences over which they preſided. This office was all which the critics of old aſpired to, nor did they ever dare to advance a ſentence, without ſupporting it by the authority of the judge from whence it was borrowed.

But in proceſs of time, and in ages of ignorance, the clerk began to invade the power, and aſſume the dignity of his maſter. The laws of writing were no longer founded on the practice of the author, but on the dictates of the critic. The clerk became the legiſlator, and thoſe very peremptorily gave laws, whoſe buſineſs it was, at firſt, only to tranſcribe them.

Hence

Hence aroſe an obvious, and, perhaps, an unavoidable error: for theſe critics being men of ſhallow capacities, very eaſily miſtook mere form for ſubſtance. They acted as a judge would, who ſhould adhere to the lifeleſs letter of law, and reject the ſpirit. Little circumſtances which were, perhaps, accidental in a great author, were by theſe critics conſidered to conſtitute his chief merit, and tranſmitted as eſſentials to be obſerved by all his ſucceſſors. To theſe encroachments, time and ignorance, the two great ſupporters of impoſture, gave authority; and thus, many rules for good writing have been eſtabliſhed, which have not the leaſt foundation in truth or nature; and which commonly ſerve for no other purpoſe than to curb and reſtrain genius, in the ſame manner as it would have reſtrained the dancing-maſter, had the many excellent treatiſes on that art laid it down as an eſſential rule, that every man muſt dance in chains.

To avoid, therefore, all imputation of laying down a rule for poſterity, founded only on the authority of *ipſe dixit*; for which, to ſay the truth, we have not the profoundeſt veneration, we ſhall here wave the privilege above contended for, and proceed to lay before the reader the reaſons which have induced us to interſperſe theſe ſeveral digreſſive eſſays, in the courſe of this work.

And here we ſhall of neceſſity be led to open a new vein of knowledge, which, if it hath been diſcovered, hath not, to our remembrance, been wrought on by any antient or modern writer. This vein is no other than that of contraſt, which runs through all the works of the creation, and may probably have a large ſhare in conſtituting in us the idea of all beauty, as well natural as artificial: for what demonſtrates the beauty and excellence of any thing, but its reverſe? Thus the beauty of day, and that of ſummer, is ſet off by the horrors of night and winter. And, I believe, if it was poſſible for a man to have ſeen only the two former, he would have a very imperfect idea of their beauty.

But to avoid too ſerious an air: can it be doubted, but that the fineſt woman in the world would loſe all benefit of her charms, in the eye of a man who had never ſeen one of another caſt? The ladies themſelves ſeem ſo ſenſible of this, that they are all induſtrious to procure foils; nay, they will become foils to themſelves: for I have obſerved (at Bath particularly) that they endeavour to appear as ugly as poſſible in the morning, in order to ſet off that beauty which they intend to ſhew you in the evening.

Moſt artiſts have this ſecret in practice, though ſome, perhaps, have not much ſtudied the theory. The jeweller knows that the fineſt brilliant requires a foil; and the painter, by the contraſt of his figures, often acquires great applauſe.

A great genius among us will illuſtrate this matter fully. I cannot, indeed, range him under any general head of common artiſts, as he hath a title to be placed among thoſe

Inventas qui vitam excoluere per artes.

Who by invented arts have life improv'd.

I mean here the inventor of that moſt exquiſite entertainment, called the Engliſh Pantomime.

This entertainment conſiſted of two parts, which the inventor diſtinguiſhed by the names of the ſerious and the comic. The ſerious exhibited a certain number of heathen gods and heroes, who were certainly the worſt and dulleſt company into which an audience was ever introduced; and (which was a ſecret known to few) were actually intended ſo to be, in order to contraſt the comic part of the entertainment, and to diſplay the tricks of harlequin to the better advantage.

This was, perhaps, no very civil uſe of ſuch perſonages; but the contrivance was, nevertheleſs, ingenious enough, and had its effect. And this will now plainly appear, if inſtead of ſerious and comic, we ſupply the words duller and dulleſt; for the comic was certainly duller than any thing before ſhewn on the

the ſtage, and could be ſet off only by that ſuperlative degree of dulneſs, which compoſed the ſerious. So intolerably ſerious, indeed, were theſe gods and heroes, that harlequin (though the Engliſh gentleman of that name is not at all related to the French family, for he is of a much more ſerious diſpoſition) was always welcome on the ſtage, as he relieved the audience from worſe company.

Judicious writers have always practiſed this art of contraſt with great ſucceſs. I have been ſurprized that Horace ſhould cavil at this art in Homer; but indeed he contradicts himſelf in the very next line.

Indignor quandoque bonus dormitat Homerus,
Verùm opere in longo fas eſt obrepere ſomnum.

I grieve if e'er great Homer chance to ſleep,
Yet ſlumbers on long works have right to creep.

For we are not here to underſtand, as, perhaps, ſome have, that an author actually falls aſleep while he is writing. It is true that readers are too apt to be ſo overtaken; but if the work was as long as any of Oldmixon, the author himſelf is too well entertained to be ſubject to the leaſt drowſineſs. He is, as Mr. Pope obſerves,

Sleepleſs himſelf to give his readers ſleep.

To ſay the truth, theſe ſoporific parts are ſo many ſcenes of Serious artfully interwoven, in order to contraſt and ſet off the reſt; and this is the true meaning of a late facetious writer, who told the public, that whenever he was dull, they might be aſſured there was a deſign in it.

In this light then, or rather in this darkneſs, I would have the reader to conſider theſe initial eſſays. And after this warning, if he ſhall be of opinion, that he can find enough of ſerious in other parts of this hiſtory, he may paſs over theſe, in which we profeſs to be laboriouſly dull, and begin the following books at the ſecond chapter.

CHAP. II.

In which Mr. Jones receives many friendly viſits during his confinement; with ſome fine touches of the paſſion of love, ſcarce viſible to the naked eye.

TOM Jones had many viſitors during his confinement, though ſome, perhaps, were not very agreeable to him. Mr. Allworthy ſaw him almoſt every day; but though he pitied Tom's ſufferings, and greatly approved the gallant behaviour which had occaſioned them: yet he thought this was a favourable opportunity to bring him to a ſober ſenſe of his indiſcreet conduct; and that wholeſome advice for that purpoſe could never be applied at a more proper ſeaſon than at the preſent; when the mind was ſoftened by pain and ſickneſs, and alarmed by danger; and when its attention was unembarraſſed with thoſe turbulent paſſions, which engage us in the purſuit of pleaſure.

At all ſeaſons, therefore, when the good man was alone with the youth, eſpecially when the latter was totally at eaſe, he took occaſion to remind him of his former miſcarriages, but in the mildeſt and tendereſt manner, and only in order to introduce the caution, which he preſcribed for his future behaviour; 'on 'which alone,' he aſſured him, 'would depend his 'own felicity, and the kindneſs which he might yet 'promiſe himſelf to receive at the hands of his fa'ther by adoption, unleſs he ſhould hereafter forfeit 'his good opinion: for as to what had paſt,' he ſaid, 'it ſhould be all forgiven and forgotten. He, there'fore, adviſed him to make a good uſe of this accident, that ſo in the end it might prove a viſitation for his 'own good.'

Thwackum was likewiſe pretty aſſiduous in his viſits; and he too conſidered a ſick-bed to be a convenient ſcene for lectures. His ſtile, however, was more ſevere than Mr. Allworthy's: he told his pupil, 'that he ought to look on his broken limb as a judg'ment from heaven on his ſins. That it would be-

'come

'come him to be daily on his knees, pouring forth 'thankſgivings that he had broken his arm only, and 'not his neck; which latter,' he ſaid, 'was very 'probably reſerved for ſome future occaſion, and 'that, perhaps, not very remote. For his part,' he ſaid, 'he had often wondered ſome judgment 'had not overtaken him before; but it might be 'perceived by this, that divine puniſhments, though 'ſlow, are always ſure.' Hence likewiſe he adviſed him, 'to foreſee, with equal certainty, the greater 'evils which were yet behind, and which were as 'ſure as this, of overtaking him in his ſtate of re-'probacy. Theſe are,' ſaid he, 'to be averted only 'by ſuch a thorough and ſincere repentance, as is not 'to be expected or hoped for, from one ſo abandoned 'in his youth, and whoſe mind, I am afraid, is totally 'corrupted. It is my duty, however, to exhort you 'to this repentance, though I too well know all ex-'hortations will be vain and fruitleſs. But *liberavi 'animam meam.* I can accuſe my own conſcience of 'no neglect; though it is at the ſame time, with the 'utmoſt concern, I ſee you travelling on to certain 'miſery in this world, and to as certain damnation in 'the next.'

Square talked in a very different ſtrain; he ſaid, 'Such accidents as a broken bone were below the 'conſideration of a wiſe man. That it was abun-'dantly ſufficient to reconcile the mind to any of theſe 'miſchances, to reflect that they are liable to befal 'the wiſeſt of mankind, and are undoubtedly for the 'good of the whole.' He ſaid, 'it was a mere abuſe 'of words, to call thoſe things evils, in which there 'was no moral unfitneſs: that pain, which was the 'worſt conſequence of ſuch accidents, was the moſt 'contemptible thing in the world;' with more of the like ſentences, extracted out of the ſecond book of Tully's Tuſculan queſtions, and from the great lord Shafteſbury. In pronouncing theſe he was one day ſo eager, that he unfortunately bit his tongue; and in ſuch a manner, that it not only put an end to his diſcourſe, but created much emotion in him, and cauſed him to mutter an oath or two: but what was

worſt

'to-morrow morning, except only the Chevalier and 'Miſs Slouch.' Jones thanked him, but declined accepting the offer.——'Nay,' added the 'ſquire, 'ſhat ha the ſorrel mare that Sophy rode. She coſt 'me fifty guineas, and comes ſix years old this graſs.' 'If ſhe had coſt me a thouſand,' cries Jones paſſionately, 'I would have given her to the dogs.' 'Pooh! 'pooh!' anſwered Weſtern, 'What becauſe ſhe 'broke thy arm. Shouldſt forget and forgive. I 'thought hadſt been more a man than to bear malice 'againſt a dumb creature.'—Here Sophia interpoſed, and put an end to the converſation, by deſiring her father's leave to play to him; a requeſt which he never refuſed.

The countenance of Sophia had undergone more than one change during the foregoing ſpeeches; and probably ſhe imputed the paſſionate reſentment, which Jones had expreſſed againſt the mare, to a different motive from that from which her father had derived it. Her ſpirits were at this time in a viſible flutter; and ſhe played ſo intolerably ill, that had not Weſtern ſoon fallen aſleep, he muſt have remarked it. Jones, however, who was ſufficiently awake, and was not without an ear, any more than without eyes, made ſome obſervations; which being joined to all which the reader may remember to have paſſed formerly, gave him pretty ſtrong aſſurances, when he came to reflect on the whole, that all was not well in the tender boſom of Sophia. An opinion which many young gentlemen will, I doubt not, extremely wonder at his not having been well confirmed in long ago. To confeſs the truth, he had rather too much diffidence in himſelf, and was not forward enough in ſeeing the advances of a young lady; a misfortune which can be cured only by that early town education, which is at preſent ſo generally in faſhion.

When theſe thoughts had fully taken poſſeſſion of Jones, they occaſioned a perturbation in his mind, which, in a conſtitution leſs pure and firm than his, might have been, at ſuch a ſeaſon, attended with very dangerous conſequences. He was truly ſenſible of the great worth of Sophia. He extremely liked her perſon,

perſon, no leſs admired her accompliſhments, and tenderly loved her goodneſs. In reality, as he had never once entertained any thought of poſſeſſing her, nor had ever given the leaſt voluntary indulgence to his inclinations, he had a much ſtronger paſſion for her than he himſelf was acquainted with. His heart now brought forth the full ſecret, at the ſame time that it aſſured him the adorable object returned his affection.

CHAP. III.

Which all who have no heart, will think to contain much ado about nothing.

THE reader will perhaps imagine, the ſenſations which now aroſe in Jones to have been ſo ſweet and delicious, that they would rather tend to produce a chearful ſerenity in the mind, than any of thoſe dangerous effects which we have mentioned; but in fact, ſenſations of this kind, however delicious, are, at their firſt recognition, of a very tumultuous nature, and have very little of the opiate in them. They were, moreover, in the preſent caſe, embittered with certain circumſtances, which being mixed with ſweeter ingredients, tended altogether to compoſe a draught that might be termed bitter-ſweet; than which, as nothing can be more diſagreeable to the palate, ſo nothing, in the metaphorical ſenſe, can be ſo injurious to the mind.

For firſt, though he had ſufficient foundation to flatter himſelf in what he had obſerved in Sophia, he was not yet free from doubt of miſconſtruing compaſſion, or, at beſt, eſteem, into a warmer regard. He was far from a ſanguine aſſurance that Sophia had any ſuch affection towards him, as might promiſe his inclinations that harveſt, which, if they were encouraged and nurſed, they would finally grow up to require. Beſides, if he could hope to find no bar to his happineſs from the daughter, he thought himſelf certain of meeting an effectual bar in the father; who, though he was a country 'ſquire in his diver-

diverſions, was perfectly a man of the world in whatever regarded his fortune; had the moſt violent affection for his only daughter, and had often ſignified, in his cups, the pleaſure he propoſed in ſeeing her married to one of the richeſt men in the county. Jones was not ſo vain and ſenſeleſs a coxcomb as to expect, from any regard which Weſtern had profeſſed for him, that he would ever be induced to lay aſide theſe views of advancing his daughter. He well knew, that fortune is generally the principal, if not the ſole conſideration, which operates on the beſt of parents in theſe matters: for friendſhip makes us warmly eſpouſe the intereſt of others; but it is very cold to the gratification of their paſſions. Indeed, to feel the happineſs which may reſult from this, it is neceſſary we ſhould poſſeſs the paſſion ourſelves. As he had therefore no hopes of obtaining her father's conſent; ſo he thought to endeavour to ſucceed without it, and by ſuch means to fruſtrate the great point of Mr. Weſtern's life, was to make a very ill uſe of his hoſpitality, and a very ungrateful return to the many little favours received (however roughly) at his hands. If he ſaw ſuch a conſequence with horror and diſdain, how much more was he ſhocked with what regarded Mr. Allworthy; to whom, as he had more than filial obligations, ſo had he for him more than filial piety? He knew the nature of that good man to be ſo averſe to any baſeneſs or treachery, that the leaſt attempt of ſuch a kind would make the ſight of the guilty perſon for ever odious to his eyes, and his name a deteſtable ſound in his ears. The appearance of ſuch unſurmountable difficulties was ſufficient to have inſpired him with deſpair, however ardent his wiſhes had been; but even theſe were controuled by compaſſion for another woman. The idea of lovely Molly now intruded itſelf before him. He had ſworn eternal conſtancy in her arms, and ſhe had as often vowed never to outlive his deſerting her. He now ſaw her in all the moſt ſhocking poſtures of death; nay, he conſidered all the miſeries of proſtitution to which ſhe would be liable, and of which

he

he would be doubly the occaſion; firſt by ſeducing, and then by deſerting her; for he well knew the hatred which all her neighbours, and even her own ſiſters, bore her, and how ready they would all be to tear her to pieces. Indeed he had expoſed her to more envy than ſhame, or rather to the latter by means of the former: for many women abuſed her for being a whore, while they envied her her lover and her finery, and would have been themſelves glad to have purchaſed theſe at the ſame rate. The ruin, therefore, of the poor girl muſt, he foreſaw, unavoidably attend his deſerting her; and this thought ſtung him to the ſoul. Poverty and diſtreſs ſeemed to him to give none a right of aggravating thoſe misfortunes. The meanneſs of her condition did not repreſent her miſery as of little conſequence in his eyes, nor did it appear to juſtify, or even to palliate, his guilt, in bringing that miſery upon her. But why do I mention juſtification? His own heart would not ſuffer him to deſtroy a human creature, who, he thought, loved him, and had to that love ſacrificed her innocence. His own good heart pleaded her cauſe; not as a cold venal advocate, but as one intereſted in the event, and which muſt itſelf deeply ſhare in all the agonies its owner brought on another.

When this powerful advocate had ſufficiently raiſed the pity of Jones, by painting poor Molly in all the circumſtances of wretchedneſs; it artfully called in the aſſiſtance of another paſſion, and repreſented the girl in all the amiable colours of youth, health, and beauty, as one greatly the object of deſire, and much more ſo, at leaſt to a good mind, from being, at the ſame time, the object of compaſſion.

Amidſt theſe thoughts, poor Jones paſſed a long ſleepleſs night, and in the morning the reſult of the whole was to abide by Molly, and to think no more of Sophia.

In this virtuous reſolution he continued all the next day till the evening, cheriſhing the idea of Molly, and driving Sophia from his thoughts; but in the fatal evening, a very trifling accident ſet all his paſſions

passions again on float, and worked so total a change in his mind, that we think it decent to communicate it in a fresh chapter.

CHAP. IV.

A little chapter, in which is contained a little incident.

AMONG other visitants, who paid their compliments to the young gentleman in his confinement, Mrs. Honour was one. The reader, perhaps, when he reflects on some expressions which have formerly dropt from her, may conceive that she herself had a very particular affection for Mr. Jones; but, in reality, it was no such thing. Tom was a handsome young fellow; and for that species of men Mrs. Honour had some regard; but this was perfectly indiscriminate: for having been crossed in the love which she bore a certain nobleman's footman, who had basely deserted her after a promise of marriage, she had so securely kept together the broken remains of her heart, that no man had ever since been able to possess himself of any single fragment. She viewed all handsome men with that equal regard and benevolence, which a sober and virtuous mind bears to all the good.—She might, indeed, be called a lover of men, as Socrates was a lover of mankind, preferring one, to another for corporeal, as he for mental qualifications; but never carrying this preference so far as to cause any perturbation in the philosophical serenity of her temper.

The day after Mr. Jones had that conflict with himself, which we have seen in the preceding chapter, Mrs. Honour came into his room, and finding him alone, began in the following manner: 'La, 'Sir, where do you think I have been? I warrants 'you, you would not guess in fifty years; but if 'you did guess, to be sure, I must not tell you 'neither.' 'Nay, if it be something which you 'must not tell me,' said Jones, 'I shall have the 'curiosity to enquire, and I know you will not be 'so barbarous to refuse me.' 'I don't know,' cries she,

ſhe, 'why I ſhould refuſe you neither, for that 'matter; for to be ſure you won't mention it any 'more. And for that matter, if you knew where 'I have been, unleſs you knew what I have been 'about, it would not ſignify much. Nay, I don't 'ſee why it ſhould be kept a ſecret, for my part; 'for to be ſure ſhe is the beſt lady in the world.' Upon this, Jones began to beg earneſtly to be let into this ſecret, and faithfully promiſed not to divulge it. She then proceeded thus: 'Why you muſt 'know, Sir, my young lady ſent me to enquire after 'Molly Seagrim, and to ſee whether the wench 'wanted any thing; to be ſure, I did not care to go, 'methinks; but ſervants muſt do what they are 'ordered.—How could you undervalue yourſelf ſo, 'Mr. Jones?—So my lady bid me go, and carry 'her ſome linen, and other things.—She is too 'good. If ſuch forward ſluts were ſent to Bridewell, 'it would be better for them. I told my lady, ſays I, 'Madam, your la'ſhip is encouraging idleneſs—.' 'And was my Sophia ſo good?' ſays Jones.—'My Sophia! I aſſure you, marry come up,' anſwered Honour. 'And yet if you knew all,—in-'deed, if I was as Mr. Jones, I ſhould look a little 'higher than ſuch trumpery as Molly Seagrim.' 'What do you mean by theſe words,' replied Jones, 'If I knew all?' 'I mean what I mean,' ſays Honour. 'Don't you remember putting your hands 'in my lady's muff once? I vow I could almoſt find 'in my heart to tell, if I was certain my lady would 'never come to the hearing on't.'—Jones then made ſeveral ſolemn proteſtations. And Honour proceeded,—'then to be ſure, my lady gave me that 'muff; and afterwards, upon hearing what you had 'done.'—'Then you told her what I had done!' interrupted Jones. 'If I did, Sir,' anſwered ſhe, 'you need not be angry with me. Many's the man 'would have given his head to have had my lady told, 'if they had known—for, to be ſure, the biggeſt 'lord in the land might be proud—but, I proteſt, 'I have a great mind not to tell you.' Jones fell to

entreaties

entreaties, and ſoon prevailed on her to go on thus. 'You muſt know then, Sir, that my lady had given 'this muff to me; but about a day or two after I 'had told her the ſtory, ſhe quarrels with her new 'muff, and to be ſure it is the prettieſt that ever was 'ſeen. Honour, ſays ſhe,—this is an odious muff; 'it is too big for me,—I can't wear it—till I can 'get another, you muſt let me have my old one again, 'and you may have this in the room on't—for ſhe's 'a good lady, and ſcorns to give a thing and take 'a thing, I promiſe you that. So to be ſure I fetched 'it her back again, and, I believe, ſhe hath worn it 'upon her arm almoſt ever ſince, and I warrants hath 'given it many a kiſs when no-body hath ſeen her.'

Here the converſation was interrupted by Mr. Weſtern himſelf, who came to ſummon Jones to the harpſichord; whither the poor young fellow went all pale and trembling. This Weſtern obſerved, but on ſeeing Mrs. Honour, imputed it to a wrong cauſe; and having given Jones a hearty curſe between jeſt and earneſt, he bid him beat abroad, and not poach up the game in his warren.

Sophia looked this evening with more than uſual beauty, and we may believe it was no ſmall addition to her charms, in the eye of Mr. Jones, that ſhe now happened to have on her right arm this very muff.

She was playing one of her father's favourite tunes, and he was leaning on her chair, when the muff fell over her fingers, and put her out. This ſo diſconcerted the 'ſquire, that he ſnatched the muff from her, and with a hearty curſe threw it into the fire. Sophia inſtantly ſtarted up, and with the utmoſt eagerneſs recovered it from the flames.

Though this incident will probably appear of little conſequence to many of our readers; yet, trifling as it was, it had ſo violent an effect on poor Jones, that we thought it our duty to relate it. In reality, there are many little circumſtances too often omitted by injudicious hiſtorians, from which events of the utmoſt importance ariſe. The world may indeed be conſidered as a vaſt machine, in which the great wheels are generally ſet in motion by thoſe which are very

minute,

minute, and almoſt imperceptible to any but the ſtrongeſt eyes.

Thus, not all the charms of the incomparable Sophia; not all the dazzling brightneſs, and languiſhing ſoftneſs of her eyes; the harmony of her voice, and of her perſon; not all her wit, good-humour, greatneſs of mind, or ſweetneſs of diſpoſition, had been able ſo abſolutely to conquer and enſlave the heart of poor Jones, as this little incident of the muff. Thus the poet ſweetly ſings of Troy.

——— *Captique dolis lachrymiſque coacti*
Quos neque Tydides, nec Lariſſæus Achilles,
Non anni domuere decem, non mille Carinæ.

What Diomede, or Thetis' greater ſon,
A thouſand ſhips, nor ten years ſiege had done,
Falſe tears, and fawning words, the city won.

The citadel of Jones was now taken by ſurprize. All thoſe conſiderations of honor and prudence, which our hero had lately with ſo much military wiſdom placed as guards over the avenues of his heart, ran away from their poſts, and the god of love marched in in triumph.

CHAP. V.

A very long chapter, containing a very great incident.

BUT though this victorious deity eaſily expelled his avowed enemies from the heart of Jones, he found it more difficult to ſupplant the garriſon which he himſelf had placed there. To lay aſide all allegory, the concern for what muſt become of poor Molly, greatly diſturbed and perplexed the mind of the worthy youth. The ſuperior merit of Sophia totally eclipſed, or rather extinguiſhed, all the beauties of the poor girl; but compaſſion inſtead of contempt ſucceeded to love. He was convinced the girl had placed all her affections, and all her proſpect of future happineſs in him only. For this he had, he knew, given ſufficient

ficient occaſion, by the utmoſt profuſion of tenderneſs towards her: a tenderneſs which he had taken every means to perſuade her he would always maintain. She, on her ſide, had aſſured him of her firm belief in his promiſe, and had with the moſt ſolemn vows declared, that on his fulfilling, or breaking theſe promiſes, it depended, whether ſhe ſhould be the happieſt or moſt miſerable of woman kind. And to be the author of this higheſt degree of miſery to a human being, was a thought on which he could not bear to ruminate a ſingle moment. He conſidered this poor girl as having ſacrificed to him every thing in her little power; as having been at her own expence the object of his pleaſure; as ſighing and languiſhing for him even at that very inſtant. Shall then, ſays he, my recovery, for which ſhe hath ſo ardently wiſhed; ſhall my preſence which ſhe hath ſo eagerly expected, inſtead of giving her that joy with which ſhe hath flattered herſelf, caſt her at once down into miſery and deſpair? Can I be ſuch a villain? Here, when the genius of poor Molly ſeemed triumphant, the love of Sophia towards him, which now appeared no longer dubious, ruſhed upon his mind, and bore away every obſtacle before it.

At length it occurred to him, that he might poſſibly be able to make Molly amends another way; namely, by giving her a ſum of money. This, nevertheleſs, he almoſt deſpaired of her accepting, when he recollected the frequent and vehement aſſurances he had received from her, that the world put in balance with him would make her no amends for his loſs. However, her extreme poverty, and chiefly her egregious vanity (ſomewhat of which hath been already hinted to the reader,) gave him ſome little hope, that notwithſtanding all her avowed tenderneſs, ſhe might in time be brought to content herſelf with a fortune ſuperior to her expectation, and which might indulge her vanity, by ſetting her above all her equals. He reſolved therefore, to take the firſt opportunity of making a propoſal of this kind.

One day accordingly, when his arm was ſo well recovered, that he could walk eaſily with it ſlung in a ſaſh,

ſaſh, he ſtole forth, at a ſeaſon when the 'ſquire was engaged in his field exerciſes, and viſited his fair one. Her mother and ſiſters, whom he found taking their tea, informed him firſt that Molly was not at home; but afterwards, the eldeſt ſiſter acquainted him, with a malicious ſmile, that ſhe was above ſtairs a-bed. Tom had no objection to this ſituation of his miſtreſs, and immediately aſcended the ladder which led towards her bed-chamber; but when he came to the top, he, to his great ſurprize, found the door faſt; nor could he for ſome time obtain any anſwer from within; for Molly, as ſhe herſelf afterwards informed him, was faſt aſleep.

The extremes of grief and joy have been remarkable to produce very ſimilar effects; and when either of theſe ruſhes on us by ſurprize, it is apt to create ſuch a total perturbation and confuſion, that we are often thereby deprived of the uſe of all our faculties. It cannot therefore be wondered at, that the unexpected ſight of Mr. Jones ſhould ſo ſtrongly operate on the mind of Molly, and ſhould overwhelm her with ſuch confuſion, that for ſome minutes ſhe was unable to expreſs the great raptures, with which the reader will ſuppoſe ſhe was affected on this occaſion. As for Jones, he was ſo entirely poſſeſſed, and as it were enchanted by the preſence of his beloved object, that he for a while forgot Sophia, and conſequently the principal purpoſe of his viſit.

This, however, ſoon occurred to his memory; and after the firſt tranſports of their meeting were over, he found means by degrees to introduce a diſcourſe on the fatal conſequences which muſt attend their amour, if Mr. Allworthy, who had ſtrictly forbidden him ever ſeeing her more, ſhould diſcover that he ſtill carried on this commerce. Such a diſcovery, which his enemies gave him reaſon to think would be unavoidable, muſt, he ſaid, end in his ruin, and conſequently in hers'. Since, therefore, their hard fates had determined that they muſt ſeparate, he adviſed her to bear it with reſolution, and ſwore he would never omit any opportunity through the courſe of his life, of ſhewing her the ſincerity of his affec-

tion, by providing for her in a manner beyond her utmoſt expectation, or even beyond her wiſhes, if ever that ſhould be in his power; concluding at laſt, that ſhe might ſoon find ſome man who would marry her, and who would make her much happier than ſhe could be by leading a diſreputable life with him.

Molly remained a few moments in ſilence, and then burſting into a flood of tears, ſhe began to upbraid him in the following words: 'And this is 'your love for me, to forſake me in this manner, 'now you have ruined me? How often, when I have 'told you that all men are falſe and perjury alike, and 'grow tired of us as ſoon as ever they have had 'their wicked wills of us, how often have you ſworn 'you would never forſake me? And can you be ſuch 'a perjury man after all? What ſignifies all the riches 'in the world to me without you, now you have 'gained my heart, ſo you have — you have —? 'Why do you mention another man to me? I can 'never love any other man as long as I live. All 'other men are nothing to me. If the greateſt 'ſquire 'in all the country would come a ſuiting to me to-'morrow, I would not give my company to him. 'No, I ſhall always hate and deſpiſe the whole 'ſex for your ſake.'——

She was proceeding thus, when an accident put a ſtop to her tongue, before it had run out half its career. The room, or rather garret, in which Molly lay, being up one pair of ſtairs, that is to ſay, at the top of the houſe, was of a ſloping figure, reſembling the great Delta of the Greeks. The Engliſh reader may, perhaps, form a better idea of it, by being told, that it was impoſſible to ſtand upright any where but in the middle. Now, as this room wanted the conveniency of a cloſet, Molly had, to ſupply that defect, nailed up an old rug againſt the rafters of the houſe, which encloſed a little hole where her beſt apparel, ſuch as the remains of that ſack which we have formerly mentioned, ſome caps, and other things with which ſhe had lately provided herſelf, were hung up and ſecured from the duſt.

This

This incloſed place exactly fronted the foot of the bed, to which, indeed, the rug hung ſo near, that it ſerved, in a manner, to ſupply the want of curtains. Now, whether Molly in the agonies of her rage, puſhed this rug with her feet; or, Jones might touch it; or whether the pin or nail gave way of its own accord, I am not certain; but as Molly pronounced theſe laſt words, which are recorded above, the wicked rug got looſe from its faſtning, and diſcovered every thing hid behind it; where among other female utenſils appeared —— (with ſhame I write it, and with ſorrow will it be read) —— the philoſopher Square, in a poſture (for the place would not near admit his ſtanding upright) as ridiculous as can poſſibly be conceived.

The poſture, indeed, in which he ſtood, was not greatly unlike that of a ſoldier who is tied neck and heels; or rather reſembling the attitude in which we often ſee fellows in the public ſtreets of London, who are not ſuffering but deſerving puniſhment by ſo ſtanding. He had a night-cap belonging to Molly on his head, and his two large eyes the moment the rug fell, ſtared directly at Jones; ſo that when the idea of philoſophy was added to the figure now diſcovered, it would have been very difficult for any ſpectator to have refrained from immoderate laughter.

I queſtion not but the ſurprize of the reader will be here equal to that of Jones; as the ſuſpicions which muſt ariſe from the appearance of this wiſe and grave man in ſuch a place, may ſeem ſo inconſiſtent with that character, which he hath, doubtleſs, maintained hitherto, in the opinion of every one.

But to confeſs the truth, this inconſiſtency is rather imaginary than real. Philoſophers are compoſed of fleſh and blood as well as other human creatures; and however ſublimated and refined the theory of theſe may be, a little practical frailty is as incident to them as to other mortals. It is indeed in theory only and not in practice, as we have before hinted, that conſiſts the difference: for though ſuch great beings think much better and more wiſely, they always act exactly like other men. They know very well how to ſubdue

all appetites and paſſions, and to deſpiſe both pain and pleaſure; and this knowledge affords much delightful contemplation, and is eaſily acquired; but the practice would be vexatious and troubleſome; and, therefore, the ſame wiſdom which teaches them to know this, teaches them to avoid carrying it into execution.

Mr. Square happened to be at church, on that Sunday, when, as the reader may be pleaſed to remember, the appearance of Molly in her ſack had cauſed all that diſturbance. Here he firſt obſerved her, and was ſo pleaſed with her beauty, that he prevailed with the young gentleman to change their intended ride that evening, that he might paſs by the habitation of Molly, and, by that means, might obtain a ſecond chance of ſeeing her. This reaſon, however, as he did not at that time mention to any, ſo neither did we think proper to communicate it then to the reader.

Among other particulars which conſtituted the unfitneſs of things in Mr. Square's opinion, danger and difficulty were two. The difficulty, therefore, which he apprehended there might be in corrupting this young wench, and the danger which would accrue to his character on the diſcovery, were ſuch ſtrong diſſuaſives, that it is probable, he at firſt intended to have contented himſelf with the pleaſing ideas which the ſight of beauty furniſhes us with. Theſe the graveſt men, after a full meal of ſerious meditation, often allow themſelves by way of deſert: for which purpoſe, certain books and pictures find their way into the moſt private receſſes of their ſtudy, and a certain liquoriſh part of natural philoſophy is often the principal ſubject of their converſation.

But when the philoſopher heard a day or two afterwards, that the fortreſs of virtue had already been ſubdued, he began to give a larger ſcope to his deſires. His appetite was not of that ſqueamiſh kind which cannot feed on a dainty becauſe another hath taſted it. In ſhort, he liked the girl the better for the want of that chaſtity, which, if ſhe had poſſeſſed it, muſt

muſt have been a bar to his pleaſures; he purſued, and obtained her.

The reader will be miſtaken, if he thinks Molly gave Square the preference to her younger lover: on the contrary, had ſhe been confined to the choice of one only, Tom Jones would, undoubtedly, have been, of the two, the victorious perſon. Nor was it ſolely the conſideration that two are better than one (though this had its proper weight) to which Mr. Square owed his ſucceſs; the abſence of Jones during his confinement was an unlucky circumſtance; and in that interval, ſome well choſen preſents from the philoſopher ſo ſoftened and unguarded the girl's heart, that a favourable opportunity became irreſiſtible, and Square triumphed over the poor remains of virtue which ſubſiſted in the boſom of Molly.

It was now about a fortnight ſince this conqueſt, when Jones paid the above-mentioned viſit to his miſtreſs, at a time when ſhe and Square were in bed together. This was the true reaſon why the mother denied her, as we have ſeen; for as the old woman ſhared in the profits ariſing from the iniquity of her daughter, ſhe encouraged and protected her in it to the utmoſt of her power; but ſuch was the envy and hatred which the eldeſt ſiſter bore towards Molly, that notwithſtanding ſhe had ſome part of the booty, ſhe would willingly have parted with this to ruin her ſiſter and ſpoil her trade. Hence ſhe had acquainted Jones with her being above ſtairs in bed, in hopes that he might have caught her in Square's arms. This, however, Molly found means to prevent, as the door was faſtened; which gave her an opportunity of conveying her lover behind that rug or blanket where he now was unhappily diſcovered.

Square no ſooner made his appearance than Molly flung herſelf back in her bed, cried out ſhe was undone, and abandoned herſelf to deſpair. This poor girl, who was yet but a novice in her buſineſs, had not arrived to that perfection of aſſurance which helps off a town lady in any extremity; and either prompts her with an excuſe, or elſe inſpires her to brazen out the matter with her huſband; who from

love of quiet, or out of fear of his reputation, and ſometimes, perhaps, from fear of the gallant, who, like one Mr. Conſtant in the play, wears a ſword, is glad to ſhut his eyes, and contented to put his horns in his pocket. Molly, on the contrary, was ſilenced by this evidence, and very fairly gave up a cauſe which ſhe had hitherto maintained with ſo many tears, and with ſuch ſolemn and vehement proteſtations of the pureſt love and conſtancy.

As to the gentleman behind the arras, he was not in much leſs conſternation. He ſtood for a while motionleſs, and ſeemed equally at a loſs what to ſay, or wither to direct his eyes. Jones, though perhaps the moſt aſtoniſhed of the three, firſt found his tongue; and, being immediately recovered from thoſe uneaſy ſenſations, which Molly by her upbraidings had occaſioned, he burſt into a loud laughter, and then ſaluting Mr. Square, advanced to take him by the hand, and to relieve him from his place of confinement.

Square, being now arrived in the middle of the room, in which part only he could ſtand upright, looked at Jones with a very grave countenance, and ſaid to him, 'Well, Sir, I ſee you enjoy this mighty 'diſcovery, and, I dare ſwear, taſte great delight in 'the thoughts of expoſing me; but if you will con-'ſider the matter fairly, you will find you are your-'ſelf only to blame. I am not guilty of corrupting 'innocence. I have done nothing for which that 'part of the world which judges of matters by the 'rule of right, will condemn me. Fitneſs is go-'verned by the nature of things, and not by cuſ-'toms, forms, or municipal laws. Nothing is indeed 'unfit, which is not unnatural.' 'Well reaſoned, 'old boy,' anſwered Jones: 'but why doſt thou 'think that I ſhould deſire to expoſe thee? I pro-'miſe thee, I was never better pleaſed with thee in 'my life; and unleſs thou haſt a mind to diſcover it 'thyſelf, this affair may remain a profound ſecret for 'me.' 'Nay, Mr. Jones,' replied Square, 'I 'would not be thought to undervalue reputation. 'Good fame is a ſpecies of the KALON, and it is by

'no

'no means fitting to neglect it. Beſides, to murder 'one's own reputation is a kind of ſuicide, a deteſt-'able and odious vice. If you think proper, therefore, 'to conceal any infirmity of mine, (for ſuch I may 'have, ſince no man is perfectly perfect) I promiſe 'you I will not betray myſelf. Things may be fitting 'to be done, which are not fitting to be boaſted of; 'for by the perverſe judgment of the world, that 'often becomes the ſubject of cenſures, which is, 'in truth, not only innocent but laudable.' 'Right!' cries Jones, 'what can be more innocent than the 'indulgence of a natural appetite? or what more 'laudable than the propagation of our ſpecies?' 'To be ſerious with you,' anſwered Square, 'I 'profeſs they always appeared ſo to me.' 'And 'yet,' ſaid Jones, 'you was of a different opinion, 'when my affair with this girl was firſt diſcovered.' 'Why, I muſt confeſs,' ſays Square, 'as the 'matter was miſrepreſented to me by that parſon 'Thwackum, I might condemn the corruption of 'innocence: it was that, Sir, it was that—and 'that—: for you muſt know, Mr. Jones, in the 'conſideration of fitneſs, very minute circumſtances, 'Sir, very minute circumſtances cauſe great altera-'tion.'—'Well, cries Jones, 'be that as it will, 'it ſhall be your own fault, as I have promiſed you, 'if you ever hear any more of this adventure. Be-'have kindly to the girl, and I will never open my 'lips concerning the matter to any one. And, Molly, 'do you be faithful to your friend, and I will not only 'forgive your infidelity to me, but will do you all the 'ſervice I can.' So ſaying, he took a haſty leave, and ſlipping down the ladder retired with much expedition.

Square was rejoiced to find this adventure was likely to have no worſe concluſion, and as for Molly, being recovered from her confuſion, ſhe began at firſt to upbraid Square with having been the occaſion of her loſs of Jones; but that gentleman ſoon found the means of mitigating her anger, partly by careſſes, and partly by a ſmall noſtrum from his purſe, of wonderful and approved efficacy in purging off the ill

humours of the mind, and in reſtoring it to a good temper.

She then poured forth a vaſt profuſion of tenderneſs towards her new lover; turned all ſhe had ſaid to Jones, and Jones himſelf, into ridicule; and vowed, though he once had the poſſeſſion of her perſon, that none but Square had ever been maſter of her heart.

CHAP. VI.

By comparing which with the former, the reader may poſſibly correct ſome abuſe which he hath formerly been guilty of in the application of the word LOVE.

THE infidelity of Molly, which Jones had now diſcovered, would, perhaps, have vindicated a much greater degree of reſentment than he expreſſed on the occaſion; and if he had abandoned her directly from that moment, very few, I believe, would have blamed him.

Certain, however, it is, that he ſaw her in the light of compaſſion; and though his love to her was not of that kind which could give him any great uneaſineſs at her inconſtancy; yet he was not a little ſhocked at reflecting that he had himſelf originally corrupted her innocence; for to this corruption he imputed all the vice into which ſhe appeared now ſo likely to plunge herſelf.

This conſideration gave him no little uneaſineſs, till Betty, the elder ſiſter, was ſo kind, ſome time afterwards, entirely to cure him by a hint, that one Will Barnes, and not himſelf, had been the firſt ſeducer of Molly; and that the little child, which he had hitherto ſo certainly concluded to be his own, might very probably have an equal title, at leaſt, to claim Barnes for its father.

Jones eagerly purſued this ſcent when he had firſt received it; and in a very ſhort time was ſufficiently aſſured that the girl had told him truth, not only by the confeſſion of the fellow, but, at laſt, by that of Molly herſelf.

This

This Will Barnes was a country gallant, and had acquired as many trophies of this kind as any enſign or attorney's clerk in the kingdom. He had, indeed, reduced ſeveral women to a ſtate of utter profligacy, had broke the hearts of ſome, and had the honour of occaſioning the violent death of one poor girl, who had either drowned herſelf, or, what was rather more probable, had been drowned by him.

Among other of his conqueſts, this fellow had triumphed over the heart of Betty Seagrim. He had made love to her long before Molly was grown to be a fit object of that paſtime; but had afterwards deſerted her and applied to her ſiſter, with whom he had almoſt immediate ſucceſs. Now Will had, in reality, the ſole poſſeſſion of Molly's affection, while Jones and Square were almoſt equally ſacrifices to her intereſt, and to her pride.

Hence had grown that implacable hatred which we have ſeen before raging in the mind of Betty; though we did not think it neceſſary to aſſign this cauſe ſooner, as envy itſelf alone was inadequate to all the effects we have mentioned.

Jones was become perfectly eaſy by poſſeſſion of this ſecret with regard to Molly; but as to Sophia, he was far from being in a ſtate of tranquillity; nay, indeed, he was under the moſt violent perturbation: his heart was now, if I may uſe the metaphor, entirely evacuated, and Sophia took abſolute poſſeſſion of it. He loved her with an unbounded paſſion, and plainly ſaw the tender ſentiments ſhe had for him; yet could not this aſſurance leſſen his deſpair of obtaining the conſent of her father, nor the horrors which attended his purſuit of her by any baſe or treacherous method.

The injury which he muſt thus do to Mr. Weſtern, and the concern which muſt accrue to Mr. Allworthy, were circumſtances that tormented him all day, and haunted him on his pillow at night. His life was a conſtant ſtruggle between honour and inclination, which alternately triumphed over each other in his mind. He often reſolved, in the abſence of Sophia, to leave her father's houſe, and to ſee her no

more; and as often, in her preſence, forgot all thoſe reſolutions, and determined to purſue her at the hazard of his life, and at the forfeiture of what was much dearer to him.

This conflict began ſoon to produce very ſtrong and viſible effects: for he loſt all his uſual ſprightlineſs and gaiety of temper, and became not only melancholy when alone, but dejected and abſent in company; nay, if ever he put on a forced mirth, to comply with Mr. Weſtern's humour, the conſtraint appeared ſo plain, that he ſeemed to have been giving the ſtrongeſt evidence of what he endeavoured to conceal by ſuch oſtentation.

It may, perhaps, be a queſtion, whether the art which he uſed to conceal his paſſion, or the means which honeſt nature employed to reveal it, betrayed him moſt: for while art made him more than ever reſerved to Sophia, and forbad him to addreſs any of his diſcourſe to her; nay, to avoid meeting her eyes, with the utmoſt caution; nature was no leſs buſy in counterplotting him. Hence at the approach of the young lady, he grew pale; and if this was ſudden, ſtarted. If his eyes accidentally met her's, the blood ruſhed into his cheeks, and his countenance became all over ſcarlet. If common civility ever obliged him to ſpeak to her, as to drink her health at table, his tongue was ſure to faulter. If he touched her, his hand, nay his whole frame trembled. And if any diſcourſe tended, however remotely, to raiſe the idea of love, an involuntary ſigh ſeldom failed to ſteal from his boſom. Moſt of which accidents nature was wonderfully induſtrious to throw daily in his way.

All theſe ſymptoms eſcaped the notice of the 'ſquire; but not ſo of Sophia. She ſoon perceived theſe agitations of mind in Jones, and was at no loſs to diſcover the cauſe; for indeed ſhe recognized it in her own breaſt. And this recognition is, I ſuppoſe, that ſympathy which hath been ſo often noted in lovers, and which will ſufficiently account for her being ſo much quicker-ſighted than her father.

But, to ſay the truth, there is a more ſimple and plain method of accounting for that prodigious ſuperiority

riority of penetration which we muſt obſerve in ſome men over the reſt of the human ſpecies, and one which will ſerve not only in the caſe of lovers, but of all others. From whence it is that the knave is generally ſo quick-ſighted to thoſe ſymptoms and operations of knavery which often dupe an honeſt man of a much better underſtanding? There ſurely is no general ſympathy among knaves, nor have they, like free-maſons, any common ſign of communication. In reality, it is only becauſe they have the ſame thing in their heads, and their thoughts are turned the ſame way. Thus, that Sophia ſaw, and that Weſtern did not ſee the plain ſymptoms of love in Jones can be no wonder, when we conſider that the idea of love never entered into the head of the father, whereas the daughter, at preſent, thought of nothing elſe.

When Sophia was well ſatisfied of the violent paſſion which tormented poor Jones, and no leſs certain that ſhe herſelf was its object, ſhe had not the leaſt difficulty in diſcovering the true cauſe of his preſent behaviour. This highly endeared him to her, and raiſed in her mind two of the beſt affections which any lover can wiſh to raiſe in a miſtreſs. Theſe were eſteem and pity; for ſure the moſt outrageouſly rigid among her ſex will excuſe her pitying a man, whom ſhe ſaw miſerable on her own account; nor can they blame her for eſteeming one who viſibly, from the moſt honourable motive, endeavoured to ſmother a flame in his own boſom, which, like the famous Spartan theft, was preying upon and conſuming his very vitals. Thus his backwardneſs, his ſhunning her, his coldneſs and his ſilence, were the forwardeſt, the moſt diligent, the warmeſt, and moſt eloquent advocates; and wrought ſo violently on her ſenſible and tender heart, that ſhe ſoon felt for him all thoſe gentle ſenſations which are conſiſtent with a virtuous and elevated female mind.—In ſhort, all which eſteem, gratitude, and pity, can inſpire in ſuch, towards an agreeable man.—Indeed, all which the niceſt delicacy can allow.—In a word,—ſhe was in love with him to diſtraction.

One day this young couple accidentally met in the garden, at the end of two walks, which were both

bounded by that canal in which Jones had formerly riſqued drowning to retrieve the little bird that Sophia had there loſt.

This place had been of late much frequented by Sophia. Here ſhe uſed to ruminate, with a mixture of pain and pleaſure, on an incident, which, however trifling in itſelf, had poſſibly ſown the firſt ſeeds of that affection which was now arrived to ſuch maturity in her heart.

Here then this young couple met. They were almoſt cloſe together before either of them knew any thing of the other's approach. A bye-ſtander would have diſcovered ſufficient marks of confuſion in the countenance of each; but they felt too much themſelves to make any obſervation. As ſoon as Jones had a little recovered his firſt ſurprize, he accoſted the young lady with ſome of the ordinary forms of ſalutation, which ſhe in the ſame manner returned, and their converſation began, as uſual, on the delicious beauty of the morning. Hence they paſt to the beauty of the place, on which Jones launched forth very high encomiums. When they came to the tree whence he had formerly tumbled into the canal, Sophia could not help reminding him of that accident, and ſaid, 'I fancy, Mr. Jones, you have ſome little ſhuddering 'when you ſee that water.' 'I aſſure you, Madam,' anſwered Jones, 'the concern you felt at the loſs of 'your little bird, will always appear to me the higheſt 'circumſtance in that adventure. Poor little Tommy, 'there is the branch he ſtood upon. How could the 'little wretch have the folly to fly away from that 'ſtate of happineſs in which I had the honour to place 'him? His fate was a juſt puniſhment for his ingratitude.' 'Upon my word, Mr. Jones,' ſaid ſhe, 'your gallantry very narrowly eſcaped as ſevere a fate. 'Sure the remembrance muſt affect you.' 'Indeed, 'Madam,' anſwered he, 'if I have any reaſon to 'reflect with ſorrow on it, it is, perhaps, that the 'water had not been a little deeper, by which I might 'have eſcaped many bitter heart-achs, that fortune 'ſeems to have in ſtore for me.' 'Fie, Mr. Jones,' replied Sophia, 'I am ſure you cannot be in earneſt

'now.

'now. This affected contempt of life is only an ex-
'ceſs of your complaiſance to me. You would endea-
'vour to leſſen the obligation of having twice ven-
'tured it for my ſake. Beware the third time.'—
She ſpoke theſe laſt words with a ſmile and a ſoftneſs inexpreſſible. Jones anſwered with a ſigh, 'He feared
'it was already too late for caution;'—and then look-
ing tenderly and ſtedfaſtly on her, he cry'd, 'Oh!
'Miſs Weſtern,—Can you deſire me to live! Can you
'wiſh me ſo ill?'—Sophia looking down on the ground, anſwered with ſome heſitation, 'Indeed, Mr.
'Jones, I do not wiſh you ill.'—'Oh! I know too
'well that heavenly temper,' cries Jones, 'that di-
'vine goodneſs which is beyond every other charm.'
'Nay, now,' anſwered ſhe, 'I underſtand you not.—
'I can ſtay no longer.'—'I,—I would not be under-
'ſtood,' cries he, 'nay I can't be underſtood. I
'know not what I ſay. Meeting you here ſo unex-
'pectedly,—I have been unguarded—for heaven's
'ſake pardon me, if I have ſaid any thing to offend
'you—I did not mean it—indeed, I would rather
'have died—nay, the very thought would kill me.'
'You ſurprize me,' anſwered ſhe,—'How can you
'poſſibly think you have offended me?' 'Fear, Ma-
'dam,' ſays he, 'eaſily runs into madneſs; and there
'is no degree of fear like that which I feel of offend-
'ing you. How can I ſpeak then? Nay don't look
'angrily at me, one frown will deſtroy me.—I mean
'nothing.—Blame my eyes, or blame thoſe beauties.
'—What am I ſaying? Pardon me if I have ſaid too
'much. My heart overflowed. I have ſtruggled with
'my love to the utmoſt. and have endeavoured to con-
'ceal a fever which preys on my vitals, and will, I
'hope, ſoon make it impoſſible for me ever to offend
'you more.'

Mr. Jones now fell a trembling as if he had been ſhaken with the fit of an ague. Sophia, who was in a ſituation not very different from his, anſwered in theſe words: 'Mr. Jones, I will not affect to miſunder-
'ſtand you; indeed I underſtand you too well; but
'for heaven's ſake, if you have any affection for me,

'let

'let me make the beſt of my way into the houſe. I 'wiſh I may be able to ſupport myſelf thither.'

Jones, who was hardly able to ſupport himſelf, offered her his arm, which ſhe condeſcended to accept, but begged he would not mention a word more to her of this nature at preſent. He promiſed he would not, inſiſting only on her forgiveneſs of what love, without the leave of his will, had forced from him: this, ſhe told him he knew how to obtain, by his future behaviour; and thus this young pair tottered and trembled along, the lover not once daring to ſqueeze the hand of his miſtreſs, though it was lock'd in his.

Sophia immediately retired to her chamber, where Mrs. Honour and the hartſhorn were ſummoned to her aſſiſtance. As to poor Jones, the only relief to his diſtempered mind was an unwelcome piece of news, which, as it opens a ſcene of a different nature from thoſe in which the reader hath lately been converſant, will be communicated to him in the next chapter.

CHAP. VII.

In which Mr. Allworthy appears on a ſick-bed.

MR. Weſtern was become ſo fond of Jones, that he was unwilling to part with him, though his arm had been long ſince cured; and Jones, either from the love of ſport, or from ſome other reaſon, was eaſily perſuaded to continue at his houſe, which he did ſometimes for a fortnight together, without paying a ſingle viſit at Mr. Allworthy's; nay, without ever hearing from thence.

Mr. Allworthy had been for ſome days indiſpoſed with a cold, which had been attended with a little fever. This he had, however, neglected, as it was uſual with him to do all manner of diſorders which did not confine him to his bed, or prevent his ſeveral faculties from performing their ordinary functions. A conduct which we would by no means be thought to approve or recommend to imitation: for ſurely the gentlemen of the Æſculapian art are in the right in adviſing, that the moment the diſeaſe is entered at one door, the phyſician

phyſician ſhould be introduced at the other; what elſe is meant by that old adage: *Venienti occurite morbo?* "Oppoſe a diſtemper at its firſt approach." Thus the doctor and the diſeaſe meet in fair and equal conflict; whereas, by giving time to the latter, we often ſuffer him to fortify and entrench himſelf, like a French army; ſo that the learned gentleman finds it very difficult, and ſometimes impoſſible, to come at the enemy. Nay ſometimes by gaining time, the diſeaſe applies to the French military politics, and corrupts nature over to his ſide, and then all the powers of phyſic muſt arrive too late. Agreeable to theſe obſervations was, I remember, the complaint of the great doctor Miſaubin, who uſed very pathetically to lament the late applications which were made to his ſkill: ſaying, 'Bygar me believe my pation take me 'for de undertaker: for dey never ſend for me till de 'phyſicion have kill dem.'

Mr. Allworthy's diſtemper, by means of this neglect, gained ſuch ground, that, when the increaſe of his fever obliged him to ſend for aſſiſtance, the doctor at his firſt arrival ſhook his head, wiſhed he had been ſent for ſooner, and intimated that he thought him in very imminent danger. Mr. Allworthy, who had ſettled all his affairs in this world, and was as well prepared as it is poſſible for human nature to be, for the other, received this information with the utmoſt calmneſs and unconcern. He could, indeed, whenever he laid himſelf down to reſt, ſay with Cato in the tragical poem,

——— Let guilt or fear
Diſturb man's reſt. Cato knows neither of them;
Indifferent in his choice, to ſleep or die.

In reality he could ſay this with ten times more reaſon and confidence than Cato, or any other proud fellow among the antient or modern heroes: for he was not only devoid of fear; but might be conſidered as a faithful labourer, when at the end of harveſt he is ſummoned to receive his reward at the hands of a bountiful maſter.

The

The good man gave immediate orders for all his family to be ſummoned round him. None of theſe were then abroad, but Mrs. Blifil, who had been ſome time in London, and Mr. Jones, whom the reader had juſt parted from at Mr. Weſtern's, and who received this ſummons juſt as Sophia had left him.

The news of Mr. Allworthy's danger (for the ſervant told him he was dying) drove all thoughts of love out of his head. He hurried inſtantly into the chariot which was ſent for him, and ordered the coachman to drive with all imaginable haſte; nor did the idea of Sophia, I believe, once occur to him on the way.

And now the whole family, namely, Mr. Blifil, Mr. Jones, Mr. Thwackum, Mr. Square, and ſome of the ſervants, (for ſuch were Mr. Allworthy's orders) being all aſſembled round his bed, the good man ſat up in it, and was beginning to ſpeak, when Blifil fell to blubbering; and began to expreſs very loud and bitter lamentations. Upon this Mr. Allworthy ſhook him by the hand, and ſaid, 'Do not ſorrow thus, my 'dear nephew, at the moſt ordinary of all human oc-'currences. When misfortunes befal our friends we 'are juſtly grieved: for thoſe are accidents which 'might often have been avoided, and which may ſeem 'to render the lot of one man more peculiarly un-'happy than that of others; but death is certainly 'unavoidable, and is that common lot, in which 'alone the fortunes of all men agree; nor is the time 'when this happens to us very material. If the wiſeſt 'of men hath compared life to a ſpan, ſurely we may 'be allowed to conſider it as a day. It is my fate to 'leave it in the evening; but thoſe who are taken away 'earlier, have only loſt a few hours, at the beſt little 'worth lamenting, and much oftner hours of labour 'and fatigue, of pain and ſorrow. One of the Ro-'man poets, I remember, likens our leaving life to 'our departure from a feaſt. A thought which hath 'often occurred to me, when I have ſeen men ſtrug-'gling to protract an entertainment, and to enjoy the 'company of their friends a few moments longer. 'Alas! how ſhort is the moſt protracted of ſuch en-'joyments! how immaterial the difference between him

'who

'who retires the ſooneſt, and him who ſtays the lateſt! 'this is ſeeing life in the beſt view, and this unwil-'lingneſs to quit our friends is the moſt amiable mo-'tive, from which we can derive the fear of death; 'and yet the longeſt enjoyment which we can hope 'for of this kind, is of ſo trivial a duration, that it is 'to a wiſe man truly contemptible. Few men, I own, 'think in this manner: for, indeed, few men think 'of death 'till they are in its jaws. However gigan-'tic and terrible an object this may appear when it 'approaches them, they are nevertheleſs incapable of 'ſeeing it at any diſtance; nay, though they have 'been ever ſo much alarmed and frightned when they 'have apprehended themſelves in danger of dying, 'they were no ſooner cleared from this apprehenſion 'than even the fears of it are eraſed from their minds. 'But, alas! he who eſcapes from death is not par-'doned, he is only reprieved, and reprieved to a ſhort 'day.

'Grieve, therefore, no more, my dear child, on this 'occaſion; an event which may happen every hour, 'which every element, nay almoſt every particle of 'matter that ſurrounds us is capable of producing, 'and which muſt and will moſt unavoidably reach us 'all at laſt, ought neither to occaſion our ſurprize, 'nor our lamentation.

'My phyſician having acquainted me (which I take 'very kindly of him) that I am in danger of leaving 'you all very ſhortly, I have determined to ſay a few 'words to you at this our parting, before my diſtem-'per, which I find grows very faſt upon me, puts it 'out of my power.

'But I ſhall waſte my ſtrength too much.—I in-'tended to ſpeak concerning my will, which though 'I have ſettled long ago, I think proper to mention 'ſuch heads of it as concern any of you, that I may 'have the comfort of perceiving you are all ſatisfied 'with the proviſion I have there made for you.

'Nephew Bliſil, I leave you the heir to my whole 'eſtate, except only 500l. a year, which is to revert 'to you after the death of your mother, and except 'one other eſtate of 500l. a year, and the ſum of

'6000l

'6000l. which I have beſtowed in the following 'manner.

'The eſtate of 500l. a year I have given to you, 'Mr. Jones. And as I know the inconvenience which 'attends the want of ready money, I have added '1000l. in ſpecie. In this I know not whether I have 'exceeded or fallen ſhort of your expectation. Per-'haps you will think I have given you too little, and 'the world will be as ready to condemn me for giv-'ing you too much; but the latter cenſure I deſpiſe, 'and as to the former, unleſs you ſhould entertain 'that common error, which I have often heard in my 'life pleaded as an excuſe for a total want of charity; 'namely, that inſtead of raiſing gratitude by volun-'tary acts of bounty, we are apt to raiſe demands, 'which of all others are the moſt boundleſs and moſt 'difficult to ſatisfy.—Pardon me the bare mention of 'this, I will not ſuſpect any ſuch thing.'

Jones flung himſelf at his benefactor's feet, and taking eagerly hold of his hand, aſſured him, his goodneſs to him, both now and all other times, had ſo infinitely exceeded not only his merit, but his hopes, that no words could expreſs his ſenſe of it. 'And I aſſure you, Sir,' ſaid he, 'your preſent gene-'roſity hath left me no other concern than for the pre-'ſent melancholy occaſion.—Oh, my friend! my fa-'ther!' here his words choaked him, and he turned away to hide a tear which was ſtarting from his eyes.

Allworthy then gently ſqueezed his hand, and pro-ceeded thus. 'I am convinced, my child, that you 'have much goodneſs, generoſity, and honour in your 'temper; if you will add prudence and religion to 'theſe, you muſt be happy; for the three former qua-'lities, I admit, make you worthy of happineſs, but 'they are the latter only which will put you in poſſeſ-'ſion of it.

'One thouſand pounds I have given to you, Mr. 'Thwackum; a ſum, I am convinced, which greatly 'exceeds your deſires, as well as your wants. How-'ever, you will receive it as a memorial of my friend-'ſhip; and whatever ſuperfluities may redound to

'you,

'you, that piety which you ſo rigidly maintain, will 'inſtruct you how to diſpoſe of them.

'A like ſum, Mr. Square, I have bequeathed to 'you. This, I hope, will enable you to purſue your 'profeſſion with better ſucceſs than hitherto. I have 'often obſerved with concern, that diſtreſs is more apt 'to excite contempt than commiſeration, eſpecially 'among men of buſineſs, with whom poverty is un-'derſtood to indicate want of ability. But the little 'I have been able to leave you, will extricate you 'from thoſe difficulties with which you have formerly 'ſtruggled: and then I doubt not but you will meet 'with ſufficient proſperity to ſupply what a man of 'your philoſophical temper will require.

'I find myſelf growing faint, ſo I ſhall refer you to 'my will for my diſpoſition of the reſidue. My ſer-'vants will there find ſome tokens to remember me 'by; and there are a few charities which, I truſt, my 'executors will ſee faithfully performed. Bleſs you 'all. I am ſetting out a little before you.'—

Here a footman came haſtily into the room, and ſaid there was an attorney from Saliſbury, who had a particular meſſage, which he ſaid he muſt communicate to Mr. Allworthy himſelf; that he ſeemed in a violent hurry, and proteſted he had ſo much buſineſs to do, that if he could cut himſelf into four quarters, all would not be ſufficient.

'Go, child, ſaid Allworthy to Blifil, 'ſee what the 'gentleman wants. I am not able to do any buſineſs 'now, nor can he have any with me, in which you 'are not at preſent more concerned than myſelf. Be-'ſides I really am—I am incapable of ſeeing any one 'at preſent, or of any longer attention. He then ſaluted them again, but he ſhould be now glad to compoſe himſelf a little, finding that he had too much exhauſted his ſpirits in diſcourſe.

Some of the company ſhed tears at their parting; and even the philoſopher Square wiped his eyes, albeit unuſed to the melting mood. As to Mrs. Wilkins, ſhe dropt her pearls as faſt as the Arabian trees their medicinal gums? for this was a ceremonial which that gentlewoman never omitted on a proper occaſion.

After

After this Mr. Allworthy again laid himſelf down on his pillow, and endeavoured to compoſe himſelf to reſt.

CHAP. VIII.

Containing matter rather natural than pleaſing.

BESIDES grief for her maſter, there was another ſource for that briny ſtream which ſo plentifully roſe above the two mountainous cheek bones of the houſe-keeper. She was no ſooner retired, than ſhe began to mutter to herſelf in the following pleaſant ſtrain: "Sure maſter might have made ſome difference, methinks, between me and the other ſervants. I ſuppoſe he hath left me mourning; but, i fackins! if that be all, the devil ſhall wear it for him for me. I'd have his worſhip know I am no beggar. I have ſaved five hundred pound in his ſervice, and after all to be uſed in this manner.—It is a fine encouragement to ſervants to be honeſt; and to be ſure, if I have taken a little ſomething now and then, others have taken ten times as much; and now we are all put in a lump together. If ſo be that it be ſo, the legacy may go to the devil with him that gave it. No, I won't give it up neither, becauſe that will pleaſe ſome folks. No, I'll buy the gayeſt gown I can get, and dance over the old curmudgeon's grave in it. This is my reward for taking his part ſo often, when all the country have cried ſhame of him, for breeding up his baſtard in that manner; but he is going now where he muſt pay for all. It would have become him better to have repented of his ſins on his death-bed, than to glory in them, and give away his eſtate out of his own family to a miſbegotten child. Found in his bed, forſooth! a pretty ſtory! ay, ay, thoſe that hide know where to find. Lord forgive him, I warrant he hath many more baſtards to anſwer for, if the truth was known. One comfort is, they will all be known where he is a going now. "The ſervants will find ſome token "to remember me by." Thoſe were the very words;

'I ſhall

'I ſhall never forget them, if I was to live a thouſand 'years. Ay, ay, I ſhall remember you for huddling 'me among the ſervants. One would have thought 'he might have mentioned my name as well as that of 'Square; but he is a gentleman forſooth, though he 'had not cloaths on his back when he came hither firſt. 'Marry come up with ſuch gentlemen! though he 'hath lived here this many years, I don't believe 'there is arrow a ſervant in the houſe ever ſaw the 'colour of his money. The devil ſhall wait upon 'ſuch a gentleman for me.' Much more of the like kind ſhe muttered to herſelf; but this taſte ſhall ſuffice to the reader.

Neither Thwackum nor Square were much better ſatisfied with their legacies. Though they breathed not their reſentment ſo loud, yet from the diſcontent which appeared in their countenances, as well as from the following dialogue, we collect that no great pleaſure reigned in their minds.

About an hour after they had left the ſick room, Square met Thwackum in the hall, and accoſted him thus, 'Well, Sir, have you heard any news of your 'friend ſince we parted from him?' 'If you mean 'Mr. Allworthy,' anſwered Thwackum, 'I think 'you might rather give him the appellation of your 'friend: for he ſeems to me to have deſerved that 'title.' 'The title is as good on your ſide,' replied Square, 'for his bounty, ſuch as it is, hath been equal 'to both.' 'I ſhould not have mentioned it firſt,' cries Thwackum, 'but ſince you begin, I muſt in-'form you I am of a different opinion. There is a 'wide diſtinction between voluntary favours and re-'wards. The duty I have done in his family, and 'the care I have taken in the education of his two 'boys, are ſervices for which ſome men might have 'expected a greater return. I would not have you 'imagine I am therefore diſſatisfied; for St. Paul hath 'taught me to be content with the little I have. Had 'the modicum been leſs, I ſhould have known my 'duty. But though the ſcripture obliges me to re-'main contented, it doth not enjoin me to ſhut my 'eyes to my own merit, nor reſtrain me from ſeeing,

'when

'when I am injured by an unjuſt compariſon.' 'Since 'you provoke me,' returned Square, 'that injury is 'done to me: nor did I ever imagine Mr. Allworthy 'had held my friendſhip ſo light, as to put me in ba-'lance with one who received his wages: I know to 'what it is owing; it proceeds from thoſe narrow 'principles which you have been ſo long endeavour-'ing to infuſe into him, in contempt of every thing 'which is great and noble. The beauty and lovelі-'neſs of friendſhip is too ſtrong for dim eyes, nor can 'it be perceived by any other medium, than that un-'erring rule of right, which you have ſo often endea-'voured to ridicule, that you have perverted your 'friend's underſtanding.' 'I wiſh,' cries Thwackum, in a rage, 'I wiſh for the ſake of his ſoul, your 'damnable doctrines have not perverted his faith. It 'is to this I impute his preſent behaviour, ſo unbe-'coming a chriſtian. Who but an atheiſt could think 'of leaving the world without having firſt made up his 'account? Without confeſſing his ſins, and receiving 'that abſolution which he knew he had one in the 'houſe duly authoriſed to give him? He will feel the 'want of theſe neceſſaries when it is too late. When 'he is arrived at that place where there is wailing and 'gnaſhing of teeth; it is then he will find in what 'mighty ſtead that heathen goddeſs, that virtue, which 'you and all other deiſts of the age adore, will ſtand 'him. He will then ſummon his prieſt when there is 'none to be found, and will lament the want of that 'abſolution, without which no ſinner can be ſafe.' 'If it be ſo material,' ſays Square, 'Why don't you 'preſent it him of your own accord?' 'It hath no 'virtue' cries Thwackum, 'but to thoſe who have 'ſufficient grace to require it. But why do I talk thus 'to a heathen and an unbeliever? It is you that taught 'him this leſſon, for which you have been well re-'warded in this world, as I doubt not your diſciple 'will ſoon be in the other.' 'I know not what you 'mean by reward,' ſaid Square, 'but if you hint at 'that pitiful memorial of our friendſhip, which he 'hath thought fit to bequeath me, I deſpiſe it; and

'nothing

'nothing but the unfortunate ſituation of my circum-
'ſtances ſhould prevail on me to accept of it.'

The phyſician now arrived, and began to enquire of the two diſputants, how we all did above ſtairs? 'In a miſerable way,' anſwered Thwackum. 'It is no 'more than I expected,' cries the doctor: 'but pray 'what ſymptoms have appeared ſince I left you?' 'No good ones, I am afraid,' replied Thwackum, 'after what paſt at our departure, I think there were 'little hopes.' The bodily phyſician, perhaps, miſunderſtood the curer of ſouls, and before they came to an explanation, Mr. Blifil came to them with a moſt melancholy countenance, and acquainted them, that he brought ſad news: for that his mother was dead at Saliſbury. That ſhe had been ſeized on the road home with the gout in her head and ſtomach, which had carried her off in a few hours. 'Good-lack-a-day,' ſays the doctor, 'One cannot anſwer for events: but I 'wiſh I had been at hand to have been called in. 'The gout is a diſtemper, which it is difficult to treat; 'yet I have been remarkably ſucceſsful in it.' Thwackum and Square both condoled with Mr. Blifil for the loſs of his mother, which the one adviſed him to bear like a man, and the other like a chriſtian. The young gentleman ſaid, he knew very well we were all mortal, and he would endeavour to ſubmit to his loſs as well as he could. That he could not, however, help complaining a little againſt the peculiar ſeverity of his fate, which brought the news of ſo great a calamity to him by ſurprize, and that at a time when he hourly expected the ſevereſt blow he was capable of feeling from the malice of fortune. He ſaid, the preſent occaſion would put to the teſt thoſe excellent rudiments which he had learned from Mr. Thwackum and Mr. Square, and it would be entirely owing to them, if he was enabled to ſurvive ſuch misfortunes.

It was now debated whether Mr. Allworthy ſhould be informed of the death of his ſiſter: this the doctor violently oppoſed; in which, I believe, the whole college would agree with him: but Mr. Blifil ſaid, he had received ſuch poſitive and repeated orders from his uncle, never to keep any ſecret from him, for fear of the

the diſquietude which it might give him, that he durſt not think of diſobedience, whatever might be the conſequence. He ſaid, for his part, conſidering the religious and philoſophic temper of his uncle, he could not agree with the doctor in his apprehenſions. He was therefore reſolved to communicate it to him: for if his uncle recovered (as he heartily prayed he might) he knew he would never forgive an endeavour to keep a ſecret of this kind from him.

The phyſician was forced to ſubmit to theſe reſolutions which the two other learned gentlemen very highly commended. So together moved Mr. Blifil and the doctor towards the ſick-room: where the phyſician firſt entered, and approached the bed, in order to feel his patient's pulſe, which he had no ſooner done, than he declared he was much better; that the laſt application had ſucceeded to a miracle, and had brought the fever to intermit: ſo that, he ſaid, there appeared now to be as little danger as he had before apprehended there were hopes.

To ſay the truth, Mr. Allworthy's ſituation had never been ſo bad, as the great caution of the doctor had repreſented: but as a wiſe general never deſpiſes his enemy, however inferior that enemy's force may be, ſo neither doth a wiſe phyſician ever deſpiſe a diſtemper, however inconſiderable. As the former preſerves the ſame ſtrict diſcipline, places the ſame guards, employs the ſame ſcouts, though the enemy be never ſo weak; ſo the latter maintains the ſame gravity of countenance, and ſhakes his head with the ſame ſignificant air, let the diſtemper be never ſo trifling. And both, among many other good ones, may aſſign this ſolid reaſon for their conduct, that by theſe means the greater glory redounds to them if they gain the victory, and the leſs diſgrace, if by any unlucky accident they ſhould happen to be conquered.

Mr. Allworthy had no ſooner lifted up his eyes, and thanked heaven for theſe hopes of his recovery, than Mr. Blifil drew near, with a very dejected aſpect, and having applied his handkerchief to his eyes, either to wipe away his tears, or, to do, as Ovid ſomewhere expreſſes himſelf on another occaſion,

Si

Si nullus erit, tamen excute nullum.

'If there be none, then wipe away that none.'

he communicated to his uncle what the reader hath been juſt before acquainted with.

Allworthy received the news with concern, with patience, and with reſignation. He dropt a tender tear, then compoſed his countenance, and at laſt cried, 'The Lord's will be done in every thing.'

He now enquired for the meſſenger; but Blifil told him, it had been impoſſible to detain him a moment; for he appeared by the great hurry he was in to have ſome buſineſs of importance on his hands: that he complained of being hurried, and driven and torn out of his life, and repeated many times, that if he could divide himſelf into four quarters, he knew how to diſpoſe of every one.

Allworthy then deſired Blifil to take care of the funeral. He ſaid, he would have his ſiſter depoſited in his own chapel; and as to the particulars, he left them to his own diſcretion, only mentioning the perſon whom he would have employed on this occaſion.

CHAP. IX.

Which, among other things, may ſerve as a comment on that ſaying of Æſchines, that DRUNKENNESS SHEWS THE MIND OF A MAN, AS A MIRROUR REFLECTS HIS PERSON.

THE reader may, perhaps, wonder at hearing nothing of Mr. Jones in the laſt chapter. In fact, his behaviour was ſo different from that of the perſons there mentioned, that we choſe not to confound his name with theirs.

When the good man had ended his ſpeech, Jones was the laſt who deſerted the room. Thence he retired to his own apartment, to give vent to his concern; but the reſtleſſneſs of his mind would not ſuffer him to remain long there; he ſlipped ſoftly, therefore, to Allworthy's chamber door, where he liſtened a conſi-

derable time without hearing any kind of motion within, unleſs a violent ſnoaring, which at laſt his fears miſrepreſented as groans. This ſo alarmed him, that he could not forbear entering the room; where he found the good man in the bed, in a ſweet compoſed ſleep, and his nurſe ſnoring in the above-mentioned hearty manner, at the bed's feet. He immediately took the only method of ſilencing this thorough baſs, whoſe muſick he feared might diſturb Mr. Allworthy; and then ſitting down by the nurſe, he remained motionleſs till Blifil and the doctor came in together, and waked the ſick man, in order that the doctor might feel his pulſe, and that the other might communicate to him that piece of news, which, had Jones been apprized of it, would have had great difficulty of finding its way to Mr. Allworthy's ear at ſuch a ſeaſon.

When he firſt heard Blifil tell his uncle this ſtory, Jones could hardly contain the wrath which kindled in him at the other's indiſcretion, eſpecially as the doctor ſhook his head, and declared his unwillingneſs to have the matter mentioned to his patient. But as his paſſion did not ſo far deprive him of all uſe of his underſtanding, as to hide from him the conſequences which any violent expreſſion towards Blifil might have on the ſick, this apprehenſion ſtilled his rage, at the preſent; and he grew afterwards ſo ſatisfied with finding that this news had, in fact, produced no miſchief, that he ſuffered his anger to die in his own boſom, without ever mentioning it to Blifil.

The phyſician dined that day at Mr. Allworthy's; and having after dinner viſited his patient, he returned to the company, and told them, than he had now the ſatisfaction to ſay, with aſſurance, that his patient was out of all danger; that he had brought his fever to a perfect intermiſſion, and doubted not by throwing in the bark to prevent its return.

This account ſo pleaſed Jones, and threw him into ſuch immoderate exceſs of rapture, that he might be truly ſaid to be drunk with joy. An intoxication which greatly forwards the effects of wine: and as he was very free too with the bottle on this occaſion, (for he

he drank many bumpers to the doctor's health, as well as to other toasts) he became very soon literally drunk.

Jones had naturally violent animal spirits: these being set on float, and augmented by the spirit of wine, produced most extravagant effects. He kissed the doctor, and embraced him with the most passionate endearments; swearing that, next to Mr. Allworthy himself, he loved him of all men living. 'Doctor,' added he, 'you deserve a statue to be erected to you 'at the public expence, for having preserved a man 'who is not only the darling of all good men who 'know him, but a blessing to society, the glory of his 'country, and an honour to human nature. D—n 'me if I don't love him better than my own soul.'

'More shame for you,' cries Thwackum. 'Though 'I think you have reason to love him, for he hath pro-'vided very well for you. And, perhaps, it might 'have been better for some folks, that he had not lived 'to see just reason of revoking his gift.'

Jones now, looking on Thwackum with inconceivable disdain, answered, 'And doth thy mean soul 'imagine, that any such considerations could weigh 'with me? No, let the earth open and swallow her 'own dirt (if I had millions of acres I would say it) 'rather than swallow up my dear glorious friend.'

Quis Desiderio sit Pudor aut modus
*Tam chari Capitis?**

The doctor now interposed, and prevented the effects of a wrath which was kindling between Jones and Thwackum; after which the former gave a loose to mirth, sang two or three amorous songs, and fell into every frantic disorder, which unbridled joy is apt to inspire; but so far was he from any disposition to quarrel, that he was ten times better humoured, if possible, than when he was sober.

* 'What modesty or measure can set bounds to our desire of so dear a friend!' The word *Desiderium* here cannot be easily translated. It concludes our desire of enjoying our friend again, and the grief which attends that desire.

To ſay truth, nothing is more erroneous than the common obſervation, that men who are ill-natured and quarrelſome when they are drunk, are very worthy perſons when they are ſober: for drink, in reality, doth not reverſe nature, or create paſſions in men which did not exiſt in them before. It takes away the guard of reaſon, and conſequently forces us to produce thoſe ſymptoms which many, when ſober, have art enough to conceal. It heightens and inflames our paſſions, (generally indeed that paſſion which is upper-moſt in our mind) ſo that the angry temper, the amorous, the generous, the good-humoured, the avaricious, and all other diſpoſitions of men, are in their cups heightened and expoſed.

And yet as no nation produces ſo many drunken quarrels, eſpecially among the lower people, as England; (for, indeed, with them, to drink and to fight together, are almoſt ſynonymous terms) I would not, methinks, have it thence concluded, that the Engliſh are the worſt natured people alive. Perhaps the love of glory only is at the bottom of this; ſo that the fair concluſion ſeems to be, that our countrymen have more of that love, and more of bravery, than any other Plebeians. And this the rather, as there is ſeldom any thing ungenerous, unfair, or ill-natured, exerciſed on thoſe occaſions: nay, it is common for the combatants to expreſs good-will for each other, even at the time of the conflict; and as their drunken mirth generally ends in a battle, ſo do moſt of their battles end in friendſhip.

But to return to our hiſtory. Though Jones had ſhewn no deſign of giving offence, yet Mr. Blifil was highly offended at a behaviour which was ſo inconſiſtent with the ſober and prudent reſerve of his own temper. He bore it too with the greater impatience, as it appeared to him very indecent at this ſeaſon; 'When,' as he ſaid, 'the houſe was a houſe of mourning, on 'the account of his dear mother; and if it had pleaſed 'heaven to give him ſome proſpect of Mr. Allworthy's 'recovery, it would become them better to expreſs 'the exultations of their hearts in thankſgiving, than 'in drunkenneſs and riots; which were properer me-

'thods

'thods to increaſe the divine wrath, than to avert it.' Thwackum, who had ſwallowed more liquor than Jones, but without any ill effect on his brain, ſeconded the pious harangue of Blifil: but Square, for reaſons which the reader may probably gueſs, was totally ſilent.

Wine had not ſo totally overpowered Jones, as to prevent his recollecting Mr. Blifil's loſs, the moment it was mentioned. As no perſon, therefore, was more ready to confeſs and condemn his own errors, he offered to ſhake Mr. Blifil by the hand, and begged his pardon, ſaying, 'His exceſſive joy for Mr. Allworthy's recovery had driven every other thought out of his mind.'

Blifil ſcornfully rejected his hand: and, with much indignation, anſwered, 'It was little to be wondered at, if tragical ſpectacles made no impreſſion on the blind; but, for his part, he had the misfortune to know who his parents were, and conſequently muſt be affected with their loſs.'

Jones, who, notwithſtanding his good humour, had ſome mixture of the irafcible in his conſtitution, leaped haſtily from his chair, and catching hold of Blifil's collar, cried out, 'D—n you for a raſcal, do you inſult me with the misfortune of my birth?' He accompanied theſe words with ſuch rough actions, that they ſoon got the better of Mr. Blifil's peaceful temper; and a ſcuffle immediately enſued, which might have produced miſchief, had it not been prevented by the interpoſition of Thwackum and the phyſician; for the philoſophy of Square rendered him ſuperior to all emotions, and he very calmly ſmoaked his pipe, as was his cuſtom in all broils, unleſs when he apprehended ſome danger of having it broke in his mouth.

The combatants being now prevented from executing preſent vengeance on each other, betook themſelves to the common reſources of diſappointed rage, and vented their wrath in threats and defiance. In this kind of conflict, fortune, which in the perſonal attack, ſeemed to incline to Jones, was now altogether as favourable to his enemy.

A truce, nevertheleſs, was at length agreed on, by the mediation of the neutral parties, and the whole company again ſat down at the table; where Jones being prevailed on to aſk pardon, and Blifil to give it, peace was reſtored, and every thing ſeemed in *Statu quo*.

But though the quarrel was, in all appearance, perfectly reconciled, the good-humour which had been interrupted by it, was by no means reſtored. All merriment was now at an end, and the ſubſequent diſcourſe conſiſted only of grave relations of matters of fact, and of as grave obſervations upon them. A ſpecies of converſation, in which, though there is much of dignity and inſtruction, there is but little entertainment. As we preſume, therefore, to convey only this laſt to the reader, we ſhall paſs by whatever was ſaid, till the reſt of the company having, by degrees, dropped off, left only Square and the phyſician together; at which time the converſation was a little heightened by ſome comments on what had happened between the two young gentlemen; both of whom the doctor declared to be no better than ſcoundrels; to which appellation the philoſopher, very ſagaciouſly ſhaking his head, agreed.

CHAP X.

Shewing the truth of many obſervations of Ovid, *and of other more grave writers, who have proved, beyond contradiction, that wine is often the fore-runner of incontinency.*

JONES retired from the company, in which we have ſeen him engaged, into the fields where he intended to cool himſelf by a walk in the open air, before he attended Mr. Allworthy. There, whilſt he renewed thoſe meditations on his dear Sophia, which the dangerous illneſs of his friend and benefactor had for ſome time interrupted, an accident happened, which with ſorrow we relate, and with ſorrow, doubtleſs, will it be read; however, that hiſtoric truth to which we pro-

profeſs ſo inviolable an attachment, obliges us to communicate it to poſterity.

It was now a pleaſant evening in the latter end of June, when our hero was walking in a moſt delicious grove, where the gentle breezes fanning the leaves, together with the ſweet trilling of a murmuring ſtream, and the melodious notes of nightingales, formed altogether the moſt enchanting harmony. In this ſcene, ſo ſweetly accommodated to love, he meditated on his dear Sophia. While his wanton fancy roved unbounded over all her beauties, and lively imaginations painted the charming maid in various raviſhing forms, his warm heart melted with tenderneſs, and at length throwing himſelf on the ground, by the ſide of a gently murmuring brook, he broke forth into the following ejaculation.

'O Sophia, would heaven give thee to my arms, 'how bleſt would be my condition! Curſt be that 'fortune which ſets a diſtance between us. Was I 'but poſſeſſed of thee, one only ſuit of rags thy whole 'eſtate, is there a man on earth whom I would envy! 'How contemptible would the brighteſt Circaſſian 'beauty, dreſt in all the jewels of the Indies, appear 'to my eyes! But why do I mention another woman? 'Could I think my eyes capable of looking at any 'other with tenderneſs, theſe hands ſhould tear them 'from my head. No, my Sophia, if cruel fortune 'ſeparates us for ever, my ſoul ſhall doat on thee alone. 'The chaſteſt conſtancy will I ever preſerve to thy 'image. Though I ſhould never have poſſeſſion of 'thy charming perſon, ſtill ſhalt thou alone have poſ'ſeſſion of my thoughts, my love, my ſoul. Oh! 'my fond heart is ſo wrapt in that tender boſom, that 'the brighteſt beauties would for me have no charms, 'nor would a hermit be colder in their embraces. 'Sophia, Sophia alone ſhall be mine. What raptures 'are in that name! I will engrave it on every tree.'

At theſe words he ſtarted up, and beheld—not his Sophia—no, nor a Circaſſian maid richly and elegantly attired for the grand ſignior's ſeraglio. No; without a gown, in a ſhift that was ſomewhat of the coarſeſt, and none of the cleaneſt, bedewed likewiſe with ſome

odoriferous effluvia, the produce of the day's labour, with a pitch-fork in her hand, Molly Seagrim approached. Our hero had his pen knife in his hand, which he had drawn for the before mentioned purpoſe of carving on the bark; when the girl coming near him, cry'd out with a ſmile, 'You don't intend to 'kill me 'ſquire, I hope!' 'Why ſhould you think I 'would kill you?' anſwered Jones. 'Nay,' replied ſhe, 'after your cruel uſage of me when I ſaw you 'laſt, killing me would, perhaps, be too great kind-'neſs for me to expect.'

Here enſued a parley, which, as I do not think myſelf obliged to relate it, I ſhall omit. It is ſufficient that it laſted a full quarter of an hour, at the concluſion of which they retired into the thickeſt part of the grove.

Some of my readers may be inclined to think this event unnatural. However, the fact is true: and, perhaps, may be ſufficiently accounted for, by ſuggeſting, that Jones probably thought one woman better than none, and Molly as probably imagined two men to be better than one. Beſides the before mentioned motive aſſigned to the preſent behaviour of Jones, the reader will be likewiſe pleaſed to recollect in his favour, that he was not at this time perfect maſter of that wonderful power of reaſon, which ſo well enables grave and wiſe men to ſubdue their unruly paſſions, and to decline any of theſe prohibited amuſements. Wine now had totally ſubdued this power in Jones. He was, indeed, in a condition, in which, if reaſon had interpoſed, though only to adviſe, ſhe might have received the anſwer which one Cleoſtratus gave many years ago to a ſilly fellow, who aſked him, if he was not aſhamed to be drunk? 'Are not you,' ſaid Cleoſtratus, 'aſhamed to admoniſh a drunken man?'—To ſay the truth, in a court of juſtice, drunkenneſs muſt not be an excuſe, yet in a court of conſcience it is greatly ſo; and therefore Ariſtotle, who commends the laws of Pittacus, by which drunken men received double puniſhment for their crimes, allows there is more of policy than juſtice in that law. Now, if there are any trangreſſions pardonable from drunkenneſs,

they

they are certainly ſuch as Mr. Jones was at preſent guilty of; on which head I could pour forth a vaſt profuſion of learning, if I imagined it would either entertain my reader, or teach him any thing more than he knows already. For his ſake, therefore, I ſhall keep my learning to myſelf, and return to my hiſtory.

It hath been obſerved, that fortune ſeldom doth things by halves. To ſay truth, there is no end to her freaks whenever ſhe is diſpoſed to gratify or diſpleaſe. No ſooner had our hero retired with his Dido, but

Speluncam Blifil, *Dux & Divinus eandem*
Deveniunt———

the parſon and the young 'ſquire, who were taking a ſerious walk, arrived at the ſtile which leads into the grove, and the latter caught a view of the lovers, juſt as they were ſinking out of ſight.

Blifil knew Jones very well, though he was at above a hundred yards diſtance, and he was as poſitive to the ſex of his companion, though not to the individual perſon. He ſtarted, bleſſed himſelf, and uttered a very ſolemn ejaculation.

Thwackum expreſſed ſome ſurprize at theſe ſudden emotions, and aſked the reaſon of them. To which Blifil anſwered, 'he was certain he had ſeen a fellow 'and wench retire together among the buſhes, which 'he doubted not was with ſome wicked purpoſe.' As to the name of Jones he thought proper to conceal it, and why he did ſo muſt be left to the judgment of the ſagacious reader: for we never chuſe to aſſign motives to the actions of men, when there is any poſſibility of our being miſtaken.

The parſon, who was not only ſtrictly chaſte in his own perſon, but a great enemy to the oppoſite vice in all others, fired at this information. He deſired Mr. Blifil to conduct him immediately to the place, which, as he approached, he breathed forth vengeance mixed with lamentations; nor did he refrain from caſting ſome oblique reflections on Mr. Allworthy; inſinuating that the wickedneſs of the country was principally

owing to the encouragement he had given to vice, by having exerted ſuch kindneſs to a baſtard, and by having mitigated that juſt and wholeſome rigour of the law, which allots a very ſevere puniſhment to looſe wenches.

The way, through which our hunters were to paſs in purſuit of their game, was ſo beſet with briars, that it greatly obſtructed their walk, and cauſed, beſides, ſuch a ruſtling, that Jones had ſufficient warning of their arrival, before they could ſurprize him; nay, indeed, ſo incapable was Thwackum of concealing his indignation, and ſuch vengeance did he mutter forth every ſtep he took, that this alone muſt have abundantly ſatisfied Jones, that he was (to uſe the language of ſportſmen) found fitting.

CHAP. XI.

In which a ſimile in Mr. Pope's period of a mile, introduces as bloody a battle as can poſſibly be fought without the aſſiſtance of ſteel or cold iron.

AS in the ſeaſon of RUTTING (an uncouth phraſe, by which the vulgar denote that gentle dalliance, which, in the * well-wooded foreſt of Hampſhire, paſſes between lovers of the ferine kind) if while the lofty creſted ſtag meditates the amorous ſport, a couple of puppies, or any other beaſts of hoſtile note, ſhould wander ſo near the temple of Venus Ferina, that the fair hind ſhould ſhrink from the place, touched with that ſomewhat, either of fear or frolic, of nicety or ſkittiſhneſs, with which nature hath bedecked all females, or hath, at leaſt, inſtructed them how to put it on; leſt, through the indelicacy of males, the Samian myſteries ſhould be pried into by unhallowed eyes: for at the celebration of theſe rites, the female prieſteſs cries out with her in Virgil, (who was then, probably, hard at work on ſuch celebration.)

——*Procul, O procul eſte, profani;*
Proclamat Vates, totoque abſiſtite Luco.

* This is an ambiguous phraſe, and may mean either a foreſt well coated with wood, or well ſtript of it.

——Far

——Far hence be ſouls prophane,
The ſibyl cry'd, and from the grove abſtain.

DRYDEN.

If, I ſay, while theſe ſacred rites, which are in common to *Genus omne Animantium*, are in agitation between the ſtag and his miſtreſs, any hoſtile beaſts ſhould venture too near, on the firſt hint given by the frighted hind, fierce and tremendous ruſhes forth the ſtag to the entrance of the thicket; there ſtands he centinel over his love, ſtamps the ground with his foot, and with his horns brandiſhed aloft in air, proudly provokes the apprehended foe to combat.

Thus, and more terrible, when he perceived the enemy's approach, leaped forth our hero. Many a ſtep advanced he forwards, in order to conceal the trembling hind, and, if poſſible, to ſecure her retreat. And now Thwackum having firſt darted ſome livid lightning from his fiery eyes, began to thunder forth, 'Fie upon it! Fie upon it! Mr. Jones. Is it 'poſſible you ſhould be the perſon!' 'You ſee,' anſwered Jones, 'it is poſſible I ſhould be here.' 'And who, ſaid Thwackum, 'is that wicked ſlut 'with you?' 'If I have any wicked ſlut with me,' cries Jones, 'it is poſſible I ſhall not let you know 'who ſhe is.' 'I command you to tell me immediately,' ſays Thwackum, 'and I would not have you 'imagine, young man, that your age, though it hath 'ſomewhat abridged the purpoſe of tuition, hath totally taken away the authority of the maſter. The 'relation of the maſter and ſcholar is indelible, as, 'indeed, all other relations are: for they all derive 'their original from heaven. I would have you think 'yourſelf, therefore, as much obliged to obey me 'now, as when I taught you your firſt rudiments.' 'I believe you would,' cries Jones, 'but that will 'not happen, unleſs you had the ſame birchen argument to convince me.' 'Then I muſt tell you plainly,' ſaid Thwackum, 'I am reſolved to diſcover 'the wicked wretch.' 'And I muſt tell you plainly,' returned Jones, 'I am reſolved you ſhall not.' Thwackum then offered to advance, and Jones laid hold of

his arms; which Mr. Blifil endeavoured to reſcue, declaring 'he would not ſee his old maſter inſulted.'

Jones, now finding himſelf engaged with two, thought it neceſſary to rid himſelf of one of his antagoniſts as ſoon as poſſible. He, therefore, applied to the weakeſt firſt; and letting the parſon go, he directed a blow at the young 'ſquire's breaſt, which luckily taking place, reduced him to meaſure his length on the ground.

Thwackum was ſo intent on the diſcovery, that the moment he found himſelf at liberty, he ſtept forward directly into the fern, without any great conſideration of what might, in the mean time, befal his friend; but he had advanced a very few paces into the thicket, before Jones, having defeated Blifil, overtook the parſon, and dragged him backward by the ſkirt of his coat.

This parſon had been a champion in his youth, and had won much honour by his fiſt, both at ſchool and at the univerſity. He had now, indeed, for a great number of years, declined the practice of that noble art; yet was his courage full as ſtrong as his faith, and his body no leſs ſtrong than either. He was moreover, as the reader may, perhaps, have conceived, ſomewhat iraſcible in his nature. When he looked back, therefore, and ſaw his friend ſtretched out on the ground, and found himſelf at the ſame time ſo roughly handled by one who had formerly been only paſſive in all conflicts between them, (a circumſtance which highly aggravated the whole) his patience at length gave way; he threw himſelf into a poſture of offence, and collecting all his force, attacked Jones in the front with as much impetuoſity as he had formerly attacked him in the rear.

Our hero received the enemy's attack with the moſt undaunted intrepidity, and his boſom reſounded with the blow. This he preſently returned with no leſs violence, aiming likewiſe at the parſon's breaſt: but he dexterouſly drove down the fiſt of Jones, ſo that it reached only his belly, where two pounds of beef and as many of pudding were then depoſited, and whence conſequently no hollow ſound could proceed. Many luſty blows, much more pleaſant as well as eaſy to have

have ſeen, than to read or deſcribe, were given on both ſides; at laſt a violent fall, in which Jones had thrown his knees into Thwackum's breaſt, ſo weakened the latter, that victory had been no longer dubious, had not Blifil, who had now recovered his ſtrength, again renewed the fight, and, by engaging with Jones, given the parſon a moment's time to ſhake his ears, and to regain his breath.

And now both together attacked our hero, whoſe blows did not retain that force with which they had fallen at firſt; ſo weakened was he by his combat with Thwackum: for though the pedagogue choſe rather to play Solos on the human inſtrument, and had been lately uſed to thoſe only, yet he ſtill retained enough of his ancient knowledge to perform his part very well in a Duet.

The victory, according to modern cuſtom, was like to be decided by numbers, when, on a ſudden, a fourth pair of fiſts appeared in the battle, and immediately paid their compliments to the parſon: and the owner of them, at the ſame time, crying out, 'are you not 'aſhamed and be d—n'd to you, to fall two of you 'upon one?'

The battle, which was of the kind, that for diſtinction ſake is called ROYAL, now raged with the utmoſt violence during a few minutes; till Blifil being a ſecond time laid ſprawling by Jones, Thwackum condeſcended to apply for quarter to his new antagoniſt, who was now found to be Mr. Weſtern himſelf; for in the heat of the action none of the combatants had recognized him.

In fact, that honeſt 'ſquire happening, in his afternoon's walk with ſome company, to paſs through the field where the bloody battle was fought, and having concluded from ſeeing three men engaged, that two of them muſt be on a ſide, he haſtened from his companions, and with more gallantry than policy, eſpouſed the cauſe of the weaker party. By which generous proceeding, he very probably prevented Mr. Jones from becoming a victim to the wrath of Thwackum, and to the pious friendſhip which Blifil bore his old maſter: for, beſides the diſadvantages of ſuch odds,

Jone-

Jones had not yet ſufficiently recovered the former ſtrength of his broken arm. This reinforcement, however, ſoon put an end to the action, and Jones with his ally obtained the victory.

CHAP. XII.

In which is ſeen a more moving ſpectacle, than all the blood in the bodies of Thwackum and Blifil, and of twenty other ſuch, is capable of producing.

THE reſt of Mr. Weſtern's company were now come up, being juſt at the inſtant when the action was over. Theſe were the honeſt clergyman, whom we have formerly ſeen at Mr. Weſtern's table; Mrs. Weſtern, the aunt of Sophia; and laſtly, the lovely Sophia herſelf.

At this time, the following was the aſpect of the bloody field. In one place, lay on the ground, all pale and almoſt breathleſs, the vanquiſhed Blifil. Near him ſtood the conqueror Jones, almoſt covered with blood, part of which was naturally his own, and part had been lately the property of the Reverend Mr. Thwackum. In a third place ſtood the ſaid Thwackum, like king Porus, ſullenly ſubmitting to the conqueror. The laſt figure in the piece was Weſtern the Great, moſt glorioufly forbearing the vanquiſhed foe.

Blifil, in whom there was little ſign of life, was at firſt the principal object of the concern of every one, and particularly of Mrs. Weſtern, who had drawn from her pocket a bottle of hartſhorn, and was herſelf about to apply it to his noſtrils; when on a ſudden the attention of the whole company was diverted from poor Blifil, whoſe ſpirit, if it had any ſuch deſign, might have now taken an opportunity of ſtealing off to the hea rwo rld, without any ceremony.

For now a more melancholy and a more lovely object lay motionleſs before them. This was no other than the charming Sophia herſelf, who, from the ſight of blood, or from fear for her father, or from ſome other reaſon, had fallen down in a ſwoon, before any one could get to her aſſiſtance.

Mrs.

Mrs. Weſtern firſt ſaw her, and ſcreamed. Immediately two or three voices cried out, Miſs Weſtern is dead. Hartſhorn, water, every remedy was called for, almoſt at one and the ſame inſtant.

The reader may remember, that in our deſcription of this grove we mentioned a murmuring brook, which brook did not come there, as ſuch gentle ſtreams flow through vulgar romances, with no other purpoſe than to murmur. No; fortune had decreed to ennoble this little brook with a higher honour than any of thoſe which waſh the plains of Arcadia, ever deſerved.

Jones was rubbing Blifil's temples: for he began to fear he had given him a blow too much, when the words Miſs Weſtern and Dead, ruſhed at once on his ear. He ſtarted up, left Blifil to his fate, and flew to Sophia, whom, while all the reſt were running againſt each other backward and forward, looking for water in the dry paths, he caught up in his arms, and then ran away with her over the field to the rivulet above-mentioned; where plunging himſelf into the water, he contrived to beſprinkle her face, head, and neck, very plentifully.

Happy was it for Sophia, that the ſame confuſion which prevented her other friends from ſerving her, prevented them likewiſe from obſtructing Jones. He had carried her half ways before they knew what he was doing, and he had actually reſtored her to life before they reached the water-ſide: ſhe ſtretched out her arms, opened her eyes, and cried, 'Oh, heavens!' juſt as her father, aunt, and the parſon came up.

Jones, who had hitherto held this lovely burthen in his arms, now relinquiſhed his hold; but gave her at the ſame inſtant a tender careſs, which, had her ſenſes been then perfectly reſtored, could not have eſcaped her obſervation. As ſhe expreſſed, therefore, no diſpleaſure at this freedom, we ſuppoſe ſhe was not ſufficiently recovered from her ſwoon at the time.

This tragical ſcene was now converted into a ſudden ſcene of joy. In this our hero was, moſt certainly, the principal character: for as he probably felt more ecſtatic delight in having ſaved Sophia, than ſhe herſelf received from being ſaved; ſo neither were the con-

congratulations paid to her equal to what were conferred on Jones, eſpecially by Mr. Weſtern himſelf, who, after having once or twice embraced his daughter, fell to hugging and kiſſing Jones. He called him the preſerver of Sophia, and declared there was nothing, except her, or his eſtate, which he would not give him; but upon recollection, he afterwards excepted his fox-hounds, the Chevalier, and Miſs Slouch (for ſo he called his favourite mare.)

All fears for Sophia being now removed; Jones became the object of the 'ſquire's conſideration. 'Come, 'my Lad,' ſays Weſtern, 'D'off thy quoat and waſh 'thy feace: for art in a deviliſh pickle, I promiſe 'thee. Come, come, waſh thyſelf, and ſhat go 'huome with me; and we'l zee to vind thee another 'quoat.'

Jones immediately complied, threw off his coat, went down to the water, and waſhed both his face and boſom: for the latter was as much expoſed, and as bloody as the former: but though the water could clear off the blood, it could not remove the black and blue marks which Thwackum had imprinted on both his face and breaſt, and which, being diſcerned by Sophia, drew from her a ſigh, and a look full of inexpreſſible tenderneſs.

Jones received this full in his eyes, and it had infinitely a ſtronger effect on him than all the contuſions which he had received before: An effect, however, widely different; for ſo ſoft and balmy was it, that, had all his former blows been ſtabs, it would for ſome minutes have prevented his feeling their ſmart.

The company now moved backwards, and ſoon arrived where Thwackum had got Mr. Blifil again on his legs. Here we cannot ſuppreſs a pious wiſh, that all quarrels were to be decided by thoſe weapons only, with which nature, knowing what is proper for us, hath ſupplied us; and that cold iron was to be uſed in digging no bowels, but thoſe of the earth. Then would war, the paſtime of monarchs, be almoſt inoffenſive, and battles between great armies might be fought at the particular deſire of ſeveral ladies of quality; who, together with the kings themſelves, might

be

be actual ſpectators of the conflict. Then might the field be this moment well ſtrewed with human carcaſſes, and the next, the dead men, or infinitely the greateſt part of them, might get up, like Mr. Bayes's troops, and march off either at the ſound of a drum or fiddle, as ſhould be previouſly agreed on.

I would avoid, if poſſible, treating this matter ludicrouſly, leſt grave men and politicians, whom I know to be offended at a jeſt, may cry piſh at it; but, in reality, might not a battle be as well decided by the greater number of broken heads, bloody noſes and black eyes, as by the greater heaps of mangled and murdered human bodies? Might not towns be contended for in the ſame manner? Indeed, this may be thought too detrimental a ſcheme to the French intereſt, ſince they would thus loſe the advantage they have over other nations, in the ſuperiority of their engineers: but when I conſider the gallantry and generoſity of that people, I am perſuaded they would never decline putting themſelves upon a par with their adverſary; or, as the phraſe is, making themſelves his match.

But ſuch reformations are rather to be wiſhed than hoped for: I ſhall content myſelf, therefore, with this ſhort hint, and return to my narrative.

Weſtern began now to enquire into the original riſe of this quarrel. To which neither Blifil nor Jones gave any anſwer; but Thwackum ſaid ſurlily, 'I believe, the cauſe is not far off: if you beat the buſhes well, you may find her.' 'Find her!' replied Weſtern, 'what have you been fighting for a wench?' 'Aſk the gentleman in his waiſtcoat there,' ſaid Thwackum, 'he beſt knows.' 'Nay, then, cries Weſtern, 'it is a wench certainly.—Ah, Tom, Tom; thou art a liquoriſh dog,——but come, gentlemen, be all friends, and go home with me, and make final peace over a bottle.' 'I aſk your pardon, Sir,' ſays Thwackum, 'it is no ſuch ſlight matter for a man of my character to be thus injuriouſly treated, and buffeted by a boy; only becauſe I would have done my duty, in endeavouring to deteſt and bring to juſtice a wanton harlot; but, indeed, the principal

fault

'fault lies in Mr. Allworthy and yourſelf; for, if 'you put the laws in execution, as you ought to do, 'you will ſoon rid the country of theſe vermin.'

'I would as ſoon rid the country of foxes,' cries Weſtern. 'I think we ought to encourage the recruit-'ing thoſe numbers which we are every day loſing in 'the war: but where is ſhe?——Prithee, Tom, ſhew 'me.' He then began to beat about, in the ſame language, and in the ſame manner, as if he had been beating for a hare, and at laſt cried out, 'Soho! Puſs 'is not far off. Here's her form, upon my ſoul; I 'believe I may cry ſtole away.' And indeed ſo he might, for he had now diſcovered the place whence the poor girl had, at the beginning of the fray, ſtolen away, upon as many feet as a hare generally uſes in travelling.

Sophia now deſired her father to return home; ſaying, ſhe found herſelf very faint, and apprehended a relapſe. The 'ſquire immediately complied with his daughter's requeſt (for he was the fondeſt of parents.) He earneſtly endeavoured to prevail with the whole company to go and ſup with him; but Blifil and Thwackum abſolutely refuſed; the former ſaying, there were more reaſons than he could then mention, why he muſt decline this honour; and the latter declaring (perhaps rightly) that it was not proper for a perſon of his function to be ſeen at any place in his preſent condition.

Jones was incapable of refuſing the pleaſure of being with his Sophia. So on he marched with 'ſquire Weſtern and his ladies, the parſon bringing up the rear. This had, indeed, offered to tarry with his brother Thwackum, profeſſing his regard for the cloth would not permit him to depart; but Thwackum would not accept the favour, and, with no great civility, puſhed him after Mr. Weſtern.

Thus ended this bloody fray; and thus ſhall end the fifth book of this hiſtory.

THE

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK VI.

Containing about three weeks.

CHAP. I.

Of Love.

IN our laſt book we have been obliged to deal pretty much with the paſſion of love; and in our ſucceeding book, ſhall be forced to handle this ſubject ſtill more largely. It may not, therefore, in this place, be improper to apply ourſelves to the examination of that modern doctrine, by which certain philoſophers, among many other wonderful diſcoveries, pretend to have found out, that there is no ſuch paſſion in the human breaſt.

Whether theſe philoſophers be the ſame with that ſurpriſing ſect, who are honourably mentioned by the late Dr. Swift; as having, by the mere force of genius alone, without the leaſt aſſiſtance of any kind of learning, or even reading, diſcovered that profound and invaluable ſecret, that there is no God: or whether they are not rather the ſame with thoſe who, ſome years ſince, very much alarmed the world, by ſhewing that there were no ſuch things as virtue or goodneſs really exiſting in human nature, and who deduced our beſt

beſt actions from pride, I will not here preſume to determine. In reality, I am inclined to ſuſpect, that all theſe ſeveral finders of truth are the very identical men, who are by others called the finders of gold. The method uſed in both theſe ſearches after truth, and after gold, being indeed one and the ſame, viz. the ſearching, rummaging, and examining into a naſty place; indeed, in the former inſtances, into the naſtieſt of all places, A BAD MIND.

But though in this particular, and perhaps in their ſucceſs, the truth-finder, and the gold-finder, may very properly be compared together; yet in modeſty, ſurely, there can be no compariſon between the two; for who ever heard of a gold-finder that had the impudence or folly to aſſert, from the ill ſucceſs of his ſearch, that there was no ſuch thing as gold in the world? whereas the truth-finder, having raked out that jakes, his own mind, and being there capable of tracing no ray of divinity, nor any thing virtuous, or good, or lovely, or loving, very fairly, honeſtly, and logically concludes, that no ſuch things exiſt in the whole creation.

To avoid, however, all contention, if poſſible, with theſe philoſophers, if they will be called ſo; and to ſhew our own diſpoſition to accommodate matters peaceably between us, we ſhall here make them ſome conceſſions, which may poſſibly put an end to the diſpute.

Firſt, we will grant that many minds, and perhaps thoſe of the philoſophers, are entirely free from the leaſt traces of ſuch a paſſion.

Secondly, that what is commonly called love, namely, the deſire of ſatisfying a voracious appetite with a certain quantity of delicate white human fleſh, is by no means that paſſion for which I here contend. This is indeed more properly hunger; and as no glutton is aſhamed to apply the word love to his appetite, and to ſay he LOVES ſuch and ſuch diſhes; ſo may the lover of this kind, with equal propriety, ſay, he HUNGERS after ſuch and ſuch women.

Thirdly, I will grant, which I believe will be a moſt acceptable conceſſion, that this love for which I

am

am an advocate, though it ſatisfies itſelf in a much more delicate manner, doth nevertheleſs ſeek its own ſatisfaction as much as the groſſeſt of all our appetites.

And, laſtly, that this love, when it operates towards one of a different ſex, is very apt, towards its complete gratification, to call in the aid of that hunger which I have mentioned above; and which it is ſo far from abating, that it heightens all its delights to a degree ſcarce imaginable by thoſe who have never been ſuſceptible of any other emotions, than what have proceeded from appetite alone.

In return to all theſe conceſſions, I deſire of the philoſophers to grant, that there is in ſome (I believe in many) human breaſts, a kind and benevolent diſpoſition, which is gratified by contributing to the happineſs of others. That in this gratification alone, as in friendſhip, in parental and filial affection, as indeed in general philanthrophy, there is a great and exquiſite delight. That if we will not call ſuch diſpoſition love, we have no name for it. That though the pleaſures ariſing from ſuch pure love may be heightened and ſweetened by the aſſiſtance of amorous deſires, yet the former can ſubſiſt alone, nor are they deſtroyed by the intervention of the latter. Laſtly, that eſteem and gratitude are the proper motives to love, as youth and beauty are to deſire; and therefore though ſuch deſire may naturally ceaſe, when age or ſickneſs overtakes its object; yet theſe can have no effect on love, nor ever ſhake or remove from a good mind, that ſenſation or paſſion which hath gratitude and eſteem for its baſis.

To deny the exiſtence of a paſſion of which we often ſee manifeſt inſtances, ſeems to be very ſtrange and abſurd; and can indeed proceed only from that ſelf-admonition which we have mentioned above: but how unfair is this? Doth the man who recognizes in his own heart no traces of avarice or ambition, conclude therefore that there are no ſuch paſſions in human nature? Why will we not modeſtly obſerve the ſame rule in judging of the good, as well as the evil of others? Or why, in any caſe, will we, as Shakeſpear phraſes it, 'put the world in our own perſon?'

Predominant vanity is, I am afraid, too much concerned here. This is one inſtance of that adulation which we beſtow on our own minds, and this almoſt univerſally. For there is ſcarce any man, how much ſoever he may deſpiſe the character of a flatterer, but will condeſcend in the meaneſt manner to flatter himſelf.

To thoſe, therefore, I apply for the truth of the above obſervations, whoſe own minds can bear teſtimony to what I have advanced.

Examine your heart, my good reader, and reſolve whether you do believe theſe matters with me. If you do, you may now proceed to their exemplification in the following pages; if you do not, you have, I aſſure you, already read more than you have underſtood; and it would be wiſer to purſue your buſineſs, or your pleaſures (ſuch as they are) than to throw away any more of your time in reading what you can neither taſte nor comprehend. To treat of the effects of love to you, muſt be as abſurd as to diſcourſe on colours to a man born blind; ſince poſſibly your idea of love may be as abſurd as that which we are told ſuch blind man once entertained of the colour ſcarlet: that colour ſeemed to him to be very much like the ſound of a trumpet: and love probably may, in your opinion, very greatly reſemble a diſh of ſoup, or a ſir-loin of roaſt-beef.

CHAP. II.

The character of Mrs. Weſtern. Her great learning and knowledge of the world, and an inſtance of the deep penetration which ſhe derived from thoſe advantages.

THE reader hath ſeen Mr. Weſtern, his ſiſter, and daughter, with young Jones, and the parſon, going together to Mr. Weſtern's houſe, where the greater part of the company ſpent the evening with much joy and feſtivity. Sophia was indeed the only grave perſon; for as to Jones, though love had now gotten entire poſſeſſion of his heart, yet the pleaſing reflection on Mr. Allworthy's recovery, and the pre-

preſence of his miſtreſs, joined to ſome tender looks which ſhe now and then could not refrain from giving him, ſo elevated our hero, that he joined the mirth of the other three, who were perhaps as good humoured people as any in the world.

Sophia retained the ſame gravity of countenance the next morning at breakfaſt; whence ſhe retired likewiſe earlier than uſual, leaving her father and aunt together. The 'ſquire took no notice of this change in his daughter's diſpoſition. To ſay the truth, though he was ſomewhat of a politician, and had been twice a candidate in the country intereſt at an election, he was a man of no great obſervation. His ſiſter was a lady of a different turn. She had lived about the court, and had ſeen the world. Hence ſhe had acquired all that knowledge which the ſaid world uſually communicates: and was a perfect miſtreſs of manners, cuſtoms, ceremonies, and faſhions; nor did her erudition ſtop her. She had conſiderably improved her mind by ſtudy; ſhe had not only read all the modern plays, operas, oratorios, poems, and romances; in all which ſhe was a critic; but had gone through Rapin's Hiſtory of England, Eachard's Roman Hiſtory, and many French *Memoires pour ſervir à l' Hiſtoire*; to theſe ſhe had added moſt of the political pamphlets and journals, publiſhed within the laſt twenty years. From which ſhe had attained a very competent ſkill in politics, and could diſcourſe very learnedly on the affairs of Europe. She was moreover excellently well ſkilled in the doctrine of amour, and knew better than any body who and who were together: a knowledge which ſhe the more eaſily attained, as her purſuit of it was never diverted by any affairs of her own; for either ſhe had no inclinations, or they had never been ſolicited; which laſt is indeed very probable: for her maſculine perſon, which was near ſix foot high, added to her manner and learning, poſſibly prevented the other ſex from regarding her, notwithſtanding her petticoats, in the light of a woman. However, as ſhe had conſidered the matter ſcientifically, ſhe perfectly well knew, though ſhe had never practiſed them, all the arts which fine ladies uſe when they deſire to give encouragement,

ragement, or to conceal liking, with all the long appendage of ſmiles, ogles, glances, &c. as they are at preſent practiſed in the beau monde. To ſum the whole, no ſpecies of diſguiſe or affectation had eſcaped her notice; but as to the plain ſimple workings of honeſt nature, as ſhe had never ſeen any ſuch, ſhe could know but little of them.

By means of this wonderful ſagacity, Mrs. Weſtern had now, as ſhe thought, made a diſcovery of ſomething in the mind of Sophia. The firſt hint of this ſhe took from the behaviour of the young lady in the field of battle: and the ſuſpicion which ſhe then conceived, was greatly corroborated by ſome obſervations which ſhe had made that evening and the next morning. However, being greatly cautious to avoid being found in a miſtake, ſhe carried the ſecret a whole fortnight in her boſom, giving only ſome oblique hints, by ſimpering, winks, nods, and now and then dropping an obſcure word, which indeed ſufficiently alarmed Sophia, but did not at all affect her brother.

Being at length, however, thoroughly ſatisfied of the truth of her obſervation, ſhe took an opportunity, one morning, when ſhe was alone with her brother, to interrupt one of his whiſtles in the following manner.

'Pray, brother, have you not obſerved ſomething 'very extraordinary in my niece lately?' 'No not I,' anſwered Weſtern; 'Is any thing the matter with the 'girl?' 'I think there is,' replies ſhe, 'and ſome-'thing of much conſequence too.' 'Why ſhe doth 'not complain of any thing,' cries Weſtern, 'and ſhe 'hath had the ſmall pox.' 'Brother,' returned ſhe, 'girls are liable to other diſtempers beſides the ſmall 'pox, and ſometimes poſſibly to much worſe.' Here Weſtern interrupted her with much earneſtneſs, and begged her, if any thing ailed his daughter, to acquaint him immediately, adding, 'ſhe knew he loved 'her more than his own ſoul, and that he would ſend 'to the world's end for the beſt phyſician to her.' 'Nay, nay,' anſwered ſhe, ſmiling, 'the diſtemper 'is not ſo terrible; but I believe, brother, you are 'convinced I know the world, and I promiſe you I

'was

'was never more deceived in my life, if my niece be 'not moſt deſperately in love.' 'How, in love,' cries Weſtern, in a paſſion, 'in love without acquainting 'me! I'll diſinherit her, I'll turn her out of doors, 'ſtark naked, without a farthing. Is all my kind-'neſs vor 'ur, and vondneſs o'ur come to this, to fall 'in love without aſking me leave?' 'But you will not,' anſwered Mrs. Weſtern, 'turn this daughter, whom 'you love better than your own ſoul, out of doors, 'before you know whether you ſhall approve her 'choice. Suppoſe ſhe ſhould have fixed on the very 'perſon whom you yourſelf would wiſh, I hope you 'would not be angry then.' No, no,' cries Weſtern, 'that would make a difference. If ſhe marries the 'man I would ha' her, ſhe may love whom ſhe pleaſes, 'I ſhan't trouble my head about that.' 'That is 'ſpoken,' anſwered the ſiſter, 'like a ſenſible man, but 'I believe the very perſon ſhe hath choſen, would be 'the very perſon you would chuſe for her. I will 'diſclaim all knowledge of the world if it is not ſo; 'and I believe, brother, you will allow I have ſome.' 'Why lookee, ſiſter,' ſaid Weſtern, 'I do believe you 'have as much as any woman; and to be ſure thoſe 'are women's matters. You know I don't love to 'hear you talk about politics, they belong to us, and 'petticoats ſhould not meddle: but come, who is the 'man?' 'Marry,' ſaid ſhe, 'you may find him out 'yourſelf, if you pleaſe. You, who are ſo great a po-'litician, can be at no great loſs. The judgment 'which can penetrate into the cabinets of princes, 'and diſcover the ſecret ſprings which move the great 'ſtate wheels in all the political machines of Europe, 'muſt ſurely, with very little difficulty, find out what 'paſſes in the rude uninformed mind of a girl.' 'Siſ-'ter,' cries the 'ſquire, 'I have often warned you not 'to talk the court gibberiſh to me. I tell you, I 'don't underſtand the lingo; but I can read a journal, 'or the London Evening-Poſt. Perhaps, indeed, there 'may be now and tan a verſe which I can't make much 'of, becauſe half the letters are left out; yet I know 'very well what is meant by that, and that our affairs 'don't go ſo well as they ſhould do, becauſe of bri-

'bery and corruption.' 'I pity your country ignorance from my heart,' cries the lady. 'Do you,' anſwered Weſtern, 'and I pity your town learning; 'I had rather be any thing than a courtier, and a preſbyterian, and a hanoverian too, as ſome people, I believe, are.' 'If you mean me,' anſwered ſhe, 'you know I am a woman, brother; and it ſignifies 'nothing what I am. Beſides——'I do know you 'are a woman,' cries the 'ſquire, 'and it is well for 'thee, that art one; if hadſt been a man, I promiſe 'thee I had lent thee a flick long ago.' 'Ay, there,' ſaid ſhe, 'in that flick lies all you fancied ſuperiority. Your bodies, and not your brains, are ſtronger 'than ours. Believe me, it is well for you that you 'are able to beat us; or, ſuch is the ſuperiority of 'our underſtanding, we ſhould make all of you what 'the brave and wiſe, and witty, and polite are already—our ſlaves.' 'I am glad I know your mind,' anſwered the 'ſquire, 'but we'll talk more of this 'matter another time. At preſent, do tell me what 'man it is you mean about my daughter.' Hold a moment, ſaid ſhe, 'while I digeſt that ſovereign con'tempt I have for your ſex; or elſe I ought to be angry too with you. There——I have made a ſhift to 'gulp it down. And now, good politic Sir, what 'think you of Mr. Blifil? Did ſhe not faint away on 'ſeeing him lie breathleſs on the ground? Did ſhe not, 'after he was recovered, turn pale again the moment we came up to that part of the field where he 'ſtood? And pray what elſe ſhould be the occaſion of 'all her melancholy that night at ſupper, the next 'morning, and indeed ever ſince?' 'Fore George!' cries the 'ſquire, now you mind me on't, I remember it all. It is certainly ſo, and I am glad on't, 'with all my heart. I knew Sophy was a good girl, 'and would not fall in love to make me angry. I was 'never more rejoiced in my life: for nothing can lie 'ſo handy together as our two eſtates. I had this matter in my head ſome time ago; for certainly the two 'eſtates are in a manner joined together in matrimony 'already, and it would be a thouſand pities to part 'them. It is true, indeed, there be larger eſtates in the

'the kingdom, but not in this country, and I had rather bate ſomething, than marry my daughter among 'ſtrangers and foreigners. Beſides moſt o' ſuch great 'eſtates be in the hands of lords, and I hate the very 'name of *themmun*. Well but, ſiſter, what would 'you adviſe me to do: for I tell you women know 'theſe matters better than we do?' 'O your humble 'ſervant, Sir,' anſwered the lady, 'we are obliged 'to you for allowing us a capacity in any thing. Since 'you are pleaſed then, moſt politic Sir, to aſk my 'advice, I think you may propoſe the match to All-'worthy yourſelf. There is no indecorum in the 'propoſal's coming from the parent of either ſide. 'King Alcinous, in Mr. Pope's Odyſſey, offers his 'daughter to Ulyſſes. I need not caution ſo politic 'a perſon not to ſay that your daughter is in love; 'that would indeed be againſt all rules.' 'Well,' ſaid the 'ſquire, 'I will propoſe it; but I ſhall cer-'tainly lend un a flick if he ſhould refuſe me.' 'Fear not, cries Mrs. Weſtern, 'the match is too 'advantageous to be refuſed,' 'I don't know that,' anſwered the 'ſquire, 'Allworthy is a queer b—ch, 'and money hath no effect o'un.' 'Brother,' ſaid the lady, 'your politics aſtoniſh me. Are you really 'to be impoſed on by profeſſions? Do you think Mr. 'Allworthy hath more contempt for money than other 'men, becauſe he profeſſes more? Such credulity 'would better become one of us weak women, than 'that wiſe ſex which heaven hath formed for politi-'cians. Indeed, brother, you would make a fine 'plenipo to negociate with the French. They would 'ſoon perſuade you, that they take towns out of mere 'defenſive principles.' 'Siſter,' anſwered the 'ſquire, with much ſcorn, 'let your friends at court anſwer 'for the towns taken; as you are a woman, I ſhall 'lay no blame upon you; for I ſuppoſe they are wiſer 'than to truſt women with ſecrets.' He accompanied this with ſo ſarcaſtical a laugh, that Mrs. Weſtern could bear no longer. She had been all this time fretted in a tender part (for ſhe was indeed very deeply ſkilled in theſe matters, and very violent in them) and therefore burſt forth in a rage, declared her brother to

be both a clown and a blockhead, and that ſhe would ſtay no longer in his houſe.

The 'ſquire, though perhaps he had never read Machiavel, was, however, in many points, a perfect politician. He ſtrongly held all thoſe wiſe tenets, which are ſo well inculcated in that Politico-Peripatetic ſchool of Exchange-alley. He knew the juſt value and only uſe of money, viz. to lay it up. He was likewiſe well ſkilled in the exact value of reverſions, expectations, &c. and had often conſidered the amount of his ſiſter's fortune, and the chance he or his poſterity had of inheriting it. This he was infinitely too wiſe to ſacrifice to a trifling reſentment. When he found, therefore, he had carried matters too far, he began to think of reconciling them: which was no very difficult taſk, as the lady had great affection for her brother, and ſtill greater for her niece; and though too ſuſceptible of an affront offered to her ſkill in politics, on which ſhe much valued herſelf, was a woman of a very extraordinary good and ſweet diſpoſition.

Having firſt, therefore, laid violent hands on the horſes, for whoſe eſcape from the ſtable no place but the window was left open; he next applied himſelf to his ſiſter, ſoftened and ſoothed her, by unſaying all he had ſaid, and by aſſertions directly contrary to thoſe which had incenſed her. Laſtly, he ſummoned the eloquence of Sophia to his aſſiſtance, who beſides a moſt graceful and winning addreſs, had the advantage of being heard with great favour and partiality by her aunt.

The reſult of the whole was a kind ſmile from Mrs. Weſtern, who ſaid, 'Brother, you are abſolutely a 'perfect Croat; but as thoſe have their uſe in the army 'of the empreſs queen, ſo you likewiſe have ſome 'good in you. I will therefore once more ſign a trea'ty of peace with you, and ſee that you do not in'fringe it on your ſide; at leaſt, as you are ſo excel'lent a politician, I may expect you will keep your 'leagues, like the French, till your intereſt calls upon 'you to break them.'

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

Containing two defiances to the critics.

THE 'ſquire having ſettled matters with his ſiſter, as we have ſeen in the laſt chapter, was ſo greatly impatient to communicate the propoſal to Allworthy, that Mrs. Weſtern had the utmoſt difficulty to prevent him from viſiting that gentleman in his ſickneſs, for this purpoſe.

Mr. Allworthy had been engaged to dine with Mr. Weſtern at the time when he was taken ill. He was therefore no ſooner diſcharged out of the cuſtody of phyſic, but he thought (as was uſual with him on all occaſions, both the higheſt and the loweſt) of fulfilling his engagement.

In the interval between the time of the dialogue in the laſt chapter, and this day of public entertainment, Sophia had, from certain obſcure hints thrown out by her aunt, collected ſome apprehenſion that the ſagacious lady ſuſpected her paſſion for Jones. She now reſolved to take this opportunity of wiping out all ſuch ſuſpicion, and for that purpoſe to put an entire conſtraint on her behaviour.

Firſt, ſhe endeavoured to conceal a throbbing melancholy heart with the utmoſt ſprightlineſs in her countenance, and the higheſt gaiety in her manner. Secondly, ſhe addreſſed her whole diſcourſe to Mr. Blifil, and took not the leaſt notice of poor Jones the whole day.

The 'ſquire was ſo delighted with this conduct of his daughter, that he ſcarce eat any dinner, and ſpent almoſt his whole time in watching opportunities of conveying ſigns of his approbation by winks and nods to his ſiſter, who was not at firſt altogether ſo pleaſed with what ſhe ſaw as was her brother.

In ſhort, Sophia ſo greatly overacted her part, that her aunt was at firſt ſtaggered, and began to ſuſpect ſome affectation in her niece; but as ſhe was herſelf a woman of great art, ſo ſhe ſoon attributed this to extreme art in Sophia. She remembered the many hints

ſhe had given her niece concerning her being in love, and imagined the young lady had taken this way to rally her out of her opinion, by an overacted civility; a notion that was greatly corroborated by the exceſſive gaiety with which the whole was accompanied. We cannot here avoid remarking that this conjecture would have been better founded, had Sophia lived ten years in the air of Groſvenor-ſquare, where young ladies do learn a wonderful knack of rallying and playing with that paſſion, which is a mighty ſerious thing in woods and groves an hundred miles diſtant from London.

To ſay the truth, in diſcovering the deceit of others, it matters much that our own art be wound up, if I may uſe the expreſſion, in the ſame key with theirs: for very artful men ſometimes miſcarry by fancying others wiſer, or in other words, greater knaves than they really are. As this obſervation is pretty deep, I will illuſtrate it with the following ſhort ſtory. Three countrymen were purſuing a Wiltſhire thief through Brentford. The ſimpleſt of them ſeeing the Wiltſhire houſe written under a ſign, adviſed his companions to enter it, for there moſt probably they would find their countryman. The ſecond, who was wiſer, laughed at this ſimplicity; but the third, who was wiſer ſtill, anſwered, 'Let us go in, however, for he may think 'we ſhould not ſuſpect him of going amongſt his own 'countrymen.' They accordingly went in, and ſearched the houſe, and by that means miſſed overtaking the thief, who was, at that time, but a little way before them; and who, as they all knew, but had never once reflected, could not read.

The reader will pardon a digreſſion in which ſo invaluable a ſecret is communicated, ſince every gameſter will agree how neceſſary it is to know exactly the play of another, in order to countermine him. This will, moreover, afford a reaſon why the wiſer man, as is often ſeen, is the bubble of the weaker, and why many ſimple and innocent characters are ſo generally miſunderſtood, and miſrepreſented; but what is moſt material, this will account for the deceit which Sophia put on her politic aunt.

Dinner

Dinner being ended, and the company retired into the garden, Mr. Weſtern, who was thoroughly convinced of the certainty of what his ſiſter had told him, took Mr. Allworthy aſide, and very bluntly propoſed a match between Sophia and young Mr. Blifil.

Mr. Allworthy was not one of thoſe men, whoſe hearts flutter at any unexpected and ſudden tidings of worldly profit. His mind was, indeed, tempered with that philoſophy which becomes a man and a chriſtian. He affected no abſolute ſuperiority to all pleaſure and pain, to all joy and grief; but was not at the ſame time to be diſcompoſed and ruffled by every accidental blaſt; by every ſmile or frown of fortune. He received, therefore, Mr. Weſtern's propoſal without any viſible emotion, or without any alteration of countenance. He ſaid, the alliance was ſuch as he ſincerely wiſhed, then launched forth into a very juſt encomium on the young lady's merit; acknowledged the offer to be advantageous in point of fortune; and after thanking Mr. Weſtern for the good opinion he had profeſſed of his nephew, concluded, that if the young people liked each other, he ſhould be very deſirous to complete the affair.

Weſtern was a little diſappointed at Mr. Allworthy's anſwer, which was not ſo warm as he expected. He treated the doubt whether the young people might like one another with great contempt; ſaying, 'That parents were the beſt judges of proper matches for their children; that, for his part, he ſhould inſiſt on the moſt reſigned obedience from his daughter; and if any young fellow could refuſe ſuch a bedfellow, he was his humble ſervant, and hoped there was no harm done.'

Allworthy endeavoured to ſoften this reſentment by many elogiums on Sophia; declaring, he had no doubt but that Mr. Blifil would very gladly receive the offer; but all was ineffectual, he could obtain no other anſwer from the 'ſquire but—'I ſay no more—'I humbly hope there's no harm done—that's all.' Which words he repeated at leaſt a hundred times before they parted.

Allworthy was too well acquainted with his neighbour to be offended at this behaviour; and though he was ſo averſe to the rigour which ſome parents exerciſe on their children in the article of marriage, that he had reſolved never to force his nephew's inclinations, he was nevertheleſs much pleaſed with the proſpect of this union: for the whole country reſounded the praiſes of Sophia, and he had himſelf greatly admired the uncommon endowments of both her mind and perſon. To which, I believe we may add, the conſideration of her vaſt fortune, which, though he was too ſober to be intoxicated with it, he was too ſenſible to deſpiſe.

And here, in defiance of all the barking critics in the world, I muſt and will introduce a digreſſion concerning true wiſdom, of which Mr. Allworthy was in reality as great a pattern as he was of goodneſs.

True wiſdom then, notwithſtanding all which Mr. Hogarth's poor poet may have writ againſt riches, and in ſpight of all which any rich, well-fed divine may have preached againſt pleaſure, conſiſts not in the contempt of either of theſe. A man may have as much wiſdom in the poſſeſſion of an affluent fortune, as any beggar in the ſtreets; or may enjoy a handſome wife or a hearty friend, and ſtill remain as wiſe as any ſour popiſh recluſe, who buries all his ſocial faculties, and ſtarves his belly while he well laſhes his back.

To ſay truth, the wiſeſt man is the likelieſt to poſſeſs all worldly bleſſings in an eminent degree: for as that moderation which wiſdom preſcribes is the ſureſt way to uſeful wealth; ſo can it alone qualify us to taſte many pleaſures. The wiſe man gratifies every appetite and every paſſion, while the fool ſacrifices all the reſt to pall and ſatiate one.

It may be objected, that very wiſe men have been notoriouſly avaricious. I anſwer, Not wiſe in that inſtance. It may likewiſe be ſaid, That the wiſeſt men have been, in their youth, immoderately fond of pleaſure. I anſwer, They were not wiſe then.

Wiſdom, in ſhort, whoſe leſſons have been repreſented as ſo hard to learn by thoſe who never were at her ſchool, only teaches us to extend a ſimple maxim univer-

univerſally known and followed even in the loweſt life, a little farther than that life carries it. And this is not to buy at too dear a price.

Now, whoever takes this maxin abroad with him into the grand market of the world, and conſtantly applies it to honours, to riches, to pleaſures, and to every other commodity which that market affords, is, I will venture to affirm, a wiſe man; and muſt be ſo acknowledged in the worldly ſenſe of the word: for he makes the beſt of bargains; ſince in reality he purchaſes every thing at the price only of a little trouble, and carries home all the good things I have mentioned, while he keeps his health, his innocence, and his reputation, the common prices which are paid for them by others, entire and to himſelf.

From this moderation, likewiſe, he learns two other leſſons, which complete his character. Firſt, never to be intoxicated when he hath made the beſt bargain, nor dejected when the market is empty, or when its commodities are too dear for his purchaſe.

But I muſt remember on what ſubject I am writing, and not treſpaſs too far on the patience of a good natured critic. Here therefore I put an end to the chapter.

CHAP. IV.

Containing ſundry curious matters.

AS ſoon as Mr. Allworthy returned home, he took Mr. Blifil apart, and after ſome preface, communicated to him the propoſal which had been made by Mr. Weſtern, and, at the ſame time, informed him how agreeable this match would be to himſelf.

The charms of Sophia had not made the leaſt impreſſion on Blifil; not that his heart was pre-engaged; neither was he totally inſenſible of beauty, or had any averſion to women; but his appetites were, by nature, ſo moderate, that he was able, by philoſophy or by ſtudy, or by ſome other method, eaſily to ſubdue them; and as to that paſſion which we have treated of

in the firſt chapter of this book, he had not the leaſt tincture of it in his whole compoſition.

But though he was ſo entirely free from that mixed paſſion, of which we there treated, and of which the virtues and beauty of Sophia formed ſo notable an object; yet was he altogether as well furniſhed with ſome other paſſions, that promiſed themſelves very full gratification in the young lady's fortune. Such were avarice and ambition, which divided the dominion of the mind between them. He had more than once conſidered the poſſeſſion of this fortune as a very deſirable thing, and had entertained ſome diſtant views concerning it: but his own youth and that of the young lady, and indeed principally a reflection that Mr. Weſtern might marry again, and have more children, had reſtrained him from too haſty or eager a purſuit.

This laſt and moſt material objection was now in a great meaſure removed, as the propoſal came from Mr. Weſtern himſelf. Bliſil, therefore, after a very ſhort heſitation, anſwered Mr. Allworthy, that matrimony was a ſubject on which he had not yet thought: but that he was ſo ſenſible of his friendly and fatherly care, that he ſhould in all things ſubmit himſelf to his pleaſure.

Allworthy was naturally a man of ſpirit, and his preſent gravity aroſe from true wiſdom and philoſophy, not from any original phlegm in his diſpoſition; for he had poſſeſſed much fire in his youth, and had married a beautiful woman for love. He was not, therefore, greatly pleaſed with this cold anſwer of his nephew; nor could he help launching forth into the praiſes of Sophia, and expreſſing ſome wonder that the heart of a young man could be impregnable to the force of ſuch charms, unleſs it was guarded by ſome prior affection.

Bliſil aſſured him he had no ſuch guard; and then proceeded to diſcourſe ſo wiſely and religiouſly on love and marriage, that he would have ſtopt the mouth of a parent much leſs devoutly inclined than was his uncle. In the end, the good man was ſatisfied, that his nephew, far from having any objections to Sophia, had that eſteem for her, which in ſober and virtuous

minds

minds is the ſure foundation of friendſhip and love. And as he doubted not but the lover would, in a little time, become altogether as agreeable to his miſtreſs, he foreſaw great happineſs ariſing to all parties by ſo proper and deſirable an union. With Mr. Bliſil's conſent, therefore, he wrote the next morning to Mr. Weſtern, acquainting him that his nephew had very thankfully and gladly received the propoſal, and would be ready to wait on the young lady, whenever ſhe ſhould be pleaſed to accept his viſit.

Weſtern was much pleaſed with this letter, and immediately returned an anſwer; in which, without having mentioned a word to his daughter, he appointed that very afternoon for opening the ſcene of courtſhip.

As ſoon as he had diſpatched this meſſenger, he went in queſt of his ſiſter, whom he found reading and expounding the Gazette to parſon Supple. To this expoſition he was obliged to attend near a quarter of an hour, though with great violence to his natural impetuoſity, before he was ſuffered to ſpeak. At length however, he found an opportunity of acquainting the lady, that he had buſineſs of great conſequence to impart to her; to which ſhe anſwered, 'Brother, I am 'entirely at your ſervice. Things look ſo well in the 'North that I was never in a better humour.'

The parſon then withdrawing, Weſtern acquainted her with all which had paſſed, and deſired her to communicate the affair to Sophia, which ſhe readily and chearfully undertook; though perhaps her brother was a little obliged to that agreeable northern aſpect which had ſo delighted her, that he heard no comment on his proceedings; for they were certainly ſomewhat too haſty and violent.

CHAP. V.

In which is related what paſſed between Sophia and her aunt.

SOPHIA was in her chamber reading, when her aunt came in. The moment ſhe ſaw Mrs. Weſtern, ſhe ſhut the book with ſo much eagerneſs, that

the good lady could not forbear aſking her, what book that was which ſhe ſeemed ſo much afraid of ſhewing? 'Upon my word, Madam,' anſwered Sophia, 'it is 'a book which I am neither aſhamed, nor afraid to 'own I have read. It is the production of a young 'lady of faſhion, whoſe good underſtanding, I think, 'doth honour to her ſex, and whoſe good heart is an 'honour to human nature.' Mrs. Weſtern then took up the book, and immediately after threw it down, ſaying,——'Yes, the author is of a very good fami-'ly; but ſhe is not much among people one knows. 'I have never read it; for the beſt judges ſay, there is 'not much in it.' 'I dare not, Madam, ſet up my 'own opinion,' ſays Sophia, 'againſt the beſt judges, 'but there appears to me a great deal of human nature 'in it; and in many parts ſo much true tenderneſs 'and delicacy, that it hath coſt me many a tear.' 'Ay, 'and do you love to cry then?' ſays the aunt. 'I 'love a tender ſenſation,' anſwered the niece, 'and 'would pay the price of a tear for it at any time.' 'Well, but ſhew me,' ſaid the aunt, 'what was you 'reading when I came in; there was ſomething very 'tender in that, I believe, and very loving too. You 'bluſh, my dear Sophia. Ah! Child, you ſhould 'read books, which would teach you a little hypocri-'ſy, which would inſtruct you how to hide your 'thoughts a little better.' 'I hope, Madam,' an-ſwered Sophia, 'I have no thoughts which I ought to 'be aſhamed of diſcovering.' 'Aſhamed! no,' cries the aunt, 'I don't think you have any thoughts which 'you ought to be aſhamed of; and yet, child, you 'bluſhed juſt now when I mentioned the word Loving. 'Dear Sophy, be aſſured you have not one thought 'which I am not well acquainted with; as well, child, 'as the French are with our motions, long before we 'put them in execution. Did you think, child, be-'cauſe you have been able to impoſe upon your father, 'that you could impoſe upon me? Do you imagine I 'did not know the reaſon of your over-acting all that 'friendſhip for Mr. Bliſil yeſterday? I have ſeen a 'little too much of the world, to be ſo deceived. 'Nay, nay, do not bluſh again. I tell you it is a

'paſſion

'paſſion you need not be aſhamed of.——It is a paſ-
'ſion I myſelf approve, and have already brought
'your father into the approbation of it. Indeed I
'ſolely conſider your inclination; for I would always
'have that gratified, if poſſible, though one may ſa-
'crifice higher proſpects. Come, I have news which
'will delight your very ſoul. Make me your confi-
'dant, and I will undertake you ſhall be happy to the
'very extent of your wiſhes.' 'La Madam,' ſays Sophia, looking more fooliſhly then ever ſhe did in her life, 'I know not what to ſay.—Why, Madam, 'ſhould you ſuſpect?'—'Nay, no diſhoneſty,' returned Mrs. Weſtern. 'Conſider, you are ſpeaking to 'one of your own ſex, to an aunt, and I hope you 'are convinced you ſpeak to a friend. Conſider, you 'are only revealing to me what I know already, and 'what I plainly ſaw yeſterday through that moſt art-'ful of all diſguiſes, which you had put on, and 'which muſt have deceived any one who had not per-'fectly known the world. Laſtly, conſider it is a 'paſſion which I highly approve.' 'La Madam,' ſays Sophia, 'you come upon one ſo unawares, 'and on a ſudden. To be ſure, Madam, I am not 'blind,—and certainly, if it be a fault to ſee all hu-'man perfections aſſembled together.—But is it poſ-'ſible my father and you, Madam, can ſee with my 'eyes?' 'I tell you, anſwered the aunt, we do en-'tirely approve; and this very afternoon your father 'hath appointed for you to receive your lover?' 'My 'father, this afternoon!' cries Sophia, with the blood ſtarting from her face.—'Yes, child,' ſaid the aunt, 'this afternoon. You know the impetuoſity 'of my brother's temper. I acquainted him with 'the paſſion which I firſt diſcovered in you that even 'ing when you fainted away in the field. I ſaw it in 'your fainting. I ſaw it immediately upon your re-'covery. I ſaw it that evening at ſupper, and the 'next morning at breakfaſt: (you know, child, I 'have ſeen the world.) Well, I no ſooner acquaint-'ed my brother, but he immediately wanted to pro-'poſe it to Allworthy. He propoſed it yeſterday, 'Allworthy conſented, (as to be ſure he muſt with

'joy)

'joy) and this afternoon, I tell you, you are to put 'on all your beſt airs.' 'This afternoon!' cries 'Sophia. Dear aunt, you frighten me out of my 'ſenſes.' 'O, my dear,' ſaid the aunt, 'you will 'ſoon come to yourſelf again; for he is a charming 'young fellow, that's the truth on't. 'Nay, I will 'own,' ſays Sophia, 'I know none with ſuch perfec-'tions. So brave, and yet ſo gentle; ſo witty, yet ſo 'inoffenſive; ſo humane, ſo civil, ſo genteel, ſo hand-'ſome! What ſignifies his being baſe born, when com-'pared with ſuch qualifications as theſe?' 'Baſe 'born! what do you mean?' ſaid the aunt, 'Mr. 'Blifil baſe born!' Sophia turned inſtantly pale at this 'name, and faintly repeated it. Upon which the aunt cried, 'Mr. Blifil, ay Mr. Blifil, of whom elſe have 'we been talking?' 'Good heavens,' anſwered So-phia, ready to ſink, 'of Mr. Jones I thought; I am 'ſure I know no other who deſerves——.' 'I proteſt, cries the aunt, 'you frighten me in your turn. Is it 'Mr. Jones, and not Mr. Blifil, who is the object of 'you affection?' 'Mr. Blifil!' repeated Sophia, 'Sure it is impoſſible you can be in earneſt; if you 'are, I am the moſt miſerable woman alive.' Mrs. Weſtern now ſtood a few moments ſilent, while ſparks of fiery rage flaſhed from her eyes. At length collecting all her force of voice, ſhe thundered forth in the fol-lowing inarticulate ſounds.

'And is it poſſible you can think of diſgracing 'your family by allying yourſelf to a baſtard? Can 'the blood of the Weſterns ſubmit to ſuch contamina-'tion! If you have not ſenſe ſufficient to reſtrain ſuch 'monſtrous inclinations, I thought the pride of our 'family would have prevented you from giving the 'leaſt encouragement to ſo baſe an affection; much 'leſs did I imagine you would ever have had the aſſu-'rance to own it to my face.'

'Madam,' anſwered Sophia, trembling, 'what I 'have ſaid you have extorted from me. I do not re-'member to have ever mentioned the name of Mr. 'Jones, with approbation, to any one before; nor 'ſhould I now, had I not conceived he had had your 'approbation. Whatever were my thoughts of that poor

'unhappy

'unhappy young man, I intended to have carried 'them with me to my grave.—To that grave where 'only now, I find, I am to ſeek repoſe.'——Here ſhe ſunk down in her chair, drowned in her tears, and in all the moving ſilence of unutterable grief, preſented a ſpectacle which muſt have affected almoſt the hardeſt heart.

All this tender ſorrow, however, raiſed no compaſſion in her aunt. On the contrary, ſhe now fell into the moſt violent rage.——'And I would rather,' ſhe cried, in a moſt vehement voice, 'follow you to 'your grave, than I would ſee you diſgrace yourſelf 'and your family by ſuch a match. O heavens! could 'I have ever ſuſpected that I ſhould live to hear a niece 'of mine declare a paſſion for ſuch a fellow? You 'are the firſt,—yes, Miſs Weſtern, you are the firſt 'of your name who ever entertained ſo groveling a 'thought. A family ſo noted for the prudence of 'its women.'——Here ſhe run on a full quarter of an hour, till having exhauſted her breath rather than her rage, ſhe concluded with threatening to go immediately and acquaint her brother.

Sophia then threw herſelf at her feet, and laying hold of her hands, 'begged her, with tears, to con-'ceal what ſhe had drawn from her; urging the vio-'lence of her father's temper, and proteſting that no 'inclinations of her's ſhould ever prevail with her to 'do any thing which might offend him.'

Mrs. Weſtern ſtood a moment looking at her, and then having recollected herſelf, ſaid, 'That on one 'conſideration only ſhe would keep the ſecret from her 'brother; and this was, that Sophia ſhould promiſe 'to entertain Mr. Blifil that very afternoon as her 'lover, and to regard him as the perſon who was to 'be her huſband.'

Poor Sophia was too much in her aunt's power to deny her any thing poſitively; ſhe was obliged to promiſe that ſhe would ſee Mr. Blifil, and be as civil to him as poſſible; but begged her aunt that the match might not be hurried on. She ſaid, 'Mr. Blifil was 'by no means agreeable to her, and ſhe hoped her fa-

'ther

'ther would be prevailed on not to make her the moſt 'wretched of women.'

Mrs. Weſtern aſſured her, 'That the match was entirely agreed upon, and that nothing could or ſhould 'prevent it.' 'I muſt own,' ſaid ſhe, 'I looked on 'it as a matter of indifference; nay, perhaps, had 'ſome ſcruples about it before, which were actually 'got over by my thinking it highly agreeable to your 'own inclinations; but now I regard it as the moſt 'eligible thing in the world; nor ſhall there be, 'if I can prevent it, a moment of time loſt on the oc'caſion.'

Sophia replied, 'Delay at leaſt, Madam, I may 'expect from both your goodneſs and my father's. 'Sure you will give me time to endeavour to get the 'better of ſo ſtrong a diſinclination as I have at pre'ſent to this perſon.'

The aunt anſwered, 'She knew too much of the 'world to be ſo deceived; that as ſhe was ſenſible ano'ther man had her affections, ſhe ſhould perſuade Mr. 'Weſtern to haſten the match as much as poſſible. 'It would be bad politics indeed,' added ſhe, 'to pro'tract a ſiege when the enemy's army is at hand, and 'in danger of relieving it. No no, Sophy,' ſaid 'ſhe, 'as I am convinced you have a violent paſſion, 'which you can never ſatisfy with honour, I will do 'all I can to put your honour out of the care of your 'family; for when you are married, thoſe matters 'will belong only to the conſideration of your huſ'band. I hope, child, you will always have pru'dence enough to act as becomes you; but if you 'ſhould not, marriage hath ſaved many a woman 'from ruin.'

Sophia well underſtood what her aunt meant; but did not think proper to make her an anſwer. However, ſhe took a reſolution to ſee Mr. Bliſil, and to behave to him as civilly as ſhe could; for on that condition only ſhe obtained a promiſe from her aunt to keep ſecret the liking which her ill fortune, rather than any ſcheme of Mrs. Weſtern, had unhappily drawn from her.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Containing a dialogue between Sophia and Mrs. Honour, which may a little relieve thoſe tender affections which the foregoing ſcene may have raiſed in the mind of a good-natured reader.

MRS. Weſtern, having obtained that promiſe from her niece which we have ſeen in the laſt chapter, withdrew; and preſently after arrived Mrs. Honour. She was at work in a neighbouring apartment, and had been ſummoned to the key-hole by ſome vociferation in the preceding dialogue, where ſhe had continued during the remaining part of it. At her entry into the room, ſhe found Sophia ſtanding motionleſs, with the tears trickling from her eyes. Upon which ſhe immediately ordered a proper quantity of tears into her own eyes, and then began, 'O gemini, my dear lady, what is the matter?' 'Nothing,' cries Sophia. 'Nothing! O dear Madam,' anſwers Mrs. Honour, 'you muſt not tell me that, when your 'ladyſhip is in this taking, and when there hath been 'ſuch a preamble between your ladyſhip and Madam 'Weſtern.' 'Don't teaze me,' cries Sophia, 'I tell 'you nothing is the matter.—Good heavens! why 'was I born;'—'Nay, Madam,' ſays Mrs. Honour, 'you ſhall never perſuade me, that your la'ſhip can 'lament yourſelf ſo for nothing. To be ſure I am 'but a ſervant; but to be ſure I have been always 'faithful to your la'ſhip, and to be ſure I would 'ſerve your la'ſhip with my life.' 'My dear Honour,' ſays Sophia, 'tis not in thy power to be of any ſer'vice to me. I am irretrievably undone.' 'Heaven 'forbid,' anſwered the waiting woman; but if I can't 'be of any ſervice to you, pray tell me, Madam, 'it will be ſome comfort to me to know: pray dear 'Ma'm tell me what's the matter.' 'My father,' cries Sophia, 'is going to marry me to a man I both 'deſpiſe and hate.' 'O dear Ma'm,' anſwered the other, 'who is this wicked man? for to be ſure he 'is very bad, or your la'ſhip would not deſpiſe him.'

'Hi-

'His name is poiſon to my tongue,' replied Sophia, 'thou wilt know it too ſoon.' Indeed to confeſs the truth, ſhe knew it already, and therefore was not very inquiſitive as to that point. She then proceeded thus; 'I don't pretend to give your la'ſhip advice, whereof 'your la'ſhip knows much better than I can pretend 'to, being but a ſervant; but, i'ſackins! no father 'in England ſhould marry me againſt my conſent. 'And to be ſure, the 'ſquire is ſo good, that if he 'did but know your la'ſhip deſpiſes and hates the 'young man, to be ſure he would not deſire you to 'marry him. And if your la'ſhip would but give me 'leave to tell my maſter ſo.—To be ſure it would be 'more proper to come from your own mouth; but as 'your la'ſhip doth not care to foul your tongue with 'his naſty name.' 'You are miſtaken, Honour,' ſays Sophia, 'my father was determined before he ever 'thought fit to mention it to me.' 'More ſhame for 'him,' cries Honour, 'you are to go to bed to him, 'and not maſter. And thof a man may be a very pro-'per man, yet every woman mayn't think him hand-'ſome alike. I am ſure my maſter would never act 'in this manner of his own head. I wiſh ſome people 'would trouble themſelves only with what belongs to 'them; they would not, I believe, like to be ſerved 'ſo, if it was their own caſe; for though I am a 'maid, I can eaſily believe as how all men are not 'equally agreeable. And what ſignifies your la'ſhip 'having ſo great a fortune, if you can't pleaſe your-'ſelf with the man you think moſt handſomeſt? Well, 'I ſay nothing, but to be ſure it is pity ſome folks 'had not been better born; nay, as for that matter, 'I ſhould not mind it myſelf; but then there is not ſo 'much money, and what of that? Your la'ſhip hath 'money enough for both; and where can your la'ſhip 'beſtow your fortune better? For to be ſure every 'one muſt allow, that he is the moſt handſomeſt, 'charmingeſt, fineſt, talleſt, propereſt man in the 'world.' 'What do you mean by running on in 'this manner to me?' cries Sophia with a very grave countenance. 'Have I ever given any encourage-'ment for theſe liberties?' 'Nay, Ma'am, I aſk

'pardon;

'pardon; I meant no harm,' anſwered ſhe: 'but to 'be ſure the poor gentleman hath run in my head 'ever ſince I ſaw him this morning.—To be ſure, if 'you la'ſhip had but ſeen him juſt now, you muſt have 'pitied him. Poor gentleman! I wiſhes ſome miſ-'fortune hath not happened to him: for he hath been 'walking about with his arms acroſs, and looking ſo 'melancholy all this morning; I vow and proteſt it 'made me almoſt cry to ſee him.' 'To ſee whom?' ſays Sophia. 'Poor Mr. Jones,' anſwered Honour. 'See him! Why, where did you ſee him?' cries Sophia. 'By the canal, Ma'am,' ſays honour. 'There 'he hath been walking all this morning, and at laſt 'there he ſaid himſelf down; I believe he lies there 'ſtill. To be ſure, if it had not been for my modeſ-'ty, being a maid, as I am, I ſhould have gone and 'ſpoke to him.' Do, Ma'am, let me go and ſee, 'only for a fancy, whether he is there ſtill.' 'Pugh!' ſays Sophia, 'There! no, no, what ſhould he do 'there? He is gone before this time to be ſure. Be-'ſides, why—what—why ſhould you go to ſee? 'Beſides, I want you for ſomething elſe. Go, 'fetch me my hat and gloves. I ſhall walk with my 'aunt in the grove before dinner.' Honour did im-mediately as ſhe was bid, and Sophia put her hat on; when looking in the glaſs, ſhe fancied the ribbon with which her hat was tied, did not become her, and ſo ſent her maid back again for a ribbon of a different co-lour; and then giving Mrs. Honour repeated charges not to leave her work on any account, as ſhe ſaid it was in violent haſte, and muſt be finiſhed that very day; ſhe muttered ſomething more about going to the grove, and then ſallied out the contrary way, and walked as faſt as her tender trembling limbs could carry her, di-rectly towards the canal.

Jones had been there, as Mrs. Honour had told her: he had indeed ſpent two hours there that morn-ing in melancholy contemplation on his Sophia, and had gone out from the garden at one door, the mo-ment ſhe entered it at another. So that thoſe un-lucky minutes which had been ſpent in changing the ribbons, had prevented the lovers from meeting at

this

this time: a moſt unfortunate accident, from which my fair readers will not fail to draw a very wholeſome leſſon. And here I ſtrictly forbid all male critics to intermeddle with a circumſtance, which I have recounted only for the ſake of the ladies, and upon which they are only at liberty to comment.

CHAP. VII.

A picture of formal courtſhip in miniature, as it always ought to be drawn, and a ſcene of a tender kind painted at full length.

IT was well remarked by one, (and perhaps by more) that misfortunes do not come ſingle. This wiſe maxim was now verified by Sophia, who was not only diſappointed of ſeeing the man ſhe loved; but had the vexation of being obliged to dreſs herſelf out, in order to receive a viſit from the man ſhe hated.

That afternoon Mr. Weſtern, for the firſt time, acquainted his daughter with his intention; telling her he knew very well that ſhe had heard it before from her aunt. Sophia looked very grave upon this, nor could ſhe prevent a few pearls from ſtealing into her eyes. 'Come, come,' ſays Weſtern, 'none of your 'maideniſh airs; I know all; I aſſure you, ſiſter hath 'told me all.'

'Is it poſſible,' ſays Sophia, 'that my aunt can 'have betrayed me already?' 'Ay, ay,' ſays Weſtern, 'betrayed you! ay. Why you betrayed yourſelf yeſ-'terday at dinner. You ſhewed your fancy very 'plainly, I think. But you young girls never know 'what you would be at. So you cry becauſe I am 'going to marry you to the man you are in love with! 'Your mother, I remember, whimpered and whined 'juſt in the ſame manner; but it was all over within 'twenty-four hours after we were married; Mr. Bliſil 'is a briſk young man, and will ſoon put an end to 'your ſqueamiſhneſs. Come, chear up, chear up, I 'expect un every minute.'

Sophia was now convinced that her aunt had behaved honourably to her; and ſhe determined to go through

through that diſagreeable afternoon with as much reſolution as poſſible, and without giving the leaſt ſuſpicion in the world to her father.

Mr. Blifil ſoon arrived; and Mr. Weſtern ſoon after withdrawing, left the young couple together.

Here a long ſilence of near a quarter of an hour enſued: for the gentleman who was to begin the converſation had all that unbecoming modeſty which conſiſts in baſhfulneſs. He often attempted to ſpeak, and as often ſuppreſſed his words juſt at the very point of utterance. At laſt out they broke in a torrent of far-fetched and high-ſtrained compliments, which were anſwered on her ſide, by downcaſt looks, half bows, and civil monoſyllables. Blifil from his inexperience in the ways of women, and from his conceit of himſelf, took this behaviour for a modeſt aſſent to his courtſhip; and when to ſhorten a ſcene which ſhe could no longer ſupport, Sophia roſe up and left the room, he imputed that too merely to baſhfulneſs, and comforted himſelf that he ſhould ſoon have enough of her company.

He was indeed perfectly well ſatisfied with his proſpect of ſucceſs; for as to that entire and abſolute poſſeſſion of the heart of his miſtreſs, which romantic lovers require, the very idea of it never entered his head.

Her fortune and her perſon were the ſole objects of his wiſhes, of which he made no doubt ſoon to obtain the abſolute property; as Mr. Weſtern's mind was ſo earneſtly bent on the match; and as he well knew the ſtrict obedience which Sophia was always ready to pay to her father's will, and the greater ſtill which her father would exact, if there was occaſion. This authority, therefore, together with the charms which he fancied in his own perſon and converſation, could not fail, he thought, of ſucceeding with a young lady, whoſe inclinations were, he doubted not, entirely diſengaged.

Of Jones he certainly had not even the leaſt jealouſy; and I have often thought it wonderful that he had not. Perhaps he imagined the character which Jones bore all over the country, (how juſtly let the reader determine) of being one of the wildeſt fellows in

in England, might render him odious to a lady of the moſt exemplary modeſty. Perhaps his ſuſpicions might be laid aſleep by the behaviour of Sophia, and of Jones himſelf, when they were all in company together. Laſtly, and indeed principally, he was well aſſured there was not another ſelf in the caſe. He fancied that he knew Jones to the bottom, and had in reality a great contempt for his underſtanding, for not being more attached to his own intereſt. He had no apprehenſion that Jones was in love with Sophia; and as for any lucrative motives, he imagined they would ſway very little with ſo ſilly a fellow. Blifil, moreover, thought the affair of Molly Seagrim ſtill went on, and indeed believed it would end in marriage: for Jones really loved him from his childhood, and had kept no ſecret from him, 'till his behaviour on the ſickneſs of Mr. Allworthy had entirely alienated his heart; and it was by means of the quarrel which had enſued on this occaſion, and which was not yet reconciled, that Mr. Blifil knew nothing of the alteration which had happened in the affection which Jones had formerly borne towards Molly.

From theſe reaſons, therefore, Mr. Blifil ſaw no bar to his ſucceſs with Sophia. He concluded, her behaviour was like that of all other young ladies on a firſt viſit from a lover, and it had indeed entirely anſwered his expectations.

Mr. Weſtern took care to way-lay the lover at his exit from his miſtreſs. He found him ſo elevated with his ſucceſs, ſo enamoured with his daughter, and ſo ſatisfied with her reception of him, that the old gentleman began to caper and dance about his hall, and by many other antic actions, to expreſs the extravagance of his joy; for he had not the leaſt command over any of his paſſions; and that which had at any time the aſcendant in his mind, hurried him to the wildeſt exceſſes.

As ſoon as Blifil was departed, which was not till after many hearty kiſſes and embraces beſtowed on him by Weſtern, the good 'ſquire went inſtantly in queſt of his daughter, whom he no ſooner found than he poured forth the moſt extravagant raptures, bidding her

her chuſe what clothes and jewels ſhe pleaſed; and declaring that he had no other uſe for fortune but to make her happy. He then careſſed her again and again with the utmoſt profuſion of fondneſs, called her by the moſt endearing names, and proteſted ſhe was his only joy on earth.

Sophia perceiving her father in this fit of affection, which ſhe did not abſolutely know the reaſon of (for fits of fondneſs were not unuſual to him, though this was rather more violent than ordinary) thought ſhe ſhould never have a better opportunity of diſcloſing herſelf than at preſent; as far at leaſt, as regarded Mr. Blifil; and ſhe too well foreſaw the neceſſity which ſhe ſhould ſoon be under of coming to a full explanation. After having thanked the 'ſquire therefore for all his profeſſions of kindneſs, ſhe added, with a look full of inexpreſſible ſoftneſs, 'And is it poſſible my 'papa can be ſo good to place all his joy in his So-'phy's happineſs?' which Weſtern having confirmed by a great oath, and a kiſs; ſhe then laid hold of his hand, and falling on her knees, after many warm and paſſionate declarations of affection and duty, ſhe begged him, 'not to make her the moſt miſerable crea-'ture on earth, by forcing her to marry a man whom 'ſhe deteſted. This I intreat of you, dear Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'for your ſake as well as my own, ſince you are 'ſo very kind to tell me your happineſs depends on 'mine.' 'How! what!' ſays Weſtern, ſtaring wildly. 'O Sir,' continued ſhe, 'not only your poor Sophy's 'happineſs; her very life, her being depends upon 'your granting her requeſt. I cannot live with Mr. 'Blifil. To force me into this marriage would be 'killing me.' 'You can't live with Mr. Blifil!' ſays Weſtern. 'No, upon my ſoul I can't,' anſwered Sophia. 'Then die and be d—ned,' cries he, ſpurning her from him. 'Oh! Sir,' cries Sophia, catching hold of the ſkirt of his coat, 'take pity on me, I 'beſeech you. Don't look, and ſay ſuch cruel—Can 'you be unmoved while you ſee your Sophy in this 'dreadful condition? Can the beſt of fathers break 'my heart? Will he kill me by the moſt pain-'ful, cruel, lingering death?' 'Pooh; pooh!' cries the

the 'ſquire, 'all ſtuff and nonſenſe, all maideniſh 'tricks. Kill you indeed! Will marriage kill you?' —'Oh! Sir,' anſwered Sophia, 'ſuch a marriage is 'worſe than death—He is not even indifferent, I hate 'and deteſt him.'—'If you deteſt un never ſo much,' cries Weſtern, 'you ſhall ha'un.' This he bound by an oath too ſhocking to repeat, and after many violent aſſeverations, concluded in theſe words: 'I am re-'ſolved upon the match, and unleſs you conſent to it, 'I will not give you a groat, not a ſingle farthing; 'no, though I ſaw you expiring with famine in the 'ſtreet, I would not relieve you with a morſel of 'bread. This is my fixed reſolution, and ſo I leave 'you to conſider of it.' He then broke from her with ſuch violence, that her face daſhed againſt the floor, and he burſt directly out of the room, leaving poor Sophia proſtrate on the ground.

When Weſtern came into the hall, he there found Jones; who ſeeing his friend looking wild, pale, and almoſt breathleſs, could not forbear enquiring the reaſon of all theſe melancholy appearances. Upon which the 'ſquire immediately acquainted him with the whole matter, concluding with bitter denunciations againſt Sophia, and very pathetic lamentations of the miſery of all fathers who are ſo unfortunate to have daughters.

Jones, to whom all the reſolutions which had been taken in favour of Blifil were yet a ſecret, was at firſt almoſt ſtruck dead with this relation; but recovering his ſpirits a little, mere deſpair, as he afterwards ſaid, inſpired him to mention a matter to Mr. Weſtern, which ſeemed to require more impudence than a human forehead was ever gifted with. He deſired leave to go to Sophia, that he might endeavour to obtain her concurrence with her father's inclinations.

If the 'ſquire had been as quick-ſighted, as he was remarkable for the contrary, paſſion might at preſent very well have blinded him. He thanked Jones for offering to undertake the office, and ſaid, 'Go, go, 'prithee, try what canſt do;' and then ſwore many execrable oaths that he would turn her out of doors unleſs ſhe conſented to the match.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

The meeting between Jones and Sophia.

JONES departed inſtantly in queſt of Sophia, whom he found juſt riſen from the ground where her father had left her, with the tears trickling from her eyes, and the blood running from her lips. He preſently ran to her, and with a voice full at once of tenderneſs and terrour, cried, 'O my Sophia, what 'means this dreadful ſight!'—She looked ſoftly at him for a moment before ſhe ſpoke, and then ſaid, 'Mr. 'Jones, for heaven's ſake how came you here?—'Leave me, I beſeech you, this moment.' 'Do 'not,' ſays he, 'impoſe ſo harſh a command upon 'me—my heart bleeds faſter than thoſe lips. O So'phia, how eaſily could I drain my veins to preſerve 'one drop of that dear blood.' 'I have too many 'obligations to you already,' anſwered ſhe, 'for ſure 'you meant them ſuch.'—Here ſhe looked at him tenderly almoſt a minute, and then burſting into an agony, cried,—'O Mr. Jones,—why did you ſave my 'my life?—my death would have been happier for us 'both.'—'Happier for us both!' cried he, 'Could 'racks or wheels kill me ſo painfully as Sophia's—I 'cannot bear the dreadful ſound—Do I live but for 'her?'—Both his voice and look were full of inexpreſſible tenderneſs when he ſpoke theſe words, and at the ſame time he laid gently hold of her hand, which ſhe did not withdraw from him; to ſay the truth, ſhe hardly knew what ſhe did or ſuffered. A few moments now paſſed in ſilence between theſe lovers, while his eyes were eagerly fixed on Sophia, and her's declining towards the ground; at laſt ſhe recovered ſtrength enough to deſire him again to leave her; for that her certain ruin would be the conſequence of their being found together; adding,—'O Mr. Jones, you 'know not, you know not what hath paſſed this cruel 'afternoon.' 'I know all, my Sophia,' anſwered he; 'your cruel father hath told me all, and he himſelf hath 'ſent me hither to you.' 'My father ſent you to me!'

replied ſhe, 'ſure you dream.' 'Would to heaven,' cries he, 'it was but a dream. O Sophia, your father hath ſent me to you, to be an advocate for my odious rival, to ſolicit you in his favour—I took any means to get acceſs to you—O ſpeak to me, Sophia, comfort my bleeding heart. Sure no one ever loved, ever doated like me. Do not unkindly with-hold this dear, this ſoft, this gentle hand—One moment, perhaps, tears you for ever from me—Nothing leſs than this cruel occaſion, could, I believe, have ever conquered the reſpect and awe, with which you have inſpired me.' She ſtood a moment ſilent, and covered with confuſion, then lifting up her eyes gently towards him, ſhe cried, 'What would Mr. Jones have me ſay?' 'O do but promiſe,' cries he, 'that you will never give yourſelf to Blifil.' 'Name not,' anſwered ſhe, 'the deteſted ſound. Be aſſured I never will give him what is in my power to with-hold from him.' 'Now then,' cries he, 'while you are ſo perfectly kind, go a little farther, and add that I may hope.'—'Alas' ſays ſhe, 'Mr. Jones, whither will you drive me? What hope have I to beſtow? You know my father's intentions.'—'But I know,' anſwered he, 'your compliance with them cannot be compelled.' 'What,' ſays ſhe, 'muſt be the dreadful conſequence of my diſobedience? My own ruin is my leaſt concern. I cannot bear the thoughts of being the cauſe of my father's miſery.' 'He is himſelf the cauſe,' cries Jones, 'by exacting a power over you which nature hath not given him. Think on the miſery which I am to ſuffer, if I am to loſe you, and ſee on which ſide pity will turn the balance.' 'Think of it!' replied ſhe, 'can you imagine I do not feel the ruin which I muſt bring on you, ſhould I comply with your deſire—It is that thought which gives me reſolution to bid you fly from me for ever, and avoid your own deſtruction.' 'I fear no deſtruction,' cries he, 'but the loſs of Sophia; if you would ſave me from the moſt bitter agonies, recal that cruel ſentence—Indeed, I can never part with you, indeed I cannot.'

The

The lovers now ſtood both ſilent and trembling, Sophia being unable to withdraw her hand from Jones, and he almoſt as unable to hold it; when the ſcene, which I believe ſome of my readers will think had laſted long enough, was interrupted by one of ſo different a nature, that we ſhall reſerve the relation of it for a different chapter.

CHAP. IX.

Being of a much more tempeſtuous kind than the former.

BEFORE we proceed with what now happened to our lovers, it may be proper to recount what had paſt in the hall, during their tender interview.

Soon after Jones had left Mr. Weſtern in the manner above-mentioned, his ſiſter came to him; and was preſently informed of all that had paſt between her brother and Sophia, relating to Blifil.

This behaviour in her niece the good lady conſtrued to be an abſolute breach of the condition, on which ſhe had engaged to keep her love for Mr. Jones a ſecret. She conſidered herſelf, therefore, at full liberty to reveal all ſhe knew to the 'ſquire, which ſhe immediately did in the moſt explicit terms, and without any ceremony or preface.

The idea of a marriage between Jones and his daughter had never once entered into the 'ſquire's head, either in the warmeſt minutes of his affection towards that young man, or from ſuſpicion, or on any other occaſion. He did indeed conſider a parity of fortune and circumſtances to be phyſically as neceſſary an ingredient in marriage, as difference of ſexes, or any other eſſential; and had no more apprehenſion of his daughter's falling in love with a poor man, than with any animal of a different ſpecies.

He became, therefore, like one thunder-ſtruck at his ſiſter's relation. He was, at firſt, incapable of making any anſwer, having been almoſt deprived of his breath by the violence of the ſurprize. This however, ſoon returned, and, as is uſual in other caſes after an intermiſſion, with redoubled force and fury.

The first use he made of the power of speech, after his recovery from the sudden effects of his astonishment, was to discharge a round volley of oaths and imprecations. After which he proceeded hastily to the apartment, where he expected to find the lovers, and murmured, or indeed, rather roared forth intentions of revenge every step he went.

As when two doves, or two wood-pigeons, or as when Strephon and Phyllis (for that comes nearest to the mark) are retired into some pleasant solitary grove, to enjoy the delightful conversation of love; that bashful boy who cannot speak in public, and is never a good companion to more than two at a time: here while every object is serene, should hoarse thunder burst suddenly through the shattered clouds, and rumbling roll along the sky, the frightened maid starts from the mossy bank or verdant turf; the pale livery of death succeeds the red regimentals in which love had before dress her cheeks; fear shakes her whole frame, and her lover scarce supports her trembling, tottering limbs.

Or as when the two gentlemen, strangers to the wonderous wit of the place, are cracking a bottle together at some inn or tavern at Salisbury, if the great Dowdy who acts the part of a madman, as well as some of his setters-on do that of a fool, should rattle his chains, and dreadfully hum forth the grumbling catch along the gallery; the frighted strangers stand aghast, scared at the horrid sound, they seek some place of shelter from the approaching danger, and if the well-barred windows did admit their exit, would venture their necks to escape the threatening fury now coming upon them.

So trembled poor Sophia, so turned she pale at the noise of her father, who in a voice most dreadful to hear, came on swearing, cursing and vowing the destruction of Jones. To say the truth, I believe the youth himself would, from some prudent considerations, have preferred another place of abode at this time, had this terror on Sophia's account given him liberty to reflect a moment on what any otherwise concerned himself;

himſelf; than as his love made him partake whatever affected her.

And now the 'ſquire having burſt open the door, beheld an object which inſtantly ſuſpended all his fury againſt Jones; this was the ghaſtly appearance of Sophia, who had fainted away in her lover's arms. This tragical ſight Mr. Weſtern no ſooner beheld, than all his rage forſook him, he roared for help with his utmoſt violence; ran firſt to his daughter, then back to the door, calling for water, and then back again to Sophia, never conſidering in whoſe arms ſhe then was, nor perhaps once recollecting that there was ſuch a perſon in the world as Jones: for, indeed, I believe, the preſent circumſtances of his daughter were now the ſole conſideration which employed his thoughts.

Mrs. Weſtern and a great number of ſervants ſoon came to the aſſiſtance of Sophia with water, cordials, and every thing neceſſary on thoſe occaſions. Theſe were applied with ſuch ſucceſs, that Sophia in a very few minutes began to recover, and all the ſymptoms of life to return. Upon which ſhe was preſently led off by her own maid and Mrs. Weſtern; nor did that good lady depart without leaving ſome wholeſome admonitions with her brother, on the dreadful effects of his paſſion, or, as ſhe pleaſed to call it, madneſs.

The 'ſquire, perhaps, did not underſtand this good advice, as it was delivered in obſcure hints, ſhrugs, and notes of admiration; at leaſt, if he did underſtand it, he profited very little by it; for no ſooner was he cured of his immediate fears for his daughter, than he relapſed into his former frenzy, which muſt have produced an immediate battle with Jones, had not parſon Supple, who was a very ſtrong man, been preſent, and by mere force reſtrained the 'ſquire from acts of hoſtility.

The moment Sophia was departed, Jones advanced in a very ſuppliant manner to Mr. Weſtern, whom the parſon held in his arms, and begged him to be pacified; for that, while he continued in ſuch a paſſion, it would be impoſſible to give him any ſatisfaction.

'I will have ſatisfaction o'thee,' anſwered the 'ſquire, 'ſo doff thy clothes. *At unt* half a man, and

'I'll lick thee as well as waſt ever licked in thy life.' He then beſpattered the youth with abundance of that language, which paſſes between country gentlemen who embrace oppoſite ſides of the queſtion; with frequent applications to him to ſalute that part which is generally introduced into all controverſies, that ariſe among the lower orders of the Engliſh gentry, at horſe-races, cock-matches, and other public places. Alluſions to this part are likewiſe often made for the ſake of the jeſt. And here, I believe, the wit is generally miſunderſtood. In reality, it lies in deſiring another to kiſs your a—— for having juſt before threatened to kick his: for I have obſerved very accurately, that no one ever deſires you to kick that which belongs to himſelf, nor offers to kiſs this part in another.

It may likewiſe ſeem ſurprizing, that in the many thouſand kind invitations of this ſort, which every one who hath converſed with country gentlemen muſt have heard, no one, I believe, hath ever ſeen a ſingle inſtance where the deſire has been complied with. A great inſtance of their want of politeneſs: for in town, nothing can be more common than for the fineſt gentleman to perform this ceremony every day to their ſuperiors, without having that favour once requeſted of them.

To all ſuch wit, Jones very calmly anſwered, 'Sir, 'this uſage may, perhaps, cancel every other obliga-'tion you have conferred on me; but there is one you 'can never cancel; nor will I be provoked by your 'abuſe, to lift my hand againſt the father of Sophia.'

At theſe words the 'ſquire grew ſtill more outrageous than before; ſo that the parſon begged Jones to retire, ſaying, 'You behold, Sir, how he waxeth 'wroth at your abode here; therefore let me pray you 'not to tarry any longer. His anger is too much kin-'dled for you to commune with him at preſent. You 'had better, therefore, conclude your viſit, and refer 'what matters you have to urge in your behalf to ſome 'other opportunity.'

Jones accepted this advice with thanks, and immediately departed. The 'ſquire now regained the liberty of his hands, and ſo much temper as to expreſs

ſome

ſome ſatisfaction in the reſtraint which had been laid upon him; declaring that he ſhould certainly have beat his brains out; and adding, 'It would have vexed 'one, confoundedly to have been hanged for ſuch a 'raſcal.'

The parſon now began to triumph in the ſucceſs of his peace-making endeavours, and proceeded to read a lecture againſt anger, which might perhaps rather have tended to raiſe than to quiet that paſſion in ſome haſty minds. This lecture he enriched with many valuable quotations from the antients, particularly from Seneca; who hath, indeed, ſo well handled this paſſion, that none but a very angry man can read him without great pleaſure and profit. The doctor concluded this harangue with the famous ſtory of Alexander and Clitus; but as I find that entered in my common place under title Drunkenneſs, I ſhall not inſert it here.

The 'ſquire took no notice of this ſtory, nor perhaps of any thing he ſaid: for he interrupted him before he had finiſhed, by calling for a tankard of beer; obſerving (which is perhaps as true as any obſervation on this fever of the mind) that anger makes a man dry.

No ſooner had the 'ſquire ſwallowed a large draught than he renewed the diſcourſe on Jones, and declared a reſolution of going the next morning early to acquaint Mr. Allworthy. His friend would have diſſuaded him from this, from the mere motive of good-nature; but his diſſuaſion had no other effect than to produce a large volley of oaths and curſes, which greatly ſhocked the pious ears of Supple; but he did not dare to remonſtrate againſt a privilege, which the 'ſquire claimed as a free-born Engliſhman. To ſay truth, the parſon ſubmitted to pleaſe his palate at the ſquire's table, at the expence of ſuffering now and then this violence to his ears. He contented himſelf with thinking he did not promote this evil practice, and that the 'ſquire would not ſwear an oath the leſs, if he never entered within his gates. However, though he was not guilty of ill manners by rebuking a gentleman in his own houſe, he paid him off obliquely in the pulpit;

which had not, indeed, the good effect of working a reformation in the 'ſquire himſelf; yet it ſo far operated on his conſcience, that he put the laws very ſeverely in execution againſt others; and the magiſtrate was the only perſon in the pariſh who could ſwear with impunity.

CHAP. X.

In which Mr. Weſtern viſits Mr. Allworthy.

MR. Allworthy was now retired from breakfaſt with his nephew, well ſatisfied with the report of the young gentleman's ſucceſsful viſit to Sophia, (for he greatly deſired the match, more on account of the young lady's character than of her riches) when Mr. Weſtern broke abruptly in upon them, and without any ceremony began as follows:

'There, you have done a fine piece of work truly. 'You have brought up your baſtard to a fine purpoſe; 'not that I believe you have had any hand in it neither, that is, as a man may ſay, deſignedly; but 'there is a fine kettle of fiſh made on't up at our 'houſe.' 'What can be the matter, Mr. Weſtern?' ſaid Allworthy. 'O matter enow of all conſcience: 'my daughter has fallen in love with your baſtard, 'that's all; but I won't ge her a Hapenny, not the 'twentieth part of a braſs varden. I always thought 'what would become o'breeding up a baſtard like a 'gentleman, and letting un come about to Vok's 'houſes. Its well vor un I could not get at un, I'd a 'lick'd un, I'd a ſpoil'd his catervauling, I'd a taught 'the ſon of a whore to meddle with meat for his maſter. He ſhan't ever have a morſel of meat of mine, 'or a varden to buy it: If ſhe will ha un, one ſmock 'ſhall be her portion. I'll ſooner ge me eſteate to the 'zinking fund, that it may be ſent to Hanover to 'corrupt our nation with.' 'I am heartily ſorry,' cries Allworthy. 'Pox o' your ſorrow,' ſays Weſtern, 'it 'will do me abundance of good, when I have loſt my 'only child, my poor Sophy, that was the joy of my

'heart,

'heart, and all the hope and comfort of my age; but 'I am reſolved I will turn her out o' doors; ſhe ſhall 'beg and ſtarve, and rot in the ſtreets. Not one Ha-'penny, not a Hapenny ſhall ſhe hae o' mine. The 'ſon of a bitch was always good at finding a hare ſit-'ting; and be rotted to'n I little thought what puſs 'he was looking after; but it ſhall be the worſt he 'ever vound in his life. She ſhall be no better than 'carrion; the ſkin o'er is all he ſhall ha, and zu you 'may tell un.' 'I am in amazement,' cries Allworthy, 'at what you tell me, after what paſſed between 'my nephew and the young lady no longer ago than 'yeſterday.' 'Yes, Sir,' anſwered Weſtern, 'it was 'after what paſſed between your nephew and ſhe that 'the whole matter came out. Mr. Blifil there was no 'ſooner gone than the ſon of a whore came lurching 'about the houſe. Little did I think, when I uſed 'to love him for a ſportſman, that he was all the 'while a poaching after my daughter.' 'Why, truly,' ſays Allworthy, 'I could wiſh you had not given him 'ſo many opportunities with her; and you will do me 'the juſtice to acknowledge, that I have always been 'averſe to his ſtaying ſo much at your houſe, though 'I own I had no ſuſpicion of this kind.' 'Why, 'Zounds!' cries Weſtern, 'who could have thought 'it? What the devil had ſhe to do wi'n? He did not 'came there a courting to her: he came there a hunt-'ing with me.' 'But was it poſſible,' ſays Allworthy, 'that you ſhould never diſcern any ſymptoms of 'love between them, when you have ſeen them ſo often 'together?' 'Never in my life, as I hope to be ſaved,' cries Weſtern. 'I never ſo much as zeed him kiſs 'her in all my life; and ſo far from courting her, he 'uſed rather to be more ſilent when ſhe was in com-'pany than at any other time: and as far the girl, 'ſhe was always leſs civil to'n than to any young 'man that came to the houſe. As to that matter, I 'am not more eaſy to be deceived than another; I 'would not have you think I am, neighbour.' Allworthy could ſcarce refrain laughter at this; but he reſolved to do a violence to himſelf: for he perfectly well knew mankind, and had too much good breed-

ing and good nature to offend the 'ſquire in his preſent circumſtances. He then aſked Weſtern what he would have him do upon this occaſion. To which the other anſwered, 'That he would have him keep the raſcal 'away from his houſe, and that he would go and 'lock up the wench; for he was reſolved to make 'her marry Mr. Bliſil in ſpite of her teeth.' He then ſhook Bliſil by the hand, and ſwore he would have no other ſon-in-law. Preſently after which he took his leave, ſaying, his houſe was in ſuch diſorder, that it was neceſſary for him to make haſte home, to take care his daughter did not give him the ſlip; and as for Jones, he ſwore, if he caught him at his houſe, he would qualify him to run for the gelding's plate.

When Allworthy and Bliſil were again left together, a long ſilence enſued between them; all which interval the young gentleman filled up with ſighs, which proceeded partly from diſappointment, but more from hatred: for the ſucceſs of Jones was much more grievous to him than the loſs of Sophia.

At length his uncle aſked him what he was determined to do, and he anſwered in the following words. 'Alas, Sir, can it be a queſtion what ſtep a lover will 'take, when reaſon and paſſion point different ways? 'I am afraid it is too certain he will, in that dilemma, always follow the latter. Reaſon dictates to 'me to quit all thoughts of a woman who places 'her affections on another; my paſſion bids me hope 'ſhe may, in time, change her inclinations in my favour. Here, however, I conceive an objection may 'be raiſed, which, if it could not fully be anſwered, 'would totally deter me from any farther purſuit. I 'mean the injuſtice of endeavouring to ſupplant another 'in a heart, of which he ſeems already in poſſeſſion; 'but the determined reſolution of Mr. Weſtern ſhews, 'that in this caſe, I ſhall, by ſo doing, promote the 'happineſs of every party; not only that of the parent, who will thus be preſerved from the higheſt 'degree of miſery, but of both the others, who muſt 'be undone by this match. The lady, I am ſure, 'will be undone in every ſenſe; for, beſides the loſs 'of moſt part of her own fortune, ſhe will be not only

'married

'married to a beggar, but the little fortune which 'her father cannot with-hold from her, will be ſquan-'dered on that wench, with whom I know he yet 'converſes.——Nay, that is a trifle: for I know him 'to be one of the worſt men in the world; for had 'my dear uncle known what I have hitherto endea-'voured to conceal, he muſt have long ſince abandon-'ed ſo profligate a wretch.' 'How,' ſaid Allworthy, 'hath he done any thing worſe than I already know? 'Tell me, I beſeech you.' 'No,' replied Blifil, 'it 'is now paſt, and perhaps he may have repented of 'it.' 'I command you on your duty,' ſaid Allwor-'thy, 'to tell me what you mean.' 'You know, 'Sir,' ſays Blifil, 'I never diſobeyed you; but I am 'ſorry I mentioned it, ſince it may now look like re-'venge, whereas, I thank heaven, no ſuch motive 'ever entered my heart; and if you oblige me to diſco-'ver it, I muſt be his petitioner to you for forgive-'neſs.' 'I will have no conditions,' anſwered All-worthy, 'I think I have ſhewn tenderneſs enough 'towards him, and more perhaps than you ought to 'thank me for.' 'More indeed I fear than he de-'ſerved,' cries Blifil; 'for, in the very day of your 'utmoſt danger, when myſelf and all the family were 'in tears, he filled the houſe with riot and debauch-'ery. He drank and ſung, and roared; and when I 'gave him a gentle hint of the indecency of his acti-'ons, he fell into a violent paſſion, ſwore many oaths, 'called me a raſcal, and ſtruck me.' 'How!' cries Allworthy, 'did he dare to ſtrike you?' 'I am ſure,' cries Blifil, 'I have forgiven him that long ago. I 'wiſh I could ſo eaſily forget his ingratitude to the 'beſt of benefactors? and yet, even that I hope you 'will forgive him, ſince he muſt have certainly been 'poſſeſſed with the devil: for that very evening, as 'Mr. Thwackum and myſelf were taking the air in 'the fields, and exulting in the good ſymptoms which 'then firſt began to diſcover themſelves, we unluckily 'ſaw him engaged with a wench in a manner not fit 'to be mentioned. Mr. Thwackum, with more bold-'neſs than prudence, advanced to rebuke him, when '(I am ſorry to ſay it) he fell upon the worthy man,

'and beat him ſo outrageouſly, that I wiſh he may 'have yet recovered the bruiſes. Nor was I without 'my ſhare of the effects of his malice, while I endea-'voured to protect my tutor: but that I have long 'forgiven; nay, I prevailed with Mr. Thwackum to 'forgive him too, and not to inform you of a ſecret 'which I feared might be fatal to him. And now, 'Sir, ſince I have unadviſedly dropped a hint of this 'matter, and your commands have obliged me to diſ-'cover the whole, let me intercede with you for him.' 'O child,' ſaid Allworthy, 'I know not whether I 'ſhould blame or applaud your goodneſs in conceal-'ing ſuch villainy a moment: but where is Mr. 'Thwackum? Not that I want any confirmation of 'what you ſay; but I will examine all the evidence of 'this matter, to juſtify to the world the example I am 'reſolved to make of ſuch a monſter.'

Thwackum was now ſent for, and preſently appear-ed. He corroborated every circumſtance which the other had depoſed; nay, he produced the record upon his breaſt, where the hand-writing of Mr. Jones re-mained very legible in black and blue. He conclud-ed with declaring to Mr. Allworthy, that he ſhould have long ſince informed him of this matter, had not Mr. Bliſil, by the moſt earneſt interpoſitions, prevent-ed him. 'He is,' ſays he, 'an excellent youth; 'though ſuch forgiveneſs of enemies is carrying the 'matter too far.'

In reality, Bliſil had taken ſome pains to prevail with the parſon, and to prevent the diſcovery at that time; for which he had many reaſons. He knew that the minds of men are apt to be ſoftened and relaxed from their uſual ſeverity by ſickneſs. Beſides, he ima-gined that if the ſtory was told when the fact was ſo recent, and the phyſician about the houſe, who might have unravelled the real truth, he ſhould never be able to give it the malicious turn which he intended. Again, he reſolved to hoard up this buſineſs, till the indiſcre-tion of Jones ſhould afford ſome additional complaints; for he thought the joint weight of many facts falling upon him together, would be the moſt likely to cruſh him; and he watched therefore ſome ſuch opportunity

as

as that with which fortune had now kindly preſented him. Laſtly, by prevailing with Thwackum to conceal the matter for a time, he knew he ſhould confirm an opinion of his friendſhip to Jones, which he had greatly laboured to eſtabliſh in Mr. Allworthy.

CHAP. XI.

A ſhort chapter; but which contains ſufficient matter to affect the good-natured reader.

IT was Mr. Allworthy's cuſtom never to puniſh any one, not even to turn away a ſervant, in a paſſion. He reſolved therefore to delay paſſing ſentence on Jones till the afternoon.

The poor young man attended at dinner, as uſual; but his heart was too much loaded to ſuffer him to eat. His grief too was a good deal aggravated by the unkind looks of Mr. Allworthy; whence he concluded that Weſtern had diſcovered the whole affair between him and Sophia: but as to Mr. Blifil's ſtory, he had not the leaſt apprehenſion; for of much the greater part he was entirely innocent; and for the reſidue, as he had forgiven and forgotten it himſelf, ſo he ſuſpected no remembrance on the other ſide. When dinner was over, and the ſervants departed, Mr. Allworthy began to harangue. He ſet forth, in a long ſpeech, the many iniquities of which Jones had been guilty, particularly thoſe which this day had brought to light; and concluded, by telling him, 'That unleſs he could 'clear himſelf of the charge, he was reſolved to ba-'niſh him his ſight for ever.'

Many diſadvantages attended poor Jones in making his defence; nay, indeed, he hardly knew his accuſation: for as Mr. Allworthy, in recounting the drunkenneſs, &c. while he lay ill, out of modeſty ſunk every thing that related particularly to himſelf, which indeed principally conſtituted the crime; Jones could not deny the charge. His heart was, beſides, almoſt broken already; and his ſpirits were ſo ſunk, that he could ſay nothing for himſelf; but acknowledged the whole, and, like a criminal in deſpair, threw himſelf upon

upon mercy; concluding, 'That though he muſt own 'himſelf guilty of many follies and inadvertencies, he 'hoped he had done nothing to deſerve what would 'be to him the greateſt puniſhment in the world.'

Allworthy anſwered, 'that he had forgiven him 'too often already, in compaſſion to his youth, and 'in hopes of his amendment: that he now found he 'was an abandoned reprobate, and ſuch as it would 'be criminal in any one to ſupport and encourage. 'Nay,' ſaid Mr. Allworthy to him, 'your audacious 'attempt to ſteal away the young lady calls upon me 'to juſtify my own character in puniſhing you. The 'world, who had already cenſured the regard I have 'ſhewn for you, may think, with ſome colour at leaſt 'of juſtice, that I connive at ſo baſe and barbarous an 'action. An action of which you muſt have known 'my abhorrence; and which, had you any concern 'for my eaſe and honour, as well as for my friendſhip, 'you would never have thought of undertaking. Fie 'upon it, young man! indeed there is ſcarce any pu-'niſhment equal to your crimes, and I can ſcarce think 'myſelf juſtifiable in what I am now going to beſtow 'on you. However, as I have educated you like a 'child of my own, I will not turn you naked into the 'world. When you open this paper, therefore, you 'will find ſomething which may enable you, with in-'duſtry, to get an honeſt livelihood; but if you em-'ploy it to worſe purpoſes, I ſhall not think myſelf 'obliged to ſupply you farther, being reſolved, from 'this day forward, to converſe no more with you on 'any account. I cannot avoid ſaying, there is no 'part of your conduct which I reſent more than 'your ill treatment of that good young man (meaning 'Blifil) who hath behaved with ſo much tenderneſs 'and honour towards you.'

Theſe laſt words were a doſe almoſt too bitter to be ſwallowed. A flood of tears now guſhed from the eyes of Jones, and every faculty of ſpeech and motion ſeemed to have deſerted him. It was ſome time before he was able to obey Allworthy's peremptory commands of departing; which he at length did, having

firſt

firſt kiſſed his hands with a paſſion difficult to be affected, and as difficult to be deſcribed.

The reader muſt be very weak, if, when he conſiders the light in which Jones then appeared to Mr. Allworthy, he ſhould blame the rigour of his ſentence. And yet all the neighbourhood, either from this weakneſs, or from ſome worſe motive, condemned this juſtice and ſeverity as the higheſt cruelty. Nay, the very perſons who had before cenſured the good man for the kindneſs and tenderneſs ſhewn to a baſtard (his own, according to the general opinion) now cried out as loudly againſt turning his own child out of doors. The women eſpecially were unanimous in taking the part of Jones, and raiſed more ſtories on the occaſion than I have room, in this chapter, to ſet down.

One thing muſt not be omitted, that in their cenſures on this occaſion, none ever mentioned the ſum contained in the paper which Allworthy gave Jones, which was no leſs than five hundred pounds; but all agreed that he was ſent away pennyleſs, and ſome ſaid, naked from the houſe of his inhuman father.

CHAP. XII.

Containing Love-Letters, &c.

JONES was commanded to leave the houſe immediately, and told, that his clothes and every thing elſe ſhould be ſent to him whitherſoever he ſhould order them.

He accordingly ſet out, and walked above a mile, not regarding, and indeed ſcarce knowing, whither he went. At length a little brook obſtructing his paſſage, he threw himſelf down by the ſide of it; nor could he help muttering, with ſome little indignation, 'Sure my father will not deny me this place to reſt 'in?'

Here he preſently fell into the moſt violent agonies, tearing his hair from his head, and uſing moſt other actions which generally accompany fits of madneſs, rage, and deſpair.

When

When he had in this manner vented the firſt emotions of paſſion, he began to come a little to himſelf. His grief now took another turn, and diſcharged itſelf in a gentler way, till he became at laſt cool enough to reaſon with his paſſion, and to conſider what ſteps were proper to be taken in his deplorable condition.

And now the great doubt was, how to act with regard to Sophia. The thoughts of leaving her almoſt rent his heart aſunder; but the conſideration of reducing her to ruin and beggary ſtill racked him, if poſſible, more; and if the violent deſire of poſſeſſing her perſon could have induced him to liſten one moment to this alternative, ſtill he was by no means certain of her reſolution to indulge his wiſhes at ſo high an expence. The reſentment of Mr. Allworthy, and the injury he muſt do to his quiet, argued ſtrongly againſt this latter; and laſtly, the apparent impoſſibility of his ſucceſs, even if he would ſacrifice all theſe conſiderations to it, came to his aſſiſtance; and thus honour at laſt, backed with deſpair, with gratitude to his benefactor, and with real love to his miſtreſs, got the better of burning deſire, and he reſolved rather to quit Sophia than purſue her to her ruin.

It is difficult for any who have not felt, to conceive the glowing warmth which filled his breaſt on the firſt contemplation of his victory over his paſſion. Pride flattered him ſo agreeably, that his mind perhaps enjoyed perfect happineſs; but this was only momentary; Sophia ſoon returned to his imagination, and allayed the joy of his triumph with no leſs bitter pangs than a good natured general muſt feel when he ſurveys the bleeding heaps, at the price of whoſe blood he hath purchaſed his laurels; for thouſands of tender ideas lay murdered before our conqueror.

Being reſolved, however, to purſue the paths of this giant honour, as the gigantic poet Lee calls it, he determined to write a farewel letter to Sophia; and accordingly proceeded to a houſe not far off, where being furniſhed with proper materials, he wrote as follows:

MADAM,

MADAM,

'WHEN you reflect on the ſituation in which I write, I am ſure your good-nature will pardon any inconſiſtency or abſurdity which my letter contains; for every thing here flows from a heart ſo full, that no language can expreſs its dictates.

'I have reſolved, Madam, to obey your commands, in flying for ever from your dear, your lovely ſight. Cruel indeed thoſe commands are; but it is a cruelty which proceeds from fortune, not from my Sophia. Fortune hath made it neceſſary, neceſſary to your preſervation, to forget there ever was ſuch a wretch as I am.

'Believe me, I would not hint all my ſufferings to you, if I imagined they could poſſibly eſcape your ears. I know the goodneſs and tenderneſs of your heart, and would avoid giving you any of thoſe pains which you always feel for the miſerable. O let nothing, which you ſhall hear of my hard fortune, cauſe a moment's concern; for after the loſs of you, every thing to me is a trifle.

'O Sophia! it is hard to leave you; it is harder ſtill to deſire you to forget me; yet the ſincereſt love obliges me to both. Pardon my conceiving that any remembrance of me can give you diſquiet; but if I am ſo glorioufly wretched, ſacrifice me every way to your relief. Think I never loved you: or think truly how little I deſerve you; and learn to ſcorn me for a preſumption which can never be too ſeverely puniſhed—I am unable to ſay more—may guardian angels protect you for ever.'

He was now ſearching his pockets for his wax, but found none, nor indeed any thing elſe, therein; for in truth he had, in his frantic diſpoſition, toſſed every thing from him, and among the reſt, his pocket-book, which he had received from Mr. Allworthy, which he had never opened, and which now firſt occurred to his memory.

The houſe ſupplied him with a wafer for his preſent purpoſe, with which having ſealed his letter, he returned haſtily towards the brook ſide, in order to ſearch

for

for the things which he had there loſt. In his way he met his old friend Black George, who heartily condoled with him on his misfortune: for this had already reached his ears, and indeed thoſe of all the neighbourhood.

Jones acquainted the game-keeper with his loſs, and he as readily went back with him to the brook, where they ſearched every turf of graſs in the meadow, as well where Jones had not been, as where he had been; but all to no purpoſe, for they found nothing: for indeed, though the things were then in the meadow, they omitted to ſearch the only place where they were depoſited; to wit, in the pockets of the ſaid George: for he had juſt before found them, and being luckily apprized of their value, had very carefully put them up for his own uſe.

The game-keeper having exerted as much diligence in queſt of the loſt goods, as if he had hoped to find them, deſired Mr. Jones to recollect if he had been in no other place; 'For ſure,' ſaid he, 'if you had loſt 'them here ſo lately, the things muſt have been here 'ſtill; for this is a very unlikely place for any one to 'paſs by;' and indeed it was by great accident that he himſelf had paſſed through that field, in order to lay wires for hares, with which he was to ſupply a poulterer at Bath the next morning.

Jones now gave over all hopes of recovering his loſs, and almoſt all thoughts concerning it, and turning to Black George aſked him earneſtly, if he would do him the greateſt favour in the world?

George anſwered with ſome heſitation, 'Sir, you 'know you may command me whatever is in my 'power, and I heartily wiſh it was in my power to 'do you any ſervice.' In fact, the queſtion ſtaggered him; for he had by ſelling game, amaſſed a pretty good ſum of money in Mr. Weſtern's ſervice, and was afraid that Jones wanted to borrow ſome ſmall matter of him; but he was preſently relieved from his anxiety, by being deſired to convey a letter to Sophia, which with great pleaſure he promiſed to do. And indeed, I believe there are few favours which he would not have gladly conferred on Mr. Jones; for he bore as much grati-

gratitude towards him as he could, and was as honeſt as men who love money better than any other thing in the univerſe, generally are.

Mrs. Honour was agreed by both to be the proper means by which this letter ſhould paſs to Sophia. They then ſeparated; the game-keeper returned home to Mr. Weſtern's, and Jones walked to an alehouſe at half a mile's diſtance, to wait for his meſſenger's return.

George no ſooner came home to his maſter's houſe, than he met with Mrs. Honour; to whom having firſt ſounded her with a few previous queſtions, he delivered the letter for her miſtreſs, and received at the ſame time another from her for Mr. Jones; which Honour told him ſhe had carried all that day in her boſom, and began to deſpair of finding any means of delivering it.

The game-keeper returned haſtily and joyfully to Jones, who having received Sophia's letter from him inſtantly withdrew, and eagerly breaking it open, read as follows:

SIR,

'IT is impoſſible to expreſs what I have felt ſince I ſaw you. Your ſubmitting, on my account, to ſuch cruel inſults from my father, lays me under an obligation I ſhall ever own. As you know his temper, I beg, you will, for my ſake, avoid him. I wiſh I had any comfort to ſend you; but believe this that nothing but the laſt violence ſhall ever give my hand or heart where you would be ſorry to ſee them beſtowed.'

Jones read this letter a hundred times over, and kiſſed it a hundred times as often. His paſſion now brought all tender deſires back into his mind. He repented that he had writ to Sophia in the manner we have ſeen above: but he repented more that he had made uſe of the interval of his meſſenger's abſence to write and diſpatch a letter to Mr. Allworthy, in which he had faithfully promiſed and bound himſelf to quit all thoughts of his love. However, when his cool

cool reflections returned, he plainly perceived that his caſe was neither mended nor altered by Sophia's billet, unleſs to give him ſome little glimpſe of hope from her conſtancy, of ſome favourable accident hereafter. He therefore reſumed his reſolution, and taking leave of Black George, ſet forward to a town about five miles diſtant, whither he had deſired Mr. Allworthy, unleſs he pleaſed to revoke his ſentence, to ſend his things after him.

CHAP. XIII.

The behaviour of Sophia on the preſent occaſion; which none of her ſex will blame, who are capable of behaving in the ſame manner. And the diſcuſſion of a knotty point in the court of conſcience.

SOPHIA had paſſed the laſt twenty four hours in no very deſirable manner. During a large part of them ſhe had been entertained by her aunt, with lectures of prudence, recommending to her the example of the polite world, where love (ſo the good lady ſaid) is at preſent entirely laughed at, and where women conſider matrimony, as men do offices of public truſt, only as the means of making their fortunes, and of advancing themſelves in the world. In commenting on which text Mrs. Weſtern had diſplayed her eloquence during ſeveral hours.

Theſe ſagacious lectures, though little ſuited either to the taſte or inclination of Sophia, were, however, leſs irkſome to her than her own thoughts, that formed the entertainment of the night, during which ſhe never once cloſed her eyes.

But though ſhe could neither ſleep nor reſt in her bed; yet, having no avocation from it, ſhe was found there by her father at his return from Allworthy's, which was not till paſt ten o'clock in the morning. He went directly up to her apartment, opened the door, and ſeeing ſhe was not up,—cried, Oh! you 'are ſafe then, and I am reſolved to keep you ſo.' He then locked the door, and delivered the key to Honour, having firſt given her the ſtricteſt charge, with

with great promiſes of rewards for her fidelity, and moſt dreadful menaces of puniſhment, in caſe ſhe ſhould betray her truſt.

Honour's orders were not to ſuffer her miſtreſs to come out of her room without the authority of the 'ſquire himſelf, and to admit none to her but him and her aunt; but ſhe was herſelf to attend her with whatever Sophia pleaſed, except only pen, ink, and paper, of which ſhe was forbidden the uſe.

The 'ſquire ordered his daughter to dreſs herſelf and attend him at dinner; which ſhe obeyed; and having ſat the uſual time, was again conducted to her priſon.

In the evening the gaoler Honour brought her the letter which ſhe received from the game-keeper. Sophia read it very attentively twice or thrice over, and then threw herſelf upon the bed, and burſt into a flood of tears. Mrs. Honour expreſſed great aſtoniſhment at this behaviour in her miſtreſs; nor could ſhe forbear very eagerly begging to know the cauſe of this paſſion. Sophia made her no anſwer for ſome time, and then ſtarting ſuddenly up, caught her maid by the hand, and cried, 'O Honour! I am undone.' 'Marry forbid,' cries Honour, 'I wiſh the letter had 'been burnt before I had brought it to your la'ſhip. 'I'm ſure I thought it would have comforted your 'la'ſhip, or I would have ſeen it at the devil before I 'would have touched it.' 'Honour,' ſays Sophia, 'you are a good girl, and it is in vain to attempt con'cealing longer my weakneſs from you; I have 'thrown away my heart on a man who hath forſaken 'me.' 'And is Mr. Jones,' anſwered the maid, 'ſuch a perfidy man?' 'He has taken his leave of 'me,' ſays Sophia, 'for ever in that letter. Nay, 'he hath deſired me to forget him. Could he have 'deſired that if he had loved me? Could he have 'borne ſuch a thought? Could he have written ſuch 'a word?' 'No certainly, Ma'am,' cries Honour, 'and to be ſure, if the beſt man in England was to 'deſire me to forget him, I'd take him at his word. 'Marry come up; I am ſure your la'ſhip hath done 'him too much honour ever to think on him. A

'young

'young lady who may take her choice of all the young 'men in the country.——And to be ſure, if I may be 'ſo preſumptuous as to offer my poor opinion, there 'is young Mr. Bliſil, who beſides that he is come of 'honeſt parents, and will be one of the greateſt 'ſquires 'all hereabouts, he is to be ſure, in my poor opinion, 'a more handſomer, and more politer man by half; 'and beſides, he is a young gentleman of a ſober 'character, and who may defy any of the neighbours 'to ſay black is his eye: he follows no dirty trollops, 'nor can any baſtards be laid at his door. Forget 'him, indeed! I thank heaven I myſelf am not ſo 'much at my laſt prayers, as to ſuffer any man to bid 'me forget him twice. If the beſt he that wears a 'head was for to go for to offer to ſay ſuch an affronting 'word to me, I would never give him my company 'afterwards, if there was another young man in the 'kingdom. And as I was ſaying, to beſure there is 'young Mr. Bliſil.'——'Name not his deteſted name,' cries Sophia. 'Nay, Ma'am,' ſays Honour, 'if 'your la'ſhip doth not like him, there be more jolly 'handſome young men that would court your la'ſhip, 'if they had but the leaſt encouragement. I don't be-'lieve there is arrow young gentleman in this country, 'or in the next to it, that if you la'ſhip was but to 'look as if you had a mind to him, would not come 'about to make his offers directly.' 'What a wretch 'doſt thou imagine me,' cries Sophia, 'by affronting 'my ears with ſuch ſtuff! I deteſt all mankind.' 'Nay, to be ſure, Ma'am,' anſwered Honour, 'your 'la'ſhip hath had enough to give you a ſurfeit of them. 'To be uſed ill by ſuch a poor beggarly baſtardly 'fellow.' 'Hold your blaſphemous tongue,' cries So-phia, 'how dare you mention his name with diſreſpect 'before me? He uſe me ill! No, his poor bleeding 'heart ſuffered more when he writ the cruel words, 'than mine from reading them. O! he is all heroic 'virtue, and angelic goodneſs. I am aſhamed of the 'weakneſs of my own paſſion, for blaming what I 'ought to admire.—O Honour! it is my good only 'which he conſults. To my intereſt he ſacrifices both 'himſelf and me.——The apprehenſion of ruin-

'ing

'ing me hath driven him to deſpair.' I am very glad ſays Honour, 'to hear your la'ſhip take that into your 'conſideration; for to be ſure it muſt be nothing leſs 'than ruin, to give your mind to one that is turned 'out of doors, and is not worth a farthing in the world.' 'Turned out of doors,' cries Sophia haſtily, 'how! 'what doſt thou mean?' 'Why, to be ſure, Ma'am, 'my maſter no ſooner told 'ſquire Allworthy about 'Mr. Jones having offered to make love to your la'ſhip, 'than the 'ſquire ſtripped him ſtark naked, and turn-'ed him out of doors.' 'Ha!' ſays Sophia, 'I have 'been the curſed, wretched cauſe of his deſtruction? '—Turned naked out of doors! Here, Honour, take 'all the money I have? take the rings from my fin-'gers.—Here my watch, carry him all.—Go find him 'immediately.' 'For heaven's ſake, Ma'am,' anſwered Mrs. Honour, 'do but conſider, if my maſter 'ſhould miſs any of theſe things, I ſhould be made to 'anſwer for them. Therefore let me beg your la'ſhip 'not to part with your watch and jewels. Beſides 'the money, I think, is enough of all conſcience; 'and as for that, my maſter can never know any thing 'of the matter.' 'Here, then,' cries Sophia, 'take 'every farthing I am worth, find him out immediately 'and give it him. Go, go, loſe not a moment.'

Mrs. Honour departed according to orders, and finding Black George below ſtairs, delivered him the purſe which contained ſixteen guineas, being indeed the whole ſtock of Sophia: for though her father was very liberal to her, ſhe was much too generous to be rich.

Black George having received the purſe, ſet forward towards the alehouſe; but in the way a thought occurred to him, whether he ſhould not detain this money likewiſe. His conſcience, however, immediately ſtarted at this ſuggeſtion, and began to upbraid him with ingratitude to his benefactor. To this his avarice anſwered, 'That his conſcience ſhould have conſider-'ed the matter before, when he deprived poor Jones 'of his ſool. That having quietly acquieſced in what 'was of ſo much greater importance, it was abſurd, if 'not downright hypocriſy, to affect any qualms at

'this

'this trifle.' In return to which, conſcience, like a good lawyer, attempted to diſtinguiſh between an abſolute breach of truſt, as here where the goods were delivered, and a bare concealment of what was found, as in the former caſe. Avarice preſently treated this with ridicule, called it a diſtinction without a difference, and abſolutely inſiſted, that when once all pretenſions of honour and virtue were given up in any one inſtance, that there was no precedent for reſorting to them upon a ſecond occaſion. In ſhort, poor conſcience had certainly been defeated in the argument, had not fear ſtept in to her aſſiſtance, and very ſtrenuouſly urged, that the real diſtinction between the two actions did not lie in the different degrees of honour, but of ſafety: for that the ſecreting the 500l. was a matter of very little hazard; whereas the detaining the ſixteen guineas was liable to the utmoſt danger of diſcovery.

By this friendly aid of fear, conſcience obtained a compleat victory in the mind of Black George, and after making him a few compliments on his honeſty, forced him to deliver the money to Jones.

CHAP. XIV.

A ſhort chapter, containing a ſhort dialogue between 'Squire Weſtern and his ſiſter.

MRS. Weſtern had been engaged abroad all that day. The 'ſquire met her at her return home; and when ſhe enquired after Sophia, he acquainted her that he had ſecured her ſafe enough. 'She is locked up in chamber,' cries he, 'and Ho-'nour keeps the key.' As his looks were full of prodigious wiſdom and ſagacity when he gave his ſiſter this information, it is probable he expected much applauſe from her for what he had done; but how was he diſappointed! when with a moſt diſdainful aſpect, ſhe cried, 'Sure, brother, you are the weakeſt of all 'men. Why will you not confide in me for the ma-'nagement of my niece? Why will you interpoſe? 'you have now undone all that I have been ſpending 'my breath in order to bring about. While I have

'been

'been endeavouring to fill her mind with maxims of 'prudence, you have been provoking her to reject 'them. Engliſh women, brother, I thank heaven, 'are no ſlaves. We are not to be locked up like the 'Spaniſh and Italian wives. We have as good a right 'to liberty as yourſelves. We are to be convinced 'by reaſon and perſuaſion only, and not governed by 'force. I have ſeen the world, brother, and know 'what arguments to make uſe of; and if your folly had 'not prevented me, ſhould have prevailed with her 'to form her conduct by thoſe rules of prudence and 'diſcretion which I formerly taught her.' 'To be ſure,' ſaid the 'ſquire, 'I am always in the wrong.' 'Brother,' anſwered the lady, 'You are not in the 'wrong, unleſs when you meddle with matters beyond 'your knowledge. You muſt agree, that I have ſeen 'moſt of the world; and happy had it been for my 'niece, if ſhe had not been taken from under my care. 'It is by living at home with you that ſhe hath learnt 'romantic notions of love and nonſenſe.' 'You don't 'imagine, I hope,' cries the 'ſquire, 'that I have 'taught her any ſuch things.' 'Your ignorance, 'brother,' returned ſhe, 'as the great Milton ſays, 'almoſt ſubdues my patience.'* 'D—n Milton,' anſwered the 'ſquire, 'if he had the impudence to ſay 'ſo to my face, I'd lend him a douſe, thof he was 'never ſo great a man. Patience! an you come to 'that, ſiſter, I have more occaſion of patience, to be 'uſed like an overgrown ſchool-boy, as I am by you. 'Do you think no one hath any underſtanding, unleſs 'he hath been about at court? Pox! the world is 'come to a fine paſs indeed, if we are all fools, ex-'cept a parcel of round-heads and Hannover rats. 'Pox! I hope the times are a coming that we ſhall 'make fools of them, and every man ſhall enjoy his 'own. That's all, ſiſter, and every man ſhall enjoy 'his own. I hope to zee it, ſiſter, before the Hanno-'ver rats have eat up all our corn, and left us nothing 'but turnips to feed upon.' 'I proteſt, brother,'

* The reader may perhaps ſubdue his own patience, if he ſearches for this in Milton.

cries she, 'you are now got beyond my underſtanding. 'Your jargon of turneps and Hannover rats is to me 'perfectly unintelligible.' 'I believe,' cries he, 'you don't care to hear o'em; but the country inte-'reſt may ſucceed one day or other for all that.' 'I 'wiſh,' anſwered the lady, 'you would think a little 'of your daughter's intereſt: for believe me, ſhe is 'in greater danger than the nation.' 'Juſt now,' ſaid he, 'you chid me for thinking on her, and would 'ha' her left to you.' 'And if you will promiſe to 'interpoſe no more,' anſwered ſhe, 'I will, out of my 'regard to my niece, undertake the charge.' 'Well 'do then,' ſaid the 'ſquire, 'for you know I always 'agreed, that women are the propereſt to manage wo-'men.'

Mrs. Weſtern then departed, muttering ſomething with an air of diſdain, concerning women and management of the nation. She immediately repaired to Sophia's apartment, who was now, after a day's confinement, releaſed again from her captivity.

THE

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK VII.

Containing three days.

CHAP. I.

A comparison between the World and the Stage.

THE world hath often been compared to the theatre; and many grave writers, as well as the poets, have considered human life as a great drama, resembling, in almost every particular, those scenical representations, which Thespis is first reported to have invented, and which have been since received with so much approbation and delight in all polite countries.

This thought hath been carried so far, and is become so general, that some words proper to the theatre, and which were at first metaphorically applied to the world, are now indiscriminately and literally spoken of both: thus stage and scene are by common use grown as familiar to us, when we speak of life in general, as when we confine ourselves to dramatic performances; and when transactions behind the curtain are mentioned, St. James's is more likely to occur to our thoughts than Drury-Lane.

It may ſeem eaſy enough to account for all this, by reflecting that the theatrical ſtage is nothing more than a repreſentation, or, as Ariſtotle calls it, an imitation of what really exiſts; and hence, perhaps, we might fairly pay a very high compliment to thoſe, who by their writings or actions have been ſo capable of imitating life, as to have their pictures in a manner confounded with, or miſtaken for, the originals.

But, in reality, we are not ſo fond of paying compliments to theſe people, whom we uſe as children frequently do the inſtruments of their amuſement; and have much more pleaſure in hiſſing and buffeting them, than in admiring their excellence. There are many other reaſons which have induced us to ſee this analogy between the world and the ſtage.

Some have conſidered the larger part of mankind in the light of actors, as perſonating characters no more their own, and to which, in fact, they have no better title, than the player hath to be in earneſt thought the king or emperor whom he repreſents. Thus the hypocrite may be ſaid to be a player; and indeed the Greeks called them both by one and the ſame name.

The brevity of life hath likewiſe given occaſion to this compariſon. So the immortal Shakeſpear:

——— Life's a poor player,
That ſtruts and frets his hour upon the ſtage,
And then is heard no more.

For which hackneyed quotation, I will make the reader amends by a very noble one, which few, I believe, have read. It is taken from the poem called the DEITY, publiſhed about nine years ago, and long ſince buried in oblivion: a proof that good books no more than good men do always ſurvive the bad.

From thee * all human actions take their ſprings,
The riſe of empires and the fall of kings!
See the VAST THEATRE OF TIME diſplay'd,
While o'er the ſcene ſucceeding heroes tread!

* The DEITY.

With

With pomp the ſhining images ſucceed,
What leaders triumph, and what monarchs bleed!
Perform the parts thy providence aſſign'd,
Their pride, their paſſions, to thy ends inclin'd:
A while they glitter in the face of day,
Then at thy nod the phantoms paſs away;
No traces left of all the buſy ſcene,
But that remembrance ſays—THE THINGS HAVE BEEN!

In all theſe, however, and in every other ſimilitude of life to the theatre, the reſemblance hath been always taken from the ſtage only. None, as I remember, have at all conſidered the audience at this great drama.

But as nature often exhibits ſome of her beſt performances to a very full houſe; ſo will the behaviour of her ſpectators no leſs admit the above-mentioned compariſon than that of her actors. In this vaſt theatre of time are ſeated the friend and the critic; here are claps and ſhouts, hiſſes and groans; in ſhort, every thing which was ever ſeen or heard at the Theatre royal.

Let us examine this in one example: for inſtance, in the behaviour of the great audience on that ſcene which nature was pleaſed to exhibited in the 12th chapter of the preceding book, where ſhe introduced Black George running away with the 500l. from his friend and benefactor.

Thoſe who ſat in the world's upper gallery, treated that incident, I am well convinced, with their uſual vociferation; and every term of ſcurrilous reproach was moſt probably vented on that occaſion.

If we had deſcended to the next order of ſpectators, we ſhould have found an equal degree of abhorrence, though leſs of noiſe and ſcurrility; yet here the good women gave Black George to the devil, and many of them expected every minute that the cloven-footed gentleman would fetch his own.

The pit, as uſual, was no doubt divided: thoſe who delight in heroic virtue and perfect character, objected to the producing ſuch inſtances of villainy, without puniſhing them very ſeverely for the ſake of exam-

ple. 'Some of the author's friends cry'd—'Look'e, 'gentlemen, the man is a villain; but it is nature for 'all that.' And all the young critics of the age, the clerks, apprentices, &c. called it low, and fell a groaning.

As for the boxes, they behaved with their accuſtomed politeneſs. Moſt of them were attending to ſomething elſe. Some of thoſe few who regarded the ſcene at all, declared he was a bad kind of man; while others refuſed to give their opinion, 'till they had heard that of the beſt judges.

Now we, who are admitted behind the ſcenes of this great theatre of nature, (and no author ought to write any thing beſides dictionaries and ſpelling-books who hath not this privilege) can cenſure the action, without conceiving any abſolute deteſtation of the perſon, whom perhaps nature may not have deſigned to act an ill part in all her dramas: for in this inſtance, life moſt exactly reſembles the ſtage, ſince it is often the ſame perſon who repreſents the villain and the hero; and he who engages your admiration to-day, will probably attract your contempt to-morrow. As Garrick, whom I regard in tragedy to be the greateſt genius the world hath ever produced, ſometimes condeſcends to play the fool; ſo did Scipio the Great, and Lælius the Wiſe, according to Horace, many years ago: nay, Cicero reports them to have been 'incredibly childiſh.'——Theſe, it is true, played the fool, like my friend Garrick, in jeſt only, but ſeveral eminent characters have, in numberleſs inſtances of their lives, played the fool egregiouſly in earneſt; ſo far as to render it a matter of ſome doubt, whether their wiſdom or folly were predominant; or whether they were better intitled to the applauſe or cenſure, the admiration or contempt, the love or hatred, of mankind.

Thoſe perſons, indeed, who have paſſed any time behind the ſcenes of this great theatre, and are thoroughly acquainted not only with the ſeveral diſguiſes which are there put on, but alſo with the fantaſtic and capricious behaviour of the paſſions, who are the managers and directors of this theatre, (for as to reaſon

the

the patentee, he is known to be a very idle fellow, and ſeldom to exert himſelf) may moſt probably have learned to underſtand the famous *nil admirari* of Horace, or in the Engliſh phraſe, to ſtare at nothing.

A ſingle bad act no more conſtitutes a villain in life, than a ſingle bad part on the ſtage. The paſſions, like the managers of a playhouſe, often force men upon parts, without conſulting their judgment, and ſometimes without any regard to their talents. Thus the man, as well as the player, may condemn what he himſelf acts; nay, it is common to ſee vice ſit as awkwardly on ſome men, as the character of Iago would on the honeſt face of Mr. William Mills.

Upon the whole, then, the man of candour and of true underſtanding is never haſty to condemn. He can cenſure an imperfection, or even a vice, without rage againſt the guilty party. In a word, they are the ſame folly, the ſame childiſhneſs, the ſame ill-breeding, and the ſame ill-nature, which raiſe all the clamours and uproars both in life and on the ſtage. The worſt of men generally have the words rogue and villain moſt in their mouths, as the loweſt of all wretches are the apteſt to cry out low in the pit.

CHAP. II.

Containing a converſation with Mr. Jones had with himſelf.

JONES received his effects from Mr. Allworthy's early in the morning, with the following anſwer to his letter.

'SIR,

'I AM commanded by my uncle to acquaint you, 'that as he did not proceed to thoſe meaſures 'he had taken with you, without the greateſt delibe'ration, and after the fulleſt evidence of your unwor'thineſs, ſo will it be always out of your power to 'cauſe the leaſt alteration in his reſolution. He ex'preſſes great ſurprize at your preſumption in ſaying, 'you have reſigned all pretenſions to a young lady,

'to whom it is impoſſible you ſhould ever have had 'any, her birth and fortune having made her ſo infi-'nitely your ſuperior. Laſtly, I am commanded to 'tell you, that the only inſtance of your compliance 'with my uncle's inclinations, which he requires, is, 'your immediately quitting this country. I cannot 'conclude this without offering you my advice, as a 'chriſtian, that you would ſeriouſly think of amend-'ing your life; that you may be aſſiſted with grace ſo 'to do, will be always the prayer of

'Your humble ſervant,

'W. BLIFIL.'

Many contending paſſions were raiſed in our heroe's mind by this letter; but the tender prevailed at laſt over the indignant and iraſcible, and a flood of tears came ſeaſonably to his aſſiſtance, and poſſibly prevented his misfortunes from either turning his head or burſting his heart.

He grew, however, ſoon aſhamed of indulging this remedy; and ſtarting up, he cried, 'Well then, I 'will give Mr. Allworthy the only inſtance he re-'quires of my obedience. I will go this moment—'but whither?—why let fortune direct; ſince there 'is no other who thinks it of any conſequence what 'becomes of this wretched perſon, it ſhall be a matter 'of equal indifference to myſelf. Shall I alone re-'gard what no other?——Ha! have I not reaſon to 'think there is another?—One whoſe value is above 'that of the whole world!—I may, I muſt imagine, 'my Sophia is not indifferent to what becomes of me. 'Shall I then leave this only friend.—And ſuch a 'friend? Shall I not ſtay with her?—Where? how 'can I ſtay with her? Have I any hopes of ever ſeeing 'her, though ſhe was as deſirous as myſelf, without 'expoſing her to the wrath of her father? and to 'what purpoſe? Can I think of ſoliciting ſuch a crea-'ture to conſent to her own ruin? Shall I indulge 'any paſſion of mine at ſuch a price?—Shall I lurk 'about this country like a thief, with ſuch inten-'tions?—No, I diſdain, I deteſt the thought. Fare-

'well,

' wel, Sophia; farewel moſt lovely, moſt beloved.—Here paſſion ſtopt his mouth, and found a vent at his eyes.

And now, having taken a reſolution to leave the country, he began to debate with himſelf whither he ſhould go. The world, as Milton phraſes it, lay all before him; and Jones, no more than Adam, had any man to whom he might reſort for comfort or aſſiſtance. All his acquaintance were the acquaintance of Mr. Allworthy, and he had no reaſon to expect any countenance from them, as that gentleman had withdrawn his favour from him. Men of great and good characters ſhould indeed be very cautious how they diſcard their dependents; for the conſequence to the unhappy ſufferer is being diſcarded by all others.

What courſe of life to purſue, or to what buſineſs to apply himſelf, was a ſecond conſideration: and here the proſpect was all a melancholy void. Every profeſſion, and every trade, required length of time, and what was worſe, money; for matters are ſo conſtituted, that 'Nothing out of nothing' is not a truer maxim in phyſics than in politics; and every man who is greatly deſtitute of money, is on that account entirely excluded from all means of acquiring it.

At laſt the ocean, that hoſpitable friend to the wretched, opened her capacious arms to receive him; and he inſtantly reſolved to accept her kind invitation. To expreſs myſelf leſs figuratively, he determined to go to ſea.

This thought indeed no ſooner ſuggeſted itſelf, than he eagerly embraced it; and having preſently hired horſes, he ſet out for Briſtol to put it in execution.

But before we attend him on this expedition, we ſhall reſort a while to Mr. Weſtern's, and ſee what farther happened to the charming Sophia.

CHAP. III.

Containing ſeveral dialogues.

THE morning in which Mr. Jones departed, Mrs. Weſtern ſummoned Sophia into her apart-

ment, and having first acquainted her that she had obtained her liberty of her father, she proceeded to read her a long lecture on the subject of matrimony; which she treated not as a romantic scheme of happiness arising from love, as it hath been described by the poets; nor did she mention any of those purposes for which we are taught by divines to regard it as instituted by sacred authority; she considered it rather as a fund in which prudent women deposite their fortunes to the best advantage, in order to receive a larger interest for them than they could have elsewhere.

When Mrs. Western had finished, Sophia answered, 'That she was very incapable of arguing with a lady 'of her aunt's superior knowledge and experience, 'especially on a subject which she had so very little 'considered, as this of matrimony.'

'Argue with me, Child!' replied the other, 'I 'do not indeed expect it. I should have seen the 'world to very little purpose truly, if I am to argue 'with one of your years. I have taken this trouble, 'in order to instruct you. The antient philosophers, 'such as Socr . s, Alcibiades, and others, did not 'use to argue with their scholars. You are to consi'der me, Child, as Socrates, not asking your opinion, 'but only informing you of mine.' From which last words the reader may possibly imagine, that this lady had read no more of the philosophy of Socrates, than she had of that of Alcibiades; and indeed we cannot resolve his curiosity as to this point.

'Madam,' cries Sophia, 'I have never presumed 'to controvert any opinion of yours; and this sub'ject, as I said, I have never yet thought of, and 'perhaps never may.'

'Indeed Sophy,' replied the aunt, 'this dissimu'lation with me is very foolish. The French shall 'as soon persuade me, that they take foreign towns 'in defence only of their own country, as you can 'impose on me to believe you have never yet thought 'seriously of matrimony. How can you, Child, af'fect to deny that you have considered of contracting 'an alliance, when you so well know I am acquainted 'with the party with whom you desire to contract it?

'An

'An alliance as unnatural and contrary to your interest, as a separate league with the French would be to the interest of the Dutch! But, however, if you have not hitherto considered of this matter, I promise you it is now high time; for my brother is resolved immediately to conclude the treaty with Mr. Blifil; and indeed I am a sort of guarantee in the affair, and have promised your concurrence.'

'Indeed, Madam, cries Sophia, 'this is the only instance in which I must disobey both yourself and my father. For this is a match which requires very little consideration in me to refuse.'

'If I was not as great a philosopher as Socrates himself,' returned Mrs. Western, 'you would overcome my patience. What objection can you have to the young gentleman?'

'A very solid objection in my opinion,' says Sophia.—'I hate him.'

'Will you never learn a proper use of words?' answered the aunt. 'Indeed, Child, you should consult Bailey's Dictionary. It is impossible you should hate a man from whom you have received no injury. By hatred, therefore, you mean no more than dislike, which is no sufficient objection against your marrying of him. I have known many couples, who have entirely disliked each other, lead very comfortable, genteel lives. Believe me, Child, I know these things better than you. You will allow me, I think, to have seen the world, in which I have not an acquaintance who would not rather be thought to dislike her husband, than to like him. The contrary is such out of fashion romantic nonsense, that the very imagination of it is shocking.'

'Indeed, Madam,' replied Sophia, 'I shall never marry a man I dislike. If I promise my father never to consent to any marriage contrary to his inclinations, I think I may hope he will never force me into that state contrary to my own.'

'Inclinations!' cries the aunt, with some warmth. 'Inclinations! I am astonished at your assurance. A young woman of your age, and unmarried, to talk of inclinations! But whatever your inclinations

'may be, my brother is reſolved; nay, ſince you 'talk of inclinations, I ſhall adviſe him to haſten the 'treaty. Inclinations!'

Sophia then flung herſelf upon her knees, and tears began to trickle from her ſhining eyes. She entreated her aunt, 'to have mercy upon her, and not to reſent 'ſo cruelly her unwillingneſs to make herſelf miſera-'ble; often urging, that ſhe alone was concerned, 'and that her happineſs only was at ſtake.'

As a bailiff, when well authoriſed by his writ, having poſſeſſed himſelf of the perſon of ſome unhappy debtor, views all his tears without concern: in vain the wretched captive attempts to raiſe compaſſion; in vain the tender wife bereft of her companion, the little prattling boy, or frighted girl, are mentioned as inducements to reluctance. The noble bumtrap, blind and deaf to every circumſtance of diſtreſs, greatly ſoars above all the motives to humanity, and into the hands of the gaoler reſolves to deliver his miſerable prey.

Not leſs blind to the tears, or leſs deaf to every entreaty of Sophia, was the politic aunt, nor leſs determined was ſhe to deliver over the trembling maid into the arms of the gaoler Blifil. She anſwered with great impetuoſity, 'So far, Madam, from your being 'concerned alone, your concern is the leaſt, or ſurely 'the leaſt important. It is the honour of your family 'which is concerned in this alliance; you are only 'the inſtrument. Do you conceive, miſtreſs, that 'an intermarriage between kingdoms, as when a 'daughter of France is married into Spain, the 'princeſs herſelf is alone conſidered in the match? 'No, it is a match between two kingdoms, rather 'than between two perſons. The ſame happens in 'great families, ſuch as ours. The alliance between 'the families is the principal matter. You ought to 'have a greater regard for the honour of your family 'than for your own perſon; and if the example of a 'princeſs cannot inſpire you with theſe noble thoughts, 'you cannot ſurely complain at being uſed no worſe 'than all princeſſes are uſed.'

'I

'I hope, Madam,' cries Sophia, with a little elevation of voice, 'I ſhall never do any thing to diſhonour my family; but as for Mr. Blifil, whatever 'may be the conſequence, I am reſolved againſt him, 'and no force ſhall prevail in his favour.'

Weſtern, who had been within hearing during the greater part of the preceding dialogue, had now exhauſted all his patience; he therefore entered the room in a violent paſſion, crying, 'D—n me then 'if ſhatunt ha'n, d—n me if ſhatunt, that's all— 'that's all ——— d—n me if ſhatunt.'

Mrs. Weſtern had collected a ſufficient quantity of wrath for the uſe of Sophia; but ſhe now transferred it all to the 'ſquire. 'Brother,' ſaid ſhe, 'it is 'aſtoniſhing that you will interfere in a matter which 'you had totally left to my negotiation. Regard to 'my family hath made me take upon myſelf to be 'the mediating power, in order to rectify thoſe miſ'takes in policy which you have committed in your 'daughter's education. For, brother, it is you; it 'is your prepoſterous conduct which hath eradicated 'all the ſeeds that I had formerly ſown in her tender 'mind.—It is you yourſelf who have taught her diſ'obedience.'———'Blood!' cries the 'ſquire, foaming at the mouth, 'you are enough to conquer 'the patience of the devil!. Have I ever taught my 'daughter diſobedience?——Here ſhe ſtands; ſpeak 'honeſtly, girl, did ever I bid you be diſobedient to 'me? Have not I done every thing to humour, and 'to gratify you, and to make you obedient to me? 'And very obedient to me ſhe was when a little 'child, before you took her in hand and ſpoiled her, 'by filling her head with a pack of court notions.— 'Why,—why,—why,—did I not over-hear you tel'ling her ſhe muſt behave like a princeſs? You have 'made a Whig of the girl; and how ſhould her fa'ther, or any body elſe, expect any obedience from 'her?' 'Brother,' anſwered Mrs. Weſtern, with an air of great diſdain, 'I cannot expreſs the contempt 'I have for your politics of all kinds; but I will 'appeal likewiſe to the young lady herſelf, whether I 'have ever taught her any principles of diſobedience.

'On

'On the contrary, niece, have I not endeavoured to 'inſpire you with a true idea of the ſeveral relations 'in which a human creature ſtands in ſociety? Have 'I not taken infinite pains to ſhow you, that the law 'of nature hath enjoined a duty on children to their 'Parents? Have I not told you what Plato ſays on 'that ſubject?—A ſubject on which you was ſo no-'toriouſly ignorant when you came firſt under my care, 'that I verily believe you did not know the relation 'between a daughter and a father.' 'Tis a lie,' anſwered Weſtern. 'The girl is no ſuch a fool, as to 'live to eleven years old without knowing that ſhe 'was her father's relation.' 'O more than Gothic 'ignorance,' anſwered the lady.——'And as for 'your manners, brother, I muſt tell you they deſerve 'a cane.' 'Why then you may gi'it me, if you 'think you are able,' cries the 'ſquire; 'nay, I ſup-'poſe your niece there will be ready enough to help 'you.' 'Brother,' ſaid Mrs. Weſtern, 'though I 'deſpiſe you beyond expreſſion, yet I ſhall endure 'your inſolence no longer; ſo I deſire my coach may 'be got ready immediately, for I am reſolved to leave 'your houſe this very morning.' 'And a good rid-'dance too,' anſwered he; 'I can bear your inſo-'lence no longer, an you come to that. Blood! it 'is almoſt enough of itſelf, to make my daughter un-'dervalue my ſenſe, when ſhe hears you tell me every 'minute you deſpiſe me.' 'It is impoſſible, it is 'impoſſible, cries the aunt, no one can undervalue 'ſuch a boor.' 'Boar,' anſwered the 'ſquire, 'I am 'no boar; no, nor aſs; no, nor rat neither, Ma-'dam. Remember that—I am no rat. I am a true 'Engliſhman, and not of your Hannover breed, that 'have eat up the nation.' 'Thou art one of thoſe 'wiſe men,' cries ſhe, 'whoſe nonſenſical principles 'have undone the nation; by weakening the hands 'of our government at home, and by diſcouraging 'our friends, and by encouraging our enemies abroad.' 'Ho, are you come back to your politics,' cries the 'ſquire, 'as for thoſe I deſpiſe them as much as I do a 'f—t.' Which laſt word he accompanied and graced with the very action, which, of all others, was the

moſt

most proper to it. And whether it was this word, or the contempt expreſt for her politics, which moſt affected Mrs. Weſtern, I will not determine; but ſhe flew into the moſt violent rage, uttered phraſes improper to be here related, and inſtantly burſt out of the houſe. Nor did her brother or her niece think proper either to ſtop or to follow her! for the one was ſo much poſſeſſed by concern, and the other by anger, that they were rendered almoſt motionleſs.

The 'ſquire, however, ſent after his ſiſter the ſame holla which attends the departure of a hare, when ſhe is firſt ſtarted before the hounds. He was indeed a great maſter of this kind of vociferation, and had a holla proper for moſt occaſions in life.

Women who, like Mrs. Weſtern, know the world, and have applied themſelves to philoſophy and politics, would have immediately availed themſelves of the preſent diſpoſition of Mr. Weſtern's mind; by throwing in a few artful compliments to his underſtanding at the expence of his abſent adverſary; but poor Sophia was all ſimplicity. By which word we do not intend to inſinuate to our reader, that ſhe was ſilly, which is generally underſtood as a ſynonimous term with ſimple: for ſhe was indeed a moſt ſenſible girl, and her underſtanding was of the firſt rate; but ſhe wanted all that uſeful art which females convert to ſo many good purpoſes in life, and which, as it rather ariſes from the heart than from the head, is often the property of the illieſt of women.

CHAP. IV.

A picture of a country gentlewoman taken from the life.

MR. Weſtern having finiſhed his holla, and taken a little breath, began to lament, in very pathetic terms, the unfortunate condition of men, who are, ſays he, always whipt in by the humours of ſome d—n'd b— or other. I think I was hard run enough by your mother for one man; but after giving her a dodge, here's another b— follows me upon the foil; but

but curſe my jacket if I will be run down in this manner by any o'um.

Sophia never had a ſingle diſpute with her father, till this unlucky affair of Blifil, on any account, except in defence of her mother, whom ſhe had loved moſt tenderly, though ſhe loſt her in the eleventh year of her age. The 'ſquire to whom that poor woman had been a faithful upper ſervant all the time of their marriage, had returned that behaviour, by making what the world calls a good huſband. He very ſeldom ſwore at her (perhaps not above once a week) and never beat her: ſhe had not the leaſt occaſion for jealouſy, and was perfect miſtreſs of her time; for ſhe was never interrupted by her huſband, who was engaged all the morning in his field exerciſes, and all the evening with bottle companions. She ſcarce indeed ever ſaw him but at meals; where ſhe had the pleaſure of carving thoſe diſhes which ſhe had before attended at the dreſſing. From theſe meals ſhe retired about five minutes after the other ſervants, having only ſtayed to drink the king over the water. Such were, it ſeems, Mr. Weſtern's orders; for it was a maxim with him, that women ſhould come in with the firſt diſh, and go out after the firſt glaſs. Obedience to theſe orders was perhaps no difficult taſk: for the converſation (if it may be ſo called) was ſeldom ſuch as could entertain a lady. It conſiſted chiefly of hallowing, ſinging, relations of ſporting adventures, b—d—y, and abuſe of women, and of the government.

Theſe, however, where the only ſeaſons when Mr. Weſtern ſaw his wife: for when he repaired to her bed, he was generally ſo drunk that he could not ſee; and in the ſporting ſeaſon he always roſe from her before it was light. Thus was ſhe perfect miſtreſs of her time; and had beſides a coach and four uſually at her command; though unhappily indeed the badneſs of the neighbourhood, and of the roads, made this of little uſe: for none who had ſet much value on their necks would have paſſed through the one, or who had ſet any value on their hours, would have viſited the other. Now to deal honeſtly with the reader, ſhe did not make all the return expected to ſo much indulgence;

for

for ſhe had been married againſt her will, by a fond father, the match having been rather advantageous on her ſide: for the 'ſquire's eſtate was upwards of 3000l. a year, and her fortune no more than a bare 8000l. Hence perhaps ſhe had contracted a little gloominess of temper: for ſhe was rather a good ſervant than a good wife; nor had ſhe always the gratitude to return the extraordinary degree of roaring mirth, with which the 'ſquire received her, even with a good humoured ſmile. She would, moreover, ſometimes interfere with matters which did not concern her, as the violent drinking of her huſband, which in the gentleſt terms ſhe would take ſome of the few opportunities he gave her of remonſtrating againſt. And once in her life ſhe very earneſtly intreated him to carry her for two months to London, which he peremptorily denied; nay, was angry with his wife for the requeſt ever after, being well aſſured, that all the huſbands in London are cuckolds.

For this laſt, and many other good reaſons, Weſtern at length heartily hated his wife; and as he never concealed this hatred before her death, ſo he never forgot it afterwards; but when any thing in the leaſt ſoured him, as a bad ſcenting day, or a diſtemper among his hounds, or any other ſuch misfortune, he conſtantly vented his ſpleen by invectives againſt the deceaſed; ſaying,—'if my wife was alive now, ſhe would be glad 'of this.'

Theſe invectives he was eſpecially deſirous of throwing forth before Sophia: for as he loved her more than he did any other, ſo he was really jealous that ſhe had loved her mother better than him. And this jealouſy Sophia ſeldom failed of heightening on theſe occaſions: for he was not contented with violating her ears with the abuſe of her mother, but endeavoured to force an explicit approbation of all this abuſe, with which deſire he never could prevail upon her by any promiſe or threats to comply.

Hence ſome of my readers will, perhaps, wonder that the 'ſquire had not hated Sophia as much as he had hated her mother: but I muſt inform them, that hatred is not the effect of love, even through the me-

dium of jealouſy. It is, indeed, very poſſible for jealous perſons to kill the objects of their jealouſy, but not to hate them. Which ſentiment being a pretty hard morſel, and bearing ſomething of the air of a paradox, we ſhall leave the reader to chew the cud upon it to the end of the chapter.

CHAP. V.

The generous behaviour of Sophia towards her aunt.

SOPHIA kept ſilence during the foregoing ſpeech of her father, nor did ſhe once anſwer otherwiſe than with a ſigh; but as he underſtood none of the language, or, as he called it, lingo, of the eyes, ſo he was not ſatisfied without ſome further approbation of his ſentiments; which he now demanded of his daughter; telling her, in the uſual way, 'he expected ſhe 'was ready to take the part of every body againſt him, 'as ſhe had always done that of the b—— her mother.' Sophia remaining ſtill ſilent, he cried out, 'What art dumb? why doſt unt ſpeak. Was not thy 'mother a d—d b— to me? anſwer me that. What, 'I ſuppoſe you deſpiſe your father too, and don't think 'him good enough to ſpeak to?'

'For heaven's ſake, Sir,' anſwered Sophia, 'do 'not give ſo cruel a turn to my ſilence. I am ſure I 'would ſooner die than be guilty of any diſreſpect towards you; but how can I venture to ſpeak, when 'every word muſt either offend my dear papa, or convict me of the blackeſt ingratitude as well as impiety 'to the memory of the beſt of mothers: for ſuch I am 'certain my mamma was always to me?'

'And your aunt, I ſuppoſe, is the beſt of ſiſters 'too!' replied the 'ſquire. 'Will you be ſo kind as 'to allow that ſhe is a b—? I may fairly inſiſt upon 'that, I think.'

'Indeed, Sir,' ſays Sophia, 'I have great obligations to my aunt. She hath been a ſecond mother 'to me.'

'And a ſecond wife to me too,' returned Weſtern; 'ſo you will take her part too! you won't confeſs that

'ſhe

'she hath acted the part of the vileſt ſiſter in the 'world?'

'Upon my word, Sir,' cries Sophia, 'I muſt belie 'my heart wickedly if I did. I know my aunt and 'you differ very much in your ways of thinking; but 'I have heard her a thouſand times expreſs the greateſt 'affection for you; and I am convinced, ſo far from 'her being the worſt ſiſter in the world, there are 'very few who love a brother better.'

'The Engliſh of all which is,' anſwered the 'ſquire, 'that I am in the wrong. Ay, certainly. Ay, to be 'ſure, the woman is in the right, and the man in the 'wrong always.'

'Pardon me, Sir,' cries Sophia, 'I do not ſay ſo.'

'What don't you ſay,' anſwered the father? 'you 'have the impudence to ſay ſhe's in the right; doth 'it not follow then of courſe that I am in the wrong? 'And perhaps I am in the wrong to ſuffer ſuch a preſ- 'byterian Hannoverian b— to come into my houſe. 'She may 'dite me of a plot for any thing I know, 'and give my eſtate to the government.'

'So far, Sir, from injuring you or your eſtate,' ſays Sophia, 'if my aunt had died yeſterday, I am convin- 'ced ſhe would have left you her whole fortune.'

Whether Sophia intended it or no, I ſhall not preſume to aſſert; but certain it is, theſe laſt words penetrated very deep into the ears of her father, and produced a much more ſenſible effect than all ſhe had ſaid before. He received the ſound with much the ſame action as a man receives a bullet in his head. He ſtarted, ſtaggered, and turned pale. After which he remained ſilent above a minute, and then began in the following heſitating manner. 'Yeſterday! ſhe would 'have left me her eſtate yeſterday! would ſhe? Why 'yeſterday! of all the days in the year? I ſuppoſe if 'ſhe dies to-morrow ſhe will leave it to ſomebody 'elſe, and perhaps out of the family:' 'My aunt, 'Sir,' cries Sophia, 'hath very violent paſſions, and 'I can't anſwer what ſhe may do under their influ- 'ence.'

'You can't!' returned the father, 'and pray who 'hath been the occaſion of putting her into thoſe vio- 'lent

'lent paſſions? Nay, who hath actually put her into 'them? Was not you and ſhe hard at it before I came 'into the room? Beſides, was not all our quarrel about 'you? I have not quarrelled with ſiſter this many years 'but upon your account; and now you would throw 'the whole blame upon me, as thof I ſhould be the 'occaſion of her leaving the eſteate out o' the vamily. 'I could have expected no better indeed, this is like 'the return you make to all the reſt of my fondneſs.'

'I beſeech you then,' cries Sophia, 'upon my knees 'I beſeech you, if I have been the unhappy occaſion 'of this difference, that you will endeavour to make 'it up with my aunt, and not ſuffer her to leave your 'houſe in this violent rage of anger: ſhe is a very 'good-natured woman, and a few civil words will ſa-'tisfy her—Let me intreat you, Sir.'

'So I muſt go and aſk pardon for your fault, muſt 'I?' anſwered Weſtern. 'You have loſt the hare 'and I muſt draw every way to find her again? Indeed, 'if I was certain'—Here he ſtopt, and Sophia throwing in more intreaties, at length prevailed upon him; ſo that after venting two or three bitter ſarcaſtical expreſſions againſt his daughter, he departed as faſt as he could to recover his ſiſter, before her equipage could be gotten ready.

Sophia then returned to her chamber of mourning, where ſhe indulged herſelf (if the phraſe may be allowed me) in all the luxury of tender grief. She read over more than once the letter which ſhe had received from Jones; her muff too was uſed on this occaſion; and ſhe bathed both theſe, as well as herſelf, with her tears. In this ſituation, the friendly Mrs. Honour exerted her utmoſt abilities to comfort her afflicted miſtreſs. She ran over the names of many young gentlemen: and having greatly commended their parts and perſons, aſſured Sophia that ſhe might take her choice of any. Theſe methods muſt have certainly been uſed with ſome ſucceſs in diſorders of the like kind, or ſo ſkilful a practitioner as Mrs. Honour would never have ventured to apply them; nay, I have heard that the college of chambermaids hold them to be as ſovereign remedies as any in the female diſpenſary; but whether

ther it was that Sophia's diſeaſe differed, inwardly, from thoſe caſes with which it agreed in external ſymptoms, I will not aſſert; but, in fact, the good waiting-woman did more harm than good, and at laſt ſo incenſed her miſtreſs (which was no eaſy matter) that with an angry voice ſhe diſmiſſed her from her preſence.

CHAP. VI.

Containing great variety of matter.

THE 'ſquire overtook his ſiſter juſt as ſhe was ſtepping into the coach, and partly by force and partly by ſolicitations, prevailed upon her to order her horſes back into their quarters. He ſucceeded in this attempt without much difficulty: for the lady was, as we have already hinted, of a moſt placable diſpoſition, and greatly loved her brother, though ſhe deſpiſed his parts, or rather his little knowledge of the world.

Poor Sophia, who had firſt ſet on foot this reconciliation, was now made the ſacrifice to it. They both concurred in their cenſures on her conduct; jointly declared war againſt her; and directly proceeded to conſult, how to carry it on in the moſt vigorous manner. For this purpoſe, Mrs. Weſtern propoſed not only an immediate concluſion of the treaty with Allworthy; but as immediately to carry it into execution; ſaying, 'That there was no other way to ſucceed with her niece but by violent methods, which ſhe was convinced Sophia had not ſufficient reſolution to reſiſt. By violent,' ſays ſhe, 'I mean rather haſty meaſures: for as to confinement or abſolute force, no ſuch things muſt or can be attempted. Our plan muſt be concerted for a ſurprize, and not for a ſtorm.'

Theſe matters were reſolved on, when Mr. Bliſil came to pay a viſit to his miſtreſs. The 'ſquire no ſooner heard of his arrival, than he ſtept aſide, by his ſiſter's advice, to give his daughter orders for the proper reception of her lover; which he did with the moſt

moſt bitter execrations and denunciations of judgment on her refuſal.

The impetuoſity of the 'ſquire bore down all before him; and Sophia, as her aunt very wiſely foreſaw, was not able to reſiſt him. She agreed, therefore, to ſee Blifil, though ſhe had ſcarce ſpirits or ſtrength ſufficient to utter her aſſent. Indeed, to give a peremptory denial to a father whom ſhe ſo tenderly loved, was no eaſy taſk. Had this circumſtance been out of the caſe, much leſs reſolution than what ſhe was really miſtreſs of, would, perhaps, have ſerved her; but it is no unuſual thing to aſcribe thoſe actions entirely to fear, which are in a great meaſure produced by love.

In purſuance, therefore, of her father's peremptory command, Sophia now admitted Mr. Blifil's viſit. Scenes, like this, when painted at large, afford, as we have obſerved, very little entertainment to the reader. Here, therefore, we ſhall ſtrictly adhere to a rule of Horace; by which writers are directed to paſs over all thoſe matters, which they deſpair of placing in a ſhining light. A rule, we conceive, of excellent uſe as well to the hiſtorian as to the poet: and which, if followed, muſt, at leaſt, have this good effect, that many a great evil (for ſo all great books are called) would thus be reduced to a ſmall one.

It is poſſible the great art uſed by Blifil at this interview would have prevailed on Sophia to have made another man in his circumſtances her confident, and to have revealed the whole ſecret of her heart to him; but ſhe had contracted ſo ill an opinion of this young gentleman, that ſhe was reſolved to place no confidence in him: for ſimplicity, when ſet on its guard, is often a match for cunning. Her behaviour to him, therefore, was entirely forced, and indeed ſuch as is generally preſcribed to virgins upon the ſecond formal viſit from one who is appointed for their huſband.

But though Blifil declared himſelf to the 'ſquire perfectly ſatisfied with his reception; yet that gentleman, who in company with his ſiſter had overheard all, was not ſo well pleaſed. He reſolved, in purſuance of the advice of the ſage lady, to puſh matters as forward as poſſible; and addreſſing himſelf to his intended ſon-

in-

in-law in the hunting phraſe, he cry'd after a loud holla, 'Follow her, boy, follow her; run in, run in, 'that's it, honeys. Dead, dead, dead.—Never be 'baſhful, nor ſtand ſhall I, ſhall I?—Allworthy and 'I can finiſh all matters between us this afternoon, 'and let us ha' the wedding to-morrow.'

Blifil having conveyed the utmoſt ſatisfaction into his countenance, anſwered; 'As there is nothing, 'Sir, in this world, which I ſo eagerly deſire as an 'alliance with your family, except my union with the 'moſt amiable and deſerving Sophia, you may eaſily 'imagine how impatient I muſt be to ſee myſelf in 'poſſeſſion of my two higheſt wiſhes. If I have not 'therefore importuned you on this head, you will 'impute it only to my fear of offending the lady, by 'endeavouring to hurry on ſo bleſſed an event, faſter 'than a ſtrict compliance with all the rules of decency 'and decorum will permit. But if by your intereſt, 'Sir, ſhe might be induced to diſpenſe with any 'formalities.'——

'Formalities! with a pox!' anſwered the 'ſquire, 'Pooh, all ſtuff and nonſenſe. I tell thee, ſhe ſhall 'ha' thee to-morrow; you will know the world bet-'ter hereafter, when you come to my age. Women 'never gi' their conſent, man, if they can help it; 'tis not the faſhion. If I had ſtaid for her mother's 'conſent, I might have been a batchelor to this 'day.——To her, to her, co to her, that's it, you 'jolly dog. I tell thee ſhat ha' her to-morrow morn-'ing.'

Blifil ſuffered himſelf to be overpowered by the forcible rhetoric of the 'ſquire; and it being agreed that Weſtern ſhould cloſe with Allworthy that very afternoon, the lover departed home, having firſt earneſtly begged that no violence might be offered to the lady by his haſte, in the ſame manner as a popiſh inquiſitor begs the lay-power to do no violence to the heretic, delivered over to it, and againſt whom the church hath paſſed ſentence.

And to ſay the truth, Blifil had paſſed ſentence againſt Sophia; for however pleaſed he had declared himſelf to Weſtern, with his reception, he was by no means

means satisfied, unless it was that he was convinced of the hatred and scorn of his mistress; and this had produced no less reciprocal hatred and scorn in him. It may, perhaps, be asked, Why then did he not put an immediate end to all further courtship; I answer, for that very reason, as well as for several others equally good, which we shall now proceed to open to the reader.

Though Mr. Blifil was not of the complexion of Jones, nor ready to eat every woman he saw; yet he was far from being destitute of that appetite which is said to be the common property of all animals. With this, he had likewise that distinguishing taste, which serves to direct men in their choice of the object, or food of their several appetites; and this taught him to consider Sophia as a most delicious morsel, indeed to regard her with the same desires which an ortolan inspires into the soul of an Epicure. Now the agonies which affected the mind of Sophia rather augmented than impaired her beauty; for her tears added brightness to her eyes, and her breasts rose higher with her sighs. Indeed no one hath seen beauty in its highest lustre, who hath never seen it in distress. Blifil therefore looked on this human ortolan with greater desire than when he viewed her last; nor was his desire at all lessened by the aversion which he discovered in her to himself. On the contrary, this served rather to heighten the pleasure he proposed in rifling her charms, as it added triumph to lust; nay, he had some further views, from obtaining the absolute possession of her person, which we detest too much even to mention; and revenge itself was not without its share in the gratifications which he promised himself. The rivalling poor Jones, and supplanting him in her affections, added another spur to his pursuit, and promised another additional rapture to his enjoyment.

Besides all these views, which to some scrupulous persons may seem to savour too much of malevolence, he had one prospect, which few readers will regard with any great abhorrence. And this was the estate of Mr. Western; which was all to be settled on his daughter and her issue; for so extravagant was the affection

affection of that fond parent, that provided his child would but conſent to be miſerable with the huſband he choſe, he cared not at what price he purchaſed him.

For theſe reaſons Mr. Blifil was ſo deſirous of the match, that he intended to deceive Sophia, by pretending love to her; and to deceive her father and his own uncle, by pretending he was beloved by her. In doing this, he availed himſelf of the piety of Thwackum, who held, that if the end propoſed was religious (as ſurely matrimony is) it mattered not how wicked were the means. As to other occaſions, he uſed to apply the philoſophy of Square, which taught, that the end was immaterial, ſo that the means were fair and conſiſtent with moral rectitude. To ſay truth, there were few occurrences in life on which he could not draw advantage from the precepts of one or other of thoſe great maſters.

Little deceit was indeed neceſſary to be practiſed on Mr. Weſtern; who thought the inclinations of his daughter of as little conſequence, as Blifil himſelf conceived them to be; but as the ſentiments of Mr. Allworthy were of a very different kind, ſo it was abſolutely neceſſary to impoſe on him. In this, however, Blifil was ſo well aſſiſted by Weſtern, that he ſucceeded without difficulty; for as Mr. Allworthy had been aſſured by her father, that Sophia had a proper affection for Blifil, and that all which he had ſuſpected concerning Jones was entirely falſe, Blifil had nothing more to do, than to confirm theſe aſſertions; which he did with ſuch equivocations, that he preſerved a ſalvo for his conſcience; and had the ſatisfaction of conveying a lie to his uncle, without the guilt of telling one. When he was examined touching the inclinations of Sophia, by Allworthy, who ſaid, 'he would, on no account, be acceſſary to forcing 'a young lady into a marriage contrary to her own 'will,' he anſwered, 'That the real ſentiments of 'young ladies were very difficult to be underſtood; 'that her behaviour to him was full as forward as he 'wiſhed it, and that if he could believe her father, 'ſhe had all the affection for him which any lover

'could desire.' 'As for Jones,' said he, 'whom I 'am loath to call villain, though his behaviour to 'you, Sir, sufficiently justifies the appellation, his 'own vanity, or perhaps some wicked views, might 'make him boast of a falshood; for if there had been 'any reality in Miss Western's love to him, the 'greatness of her fortune would never have suffered 'him to desert her, as you are well informed he hath. 'Lastly, Sir, I promise you I would not myself, for 'any consideration, no not for the whole world, con-'sent to marry this young lady, if I was not per-'suaded she had all the passion for me which I desire 'she should have.'

This excellent method of conveying a falshood with the heart only, without making the tongue guilty of an untruth, by the means of equivocation and impos-ture, hath quieted the conscience of many a notable deceiver; and yet when we consider that it is Omni-science on which these endeavour to impose, it may possibly seem capable of affording only a very superfi-cial comfort; and that this artful and refined distinc-tion between communicating a lie, and telling one, is hardly worth the pains it costs them.

Allworthy was pretty well satisfied with what Mr. Western and Mr. Blifil told him: and the treaty was now, at the end of two days, concluded. Nothing then remained previous to the office of the priest, but the office of the lawyers, which threatened to take up so much time, that Western offered to bind him-self by all manner of covenants, rather than defer the happiness of the young couple. Indeed he was so very earnest and pressing, that an indifferent person might have concluded he was more a principal in this match than he really was: but this eagerness was natural to him on all occasions: and he conducted every scheme he undertook in such a manner, as if the success of that alone was sufficient to constitute the whole happi-ness of his life.

The joint importunities of both father and son-in-law would probably have prevailed on Mr. Allworthy, who brooked but ill any delay of giving happiness to others, had not Sophia herself prevented it, and taken measures

measures to put a final end to the whole treaty, and to rob both church and law of those taxes which these wise bodies have thought proper to receive from the propagation of the human species in a lawful manner. Of which in the next chapter.

CHAP. VII.

A strange resolution of Sophia, and a more strange stratagem of Mrs. Honour.

THOUGH Mrs. Honour was principally attached to her own interest, she was not without some little attachment to Sophia. To say truth, it was very difficult for any one to know that young lady without loving her. She no sooner, therefore, heard a piece of news, which she imagined to be of great importance to her mistress, than quite forgetting the anger which she had conceived two days before, at her unpleasant dismission from Sophia's presence, she ran hastily to inform her of the news.

The beginning of her discourse was as abrupt as her entrance into the room. 'O dear Ma'am, says she, 'what doth your la'ship think? To be sure, I 'am frightened out of my wits; and yet I thought 'it my duty to tell your la'ship, though perhaps it 'may make you angry, for we servants don't always 'know what will make our ladies angry; for to be 'sure every thing is always laid to the charge of a ser-'vant. When our ladies are out of humour, to be 'sure we must be scolded; and to be sure I should, 'not wonder if your la'ship should be out of humour; 'nay, it must surprize you certainly, ay, and shock 'you too.'—'Good Honour! let me know it with-'out any longer preface,' says Sophia; 'there are 'few things, I promise you, which will surprize, 'and fewer which will shock me.' 'Dear Madam,' answered Honour, 'to be sure, I overheard my ma-'ster talking to parson Supple about getting a licence 'this very afternoon; and to be sure I heard him 'say your la'ship should be married to-morrow morn-'ing.' Sophia turned pale at these words, and repeated eagerly, 'to-morrow morning!—'Yes, 'Ma'am,' replied the trusty waiting woman, 'I will

'take my oath I heard my maſter ſay ſo.' 'Honour,' ſays Sophia, 'you have both ſurprized and ſhocked 'me to ſuch a degree, that I have ſcarce any breath 'or ſpirits left. What is to be done in my dreadful 'ſituation?' 'I wiſh I was able to adviſe your 'la'ſhip,' ſays ſhe. 'Do adviſe me,' cries Sophia, 'pray, dear Honour, adviſe me. Think what you 'would attempt if it was your own caſe.' 'Indeed, 'Ma'am,' cries Honour, 'I wiſh your la'ſhip and I 'could change ſituations; that is, I mean, without 'hurting your la'ſhip; for to be ſure I don't wiſh 'you ſo bad as to be a ſervant; but becauſe that if 'ſo be it was my caſe, I ſhould find no manner of dif-'ficulty in it; for in my poor opinion, young 'ſquire 'Bliſil is a charming, ſweet, handſome man.'— 'Don't mention ſuch ſtuff,' cries Sophia.—'Such 'ſtuff,' repeated Honour, 'why there.—Well, to 'be ſure what's one man's meat is another man's 'poiſon, and the ſame is altogether as true of women.' 'Honour,' ſays Sophia, 'rather than ſubmit to be 'the wife of that contemptible wretch, I would 'plunge a dagger into my heart.' 'O lud, Ma'am,' anſwer the other, 'I am ſure you frighten me out 'of my wits now. Let me beſeech your la'ſhip not 'to ſuffer ſuch wicked thoughts to come into your 'head. O lud, to be ſure I tremble every inch of 'me. Dear Ma'am, conſider,—that to be denied 'chriſtian burial, and to have your corpſe buried in 'the highway, and a ſtake drove through you, as 'farmer Halfpenny was ſerved at Ox Croſs, and, to 'be ſure, his ghoſt has walked there ever ſince; for 'ſeveral people have ſeen him. To be ſure, it can be 'nothing but the devil which can put ſuch wicked 'thoughts into the head of any body; for certainly 'it is leſs wicked to hurt all the world than one's 'own dear ſelf, and ſo I have heard ſaid by more par-'ſons than one. If your la'ſhip hath ſuch a violent 'averſion, and hates the young gentleman ſo very 'bad, that you can't bear to think of going into bed 'to him; for to be ſure there may be ſuch antipathies 'in nature, and one had lieverer touch a toad than 'the fleſh of ſome people.'——

Sophia

Sophia had been too much wrapt in contemplation to pay any great attention to the foregoing excellent diſcourſe of her maid; interrupting her therefore, without making any anſwer to it, ſhe ſaid, 'Honour, 'I am come to a reſolution. I am determined to leave 'my father's houſe this very night; and if you 'have the friendſhip for me which you have often 'profeſſed, you will keep me company.' That I 'will, Ma'am, to the world's end,' anſwered Honour; 'but I beg your la'ſhip to conſider the conſe-'quence, before you undertake any raſh action. 'Where can your la'ſhip poſſibly go?' 'There is,' replied Sophia, 'a lady of quality in London, a re-'lation of mine, who ſpent ſeveral months with my 'aunt in the country; during all which time ſhe 'treated me with great kindneſs, and expreſſed ſo 'much pleaſure in my company, that ſhe earneſtly 'deſired my aunt to ſuffer me to go with her to Lon-'don. As ſhe is a woman of very great note, I ſhall 'eaſily find her out, and I make no doubt of being 'very well and kindly received by her.' 'I would 'not have your la'ſhip too confident of that,' cries Honour; 'for the firſt lady I lived with uſed 'to invite people very earneſtly to her houſe; but if 'ſhe heard afterwards they were coming, ſhe uſed to 'get out of the way. Beſides, though this lady 'would be very glad to ſee your la'ſhip, as to be 'ſure any body would be glad to ſee your la'ſhip; 'yet when ſhe hears your la'ſhip is run away from 'my maſter.' —— 'You are miſtaken, Honour,' ſays Sophia, 'ſhe looks upon the authority of a fa-'ther in a much lower light than I do; for ſhe preſ-'ſed me violently to go to London with her, and 'when I refuſed to go without my father's conſent, 'ſhe laughed me to ſcorn, called me ſilly country 'girl, and ſaid I ſhould make a pure loving wife, 'ſince I could be ſo dutiful a daughter. So I have 'no doubt but ſhe will both receive me, and protect 'me too, till my father, finding me out of his power, 'can be brought to ſome reaſon.'

'Well but, Ma'am,' anſwered Honour, 'how 'doth your la'ſhip think of making your eſcape?

'Where will you get any horſes or conveyance? 'For as for your own horſe, as all the ſervants 'know a little how matters ſtand between my maſter 'and your la'ſhip, Robin will be hanged before he 'will ſuffer it to go out of the ſtable without my maſ'ter's expreſs orders.' 'I intend to eſcape,' ſaid Sophia, 'by walking out of the doors when they are 'open. I thank heaven my legs are very able to 'carry me. They have ſupported me many a long 'evening, after a fiddle, with no very agreeable part'ner; and ſurely they will aſſiſt me in running from 'ſo deteſtable a partner for life.' 'O heaven,' 'Ma'am, doth your ladyſhip know what you are ſay'ing?' cries Honour, 'would you think of walking 'about the country by night and alone?' 'Not 'alone,' anſwered the lady, 'you have promiſed to 'bear me company.' 'Yes to be ſure,' cries Ho'nour, 'I will follow your la'ſhip through the world; 'but your la'ſhip had almoſt as good be alone; 'for I ſhall not be able to defend you, if any rob'bers, or other villains, ſhould meet with you: 'Nay, I ſhould be in as horrible a fright as your 'la'ſhip; for to be certain, they would raviſh us 'both. Beſides, Ma'am, conſider, how cold the 'nights are now; we ſhall be frozen to death.' 'A 'good briſk pace,' anſwered Sophia, 'will preſerve 'us from the cold; and if you cannot defend me 'from a villain, Honour, I will defend you; for I 'will take a piſtol with me. There are two always 'charged in the hall.' 'Dear Ma'am you frighten 'me more and more,' cries Honour, 'ſure your 'la'ſhip would not venture to fire it off! I had ra'ther run any chance, than your la'ſhip ſhould do 'that.' 'Why ſo,' ſays Sophia, ſmiling; 'would 'not you, Honour, fire a piſtol at any one who ſhould 'attack your virtue?' 'To be ſure, Ma'am,' cries Honour, 'one's virtue is a dear thing, eſpecially 'to us poor ſervants; for it is our livelihood, as a 'body may ſay; yet I mortally hate fire arms; for 'ſo many accidents happen by them.' 'Well, well,' ſays Sophia, 'I believe I may enſure your virtue 'at a very cheap rate, without carrying any arms

'with

'with us; for I intend to take horſes at the very firſt 'town we come to, and we ſhall hardly be attacked 'in our way thither. Look'ee, Honour, I am re- 'ſolved to go, and if you will attend me, I promiſe 'you I will reward you to the very utmoſt of my 'power.'

This laſt argument had a ſtronger effect on Honour than all the preceding. And ſince ſhe ſaw her miſtreſs ſo determined, ſhe deſiſted from any further diſſuaſions. They then entered into a debate on ways and means of executing their project. Here a very ſtubborn difficulty occurred, and this was the removal of their effects, which was much more eaſily got over by the miſtreſs than by the maid: for when a lady hath once taken a reſolution to run to a lover, or to run from him, all obſtacles are conſidered as trifles. But Honour was inſpired by no ſuch motive; ſhe had no raptures to expect, nor any terrors to ſhun; and beſides the real value of her clothes, in which conſiſted a great part of her fortune, ſhe had a capricious fondneſs for ſeveral gowns, and other things; either becauſe they became her, or becauſe they were given her by ſuch a particular perſon; becauſe ſhe had bought them lately, or becauſe ſhe had had them long; or for ſome other reaſons equally good; ſo that ſhe could not endure the thoughts of leaving the poor things behind her expoſed to the mercy of Weſtern, who, ſhe doubted not, would in his rage make them ſuffer martyrdom.

The ingenious Mrs. Honour having applied all her oratory to diſſuade her miſtreſs from her purpoſe, when ſhe found her poſitively determined, at laſt ſtarted the following expedient to remove her clothes, viz. to get herſelf turned out of doors that very evening. Sophia highly approved this method, but doubted how it might be brought about. 'Oh! 'Ma'am,' cries Honour, 'your la'ſhip may truſt 'that to me: we ſervants very well know how to 'obtain this favour of our maſters and miſtreſſes; 'though ſometimes indeed, where they owe us more 'wages than they can readily pay, they will put up 'with all our affronts, and will hardly take any warn-

'ing we can give them; but the 'ſquire is none of 'thoſe; and ſince your la'ſhip is reſolved upon ſetting 'out to-night, I warrant I get diſcharged this after-'noon.' It was then reſolved that ſhe ſhould pack up ſome linen, and a night-gown for Sophia, with her own things; and as for all her other clothes, the young lady abandoned them with no more remorſe than the ſailor feels when he throws over the goods of others, in order to ſave his own life.

CHAP. VIII.

Containing ſcenes of altercation, of no very uncommon kind.

MRS. Honour had ſcarce ſooner parted from her young lady, than ſomething (for I would not, like the old woman in Quivedo, injure the devil by any falſe accuſation, and poſſibly he might have no hand in it) but ſomething, I ſay, ſuggeſted itſelf to her, that by ſacrificing Sophia and all her ſecrets to Mr. Weſtern, ſhe might probably make her fortune. Many conſiderations urged this diſcovery. The fair proſpect of a handſome reward for ſo great and acceptable a ſervice to the 'ſquire, tempted her avarice; and again, the danger of the enterprize ſhe had undertaken; the uncertainty of its ſucceſs; night, cold, robbers, raviſhers, all alarmed her fears. So forcibly did all theſe operate upon her, that ſhe was almoſt determined to go directly to the 'ſquire, and to lay open the whole affair. She was, however, too upright a judge to decree on one ſide, before ſhe had heard the other. And here, firſt a journey to London appeared very ſtrongly in ſupport of Sophia. She eagerly longed to ſee a place in which ſhe fancied charms ſhort only of thoſe which a raptured ſaint imagines in heaven. In the next place, as ſhe knew Sophia to have much more generoſity than her maſter; ſo her fidelity promiſed her a greater reward than ſhe could gain by treachery. She then croſs-examined all the articles which had raiſed her fears on the other ſide, and found, on fairly ſifting the matter, that there was very little

little in them. And now both ſcales being reduced to a pretty even balance, her love to her miſtreſs being thrown into the ſcale of her integrity, made that rather preponderate, when a circumſtance ſtruck upon her imagination, which might have had a dangerous effect, had its whole weight been fairly put into the other ſcale. This was the length of time which muſt intervene, before Sophia would be able to fulfil her promiſes; for though ſhe was intitled to her mother's fortune, at the death of her father, and to the ſum of 3000l. left her by an uncle when ſhe came of age; yet theſe were diſtant days, and many accidents might prevent the intended generoſity of the young lady; whereas the rewards ſhe might expect from Mr. Weſtern were immediate. But while ſhe was purſuing this thought, the good genius of Sophia, or that which preſided over the integrity of Mrs. Honour, or perhaps mere chance, ſent an accident in her way, which at once preſerved her fidelity, and even facilitated the intended buſineſs.

Mrs. Weſtern's maid claimed great ſuperiority over Mrs. Honour, on ſeveral accounts. Firſt, her birth was higher: for her great grandmother by the mother's ſide was a couſin, not far removed, to an Iriſh peer. Secondly, her wages were greater. And laſtly, ſhe had been at London, and had of conſequence ſeen more of the world. She had always behaved, therefore, to Mrs. Honour, with that reſerve, and had always exacted of her thoſe marks of diſtinction, which every order of females preſerves and requires in converſation with thoſe of an inferior order. Now as Honour did not at all times agree with this doctrine, but would frequently break in upon the reſpect which the other demanded, Mrs. Weſtern's maid was not at all pleaſed with her company: indeed, ſhe earneſtly longed to return home to the houſe of her miſtreſs, where ſhe domineered at will over all the other ſervants. She had been greatly, therefore, diſappointed in the morning, when Mrs. Weſtern had changed her mind on the very point of departure, and had been in what is vulgarly called a glouting humour ever ſince.

In this humour, which was none of the ſweeteſt, ſhe came into the room where Honour was debating with herſelf, in the manner we have above related. Honour no ſooner ſaw her, than ſhe addreſſed her in the following obliging phraſe. 'Soh! Madam, I find 'we are to have the pleaſure of your company longer, 'which I was afraid the quarrel between my maſter 'and your lady would have robbed us of.' 'I don't 'know, Madam,' anſwered the other, 'what you 'mean by we and us. I aſſure you I do not look on 'any of the ſervants in this houſe to be proper com- 'pany for me. I am company, I hope, for their 'betters every day in the week. I do not ſpeak on 'your account, Mrs. Honour; for you are a civilized 'young woman; and when you have ſeen a little more 'of the world, I ſhould not be aſhamed to walk with 'you in St. James's Park.' 'Hoity! toity!' cries Honour, 'Madam is in her airs, I proteſt. Mrs. Ho- 'nour, forſooth! ſure, Madam, you might call me 'by my ſir-name; for though my lady calls me Ho- 'nour, I have a ſir-name as well as other folks. 'Aſhamed to walk with me, quotha! marry, as good 'as yourſelf, I hope.' 'Since you make ſuch a re- 'turn to my civility,' ſaid the other, 'I muſt acquaint 'you, Mrs. Honour, that you are not ſo good as me. 'In the country indeed one is obliged to take up with 'all kind of trumpery; but in town I viſit none but 'the women of women of quality. Indeed, Mrs. Ho- 'nour, there is ſome difference, I hope, between you 'and me.' I hope ſo too,' anſwered Honour, 'there 'is ſome difference in our ages, and—I think in our 'perſons.' Upon ſpeaking which laſt words, ſhe ſtrutted by Mrs. Weſtern's maid with the moſt pro- voking air of contempt; turning up her noſe, toſſing her head, and violently bruſhing the hoop of her competitor with her own. The other lady put up one of her moſt malicious ſneers, and ſaid, 'Crea- 'ture! you are below my anger; and it is beneath 'me to give ill words to ſuch an audacious ſaucy 'trollop; but, huſſy, I muſt tell you, your breeding 'ſhews the meanneſs of your birth as well as of your 'education; and both very properly qualify you to

'be the mean ſerving woman of a country girl.' 'Don't abuſe my lady,' cries Honour, 'I won't take 'that of you; ſhe's as much better than yours as ſhe 'is younger, and ten thouſand times more hand-'ſomer.'

Here ill luck, or rather good luck, ſent Mrs. Weſtern to ſee her maid in tears, which began to flow plentifully at her approach; and of which being aſked the reaſon by her miſtreſs, ſhe preſently acquainted her, that her tears were occaſioned by the rude treatment of that creature there, meaning Honour. 'And, Madam,' continued ſhe, 'I could 'have deſpiſed all ſhe ſaid to me; but ſhe hath had 'the audacity to affront your ladyſhip, and to call 'you ugly——Yes, Madam, ſhe called you ugly old 'cat, to my face. I could not bear to hear your 'ladyſhip called ugly.'—'Why do you repeat her 'impudence ſo often?' ſaid Mrs. Weſtern. And then turning to Mrs. Honour, ſhe aſked her, 'how ſhe 'had the aſſurance to mention her name with diſre-'ſpect?' 'Diſreſpect, Madam!' anſwered Honour, 'I never mentioned your name at all; I ſaid ſome-'body was not as handſome as my miſtreſs, and to be 'ſure you know that as well as I.' 'Huſſy,' replied the lady, 'I will make ſuch a ſaucy trollop as 'yourſelf know that I am not a proper ſubject of 'your diſcourſe. And if my brother does not diſ-'charge you this moment, I will never ſleep in his 'houſe again. I will find him out, and have you 'diſcharged this moment.' 'Diſcharged!' cries Honour, 'and ſuppoſe I am; there are more places in 'the world than one. Thank heaven, good ſervants 'need not want places; and if you turn away all who 'do not think you handſome, you will want ſervants 'very ſoon; let me tell you that.'

Mrs. Weſtern ſpoke, or rather thundered, in anſwer; but as ſhe was hardly articulate, we cannot be very certain of the identical words; we ſhall therefore omit inſerting a ſpeech, which, at beſt, would not greatly redound to her honour. She then departed in ſearch of her brother, with a countenance ſo full of

rage, that ſhe reſembled one of the furies rather than a human creature.

The two chambermaids being again left alone, began a ſecond bout at altercation, which ſoon produced a combat of a more active kind. In this the victory belonged to the lady of inferior rank, but not without ſome loſs of blood, of hair, and of lawn and muſlin.

CHAP XI.

The wiſe demeanour of Mr. Weſtern in the character of a magiſtrate. A hint to juſtices of peace, concerning the neceſſary qualifications of a clerk; with extraordinary inſtances of paternal madneſs, and filial affection.

LOgicians ſometimes prove too much by an argument, and politicians often over-reach themſelves in a ſcheme. Thus had it like to have happened to Mrs. Honour, who inſtead of recovering the reſt of her clothes, had like to have ſtopped even thoſe ſhe had on her back from eſcaping; for the 'ſquire no ſooner heard of her having abuſed his ſiſter, than he ſwore twenty oaths he would ſend her to Bridewell.

Mrs. Weſtern was a very good natured woman, and ordinarily of a forgiving temper. She had lately remitted the treſpaſs of a ſtage-coachman, who had overturned her poſt chaiſe into a ditch; nay, ſhe had even broken the law in refuſing to proſecute a highwayman who had robbed her, not only of a ſum of money, but of her ear-rings; at the ſame time d—ning her, and ſaying, 'ſuch handſome b—s as you, don't want 'jewels to ſet them off, and be d—ned to you.' But now, ſo uncertain are our tempers, and ſo much do we at different times differ from ourſelves, ſhe would hear of no mitigation; nor could all the affected penitence of Honour, nor all the entreaties of Sophia for her own ſervant, prevail with her to deſiſt from earneſtly deſiring her brother to execute juſticeſhip (for it was indeed a ſyllable more than juſtice) on the wench.

But luckily the clerk had a qualification, which no clerk to a juſtice of Peace ought ever to be without, namely,

namely, ſome underſtanding in the law of this realm. He therefore whiſpered in the ear of the juſtice, that he would exceed his authority by committing the girl to Bridewell, as there had been no attempt to break the peace; 'for I am afraid, Sir,' ſays he, 'you can-'not legally commit any one to Bridewell only for 'ill-breeding.'

In matters of high importance, particularly in caſes relating to the game, the juſtice was not always attentive to theſe admonitions of his clerk: for, indeed, in executing the laws under that head, many juſtices of peace ſuppoſe they have a large diſcretionary power. By virtue of which, under the notion of ſearching for, and taking away engines for the deſtruction of the game, they often commit treſpaſſes, and ſometimes felony, at their pleaſure.

But this offence was not of quite ſo high a nature, nor ſo dangerous to the ſociety. Here, therefore, the juſtice behaved with ſome attention to the advice of his clerk: for, in fact, he had already had two informations exhibited againſt him in the King's-bench, and had no curioſity to try a third.

The 'ſquire, therefore, putting on a moſt wiſe and ſignificant countenance, after a preface of ſeveral hum's and ha's, told his ſiſter, that upon more mature deliberation, he was of opinion that 'as there was no 'breaking up of the peace, ſuch as the law,' ſays he, 'calls breaking open a door, or breaking a hedge, or 'breaking a head; or any ſuch ſort of breaking; the 'matter did not amount to a felonious kind of a 'thing, nor treſpaſſes nor damages, and, therefore, 'there was no puniſhment in the law for it.'

Mrs. Weſtern ſaid, 'She knew the law much bet-'ter; that ſhe had known ſervants very ſeverely pu-'niſhed for affronting their maſters;' and then named a certain juſtice of the peace in London, 'who, ſhe ſaid, 'would commit a ſervant to Bridewell, at any 'time when a maſter or miſtreſs deſired it.'

'Like enough,' cries the 'ſquire, 'it may be ſo in 'London; but the law is different in the country.' Here followed a very learned diſpute between the brother and ſiſter concerning the law, which we would

inſert, if we imagined many of our readers could underſtand it. This was, however, at length referred by both parties to the clerk, who decided it in favour of the magiſtrate; and Mrs. Weſtern was, in the end, obliged to content herſelf with the ſatisfaction of having Honour turned away; to which Sophia herſelf very readily and chearfully conſented.

Thus fortune, after having diverted herſelf, according to cuſtom, with two or three frolicks, at laſt diſpoſed all matters to the advantage of our heroine; who indeed ſucceeded admirably well in her deceit, conſidering it was the firſt ſhe had ever practiſed. And, to ſay the truth, I have often concluded, that the honeſt part of mankind would be much too hard for the knaviſh, if they could bring themſelves to incur the guilt, or thought it worth their while to take the trouble.

Honour acted her part to the utmoſt perfection. She no ſooner ſaw herſelf ſecure from all danger of Bridewell, a word which had raiſed moſt horrible ideas in her mind, than ſhe reſumed thoſe airs which her terrors before had a little abated; and laid down her place, with as much affectation of content, and indeed of contempt, as was ever practiſed at the reſignation of places of much greater importance. If the reader pleaſes, therefore, we chuſe rather to ſay ſhe reſigned —which hath, indeed, been always held a ſynonymous expreſſion with being turned out, or turned away.

Mr. Weſtern ordered her to be very expeditious in packing: for his ſiſter declared ſhe would not ſleep another night under the ſame roof with ſo impudent a ſlut. To work therefore ſhe went, and that ſo earneſtly, that every thing was ready early in the evening; when having received her wages, away packed ſhe bag and baggage, to the great ſatisfaction of every one, but of none more than of Sophia; who, having appointed her maid to meet her at a certain place not far from the houſe, exactly at the dreadful and ghoſtly hour of twelve, began to prepare for her own departure.

But

But first she was obliged to give two painful audiences, the one to her aunt, and the other to her father. In these Mrs. Western herself began to talk to her in a more peremptory stile than before; but her father treated her in so violent and outrageous a manner, that he frightened her into an affected compliance with his will, which so highly pleased the good 'squire, that he changed his frowns into smiles, and his menaces into promises; he vowed his whole soul was wrapped in her's, that her consent (for so he construed the words, 'You know, Sir, I must not, nor 'can refuse to obey any absolute command of yours,') had made him the happiest of mankind. He then gave her a large bank-bill to dispose of in any trinkets she pleased, and kissed and embraced her in the fondest manner, while tears of joy trickled from those eyes, which a few moments before had darted fire and rage against the dear object of all his affection.

Instances of this behaviour in parents are so common, that the reader, I doubt not, will be very little astonished at the whole conduct of Mr. Western. If he should, I own I am not able to account for it; since that he loved his daughter most tenderly, is, I think, beyond dispute. So indeed have many others, who have rendered their children most compleatly miserable by the same conduct; which, though it is almost universal in parents, hath always appeared to me to be the most unaccountable of all the absurdities which ever entered into the brain of that strange prodigious creature man.

The latter part of Mr. Western's behaviour had so strong an effect on the tender heart of Sophia, that it suggested a thought to her, which not all the sophistry of her politic aunt, nor all the menaces of her father, had ever once brought into her head. She reverenced her father so piously, and loved him so passionately, that she had scarce ever felt more pleasing sensations, than what arose from the share she frequently had of contributing to his amusement, and sometimes, perhaps, to higher gratifications; for he never could contain the delight of hearing her commended, which he had the satisfaction of hearing almost every day of her

life

life. The idea, therefore, of the immenſe happineſs ſhe ſhould convey to her father by her conſent to this match, made a ſtrong impreſſion on her mind. Again, the extreme piety of ſuch an act of obedience worked very forcibly, as ſhe had a very deep ſenſe of religion. Laſtly, when ſhe reflected how much ſhe herſelf was to ſuffer, being indeed to become little leſs than a ſacrifice, or a martyr, to filial love and duty, ſhe felt an agreeable tickling in a certain little paſſion, which, though it bears no immediate affinity either to religion or virtue, is often ſo kind as to lend great aſſiſtance in executing the purpoſes of both.

Sophia was charmed with the contemplation of ſo heroic an action, and began to compliment herſelf with much premature flattery, when Cupid, who lay hid in her muff, ſuddenly crept out, and, like Punchinello in a puppet-ſhew, kicked all out before him. In truth (for we ſcorn to deceive our reader, or to vindicate the character of our heroine, by aſcribing her actions to ſupernatural impulſe) the thoughts of her beloved Jones, and ſome hopes, (however diſtant) in which he was very particularly concerned, immediately deſtroyed all which filial love, piety, and pride had, with their joint endeavours, been labouring to bring about.

But before we proceed any farther with Sophia, we muſt now look back to Mr. Jones.

CHAP. X.

Containing ſeveral matters, natural enough, perhaps, but Low.

THE reader will be pleaſed to remember, that we left Mr. Jones in the beginning of this book, on his road to Briſtol; being determined to ſeek his fortune at ſea; or rather, indeed, to fly away from his fortune on ſhore.

It happened, (a thing not very unuſual) that the guide who undertook to conduct him on his way, was unluckily unacquainted with the road; ſo that having miſſed his right track, and being aſhamed to aſk information,

mation, he rambled about backwards and forwards till night came on and it began to grow dark. Jones, ſuſpecting what had happened, acquainted the guide with his apprehenſions; but he inſiſted on it, that they were in the right road, and added, it would be very ſtrange if he ſhould not know the road to Briſtol; though, in reality, it would have been much ſtranger if he had known it, having never paſt through it in his life before.

Jones had not ſuch implicit faith in his guide, but that on their arrival at a village he enquired of the firſt fellow he ſaw, whether they were in the road to Briſtol. 'Whence did you come?' cries the fellow. 'No 'matter,' ſays Jones, a little haſtily, 'I want to know 'if this be the road to Briſtol.' 'The road to Briſ-'tol!' cries the fellow, ſcratching his head, 'Why, 'maſter, I believe you will hardly get to Briſtol this 'way to-night.' 'Prithee, friend, then,' anſwered Jones, 'do tell us which is the way.'—'Why, 'Meaſter,' cries the fellow, 'you muſt be come out 'of your road the Lord knows whither: for thick 'way goeth to Gloceſter.' 'Well, and which way 'goes to Briſtol?' ſaid Jones. 'Why, you be going 'away from Briſtol,' anſwered the fellow—'Then, ſaid Jones, 'we muſt go back again.' 'Ay, you 'muſt,' ſaid the fellow. 'Well, and when we come 'back to the top of the hill, which way muſt we 'take?' 'Why you muſt keep the ſtrait road.' 'But 'I remember there are two roads, one to the right 'and the other to the left.' 'Why you muſt keep the 'right hand road, and then gu ſtrait vorwards; only 'remember to turn firſt to your right, and then to 'your left again, and then to your right; and that 'brings you to the 'ſquire's, and then you muſt keep 'ſtrait vorwards, and turn to the left.'

Another fellow now came up, and aſked which way the gentlemen were going?—of which being informed by Jones, he firſt ſcratched his head, and then leaning upon a pole he had in his hand, began to tell him, 'That he muſt keep the right-hand road for about a 'mile, or a mile and half, or ſuch a matter, and then 'he muſt turn ſhort to the left, which would bring

'him

'him round by Meaſter Jin Bearnes's.' 'But which is 'Mr. John Bearnes's?' ſays Jones. 'O Lord,' cries the fellow, 'why don't you know Meaſter Jin Bearnes? 'Whence did you come?'

Theſe two fellows had almoſt conquered the patience of Jones, when a plain well looking man (who was indeed a quaker) accoſted him thus; 'Friend, I 'perceive thou haſt loſt thy way; and if thou wilt 'take my advice, thou wilt not attempt to find it to-'night. It is almoſt dark, and the road is difficult to 'hit; beſides, there have been ſeveral robberies com-'mitted lately between this and Briſtol. Here is a 'very creditable good houſe juſt by, where thou may'ſt 'find good entertainment for thyſelf and thy cattle 'till morning.' Jones, after a little perſuaſion, agreed to ſtay in this place 'till the morning, and was conducted by his friend to the public houſe.

The landlord, who was a very civil fellow, told Jones, 'he hoped he would excuſe the badneſs of his 'accommodation: for that his wife was gone from 'home, and had locked up almoſt every thing, and 'carried the keys along with her.' Indeed, the fact was, that a favourite daughter of hers was juſt married, and gone, that morning, home with her huſband; and that ſhe and her mother together, had almoſt ſtript the poor man of all his goods, as well as money: for though he had ſeveral children, this daughter only, who was the mother's favourite, was the object of her conſideration; and to the humour of this one child ſhe would, with pleaſure, have ſacrificed all the reſt, and her huſband into the bargain.

Though Jones was very unfit for any kind of company, and would have preferred being alone; yet he could not reſiſt the importunities of the honeſt quaker; who was the more deſirous of ſitting with him, from having remarked the melancholy which appeared both in his countenance and behaviour; and which the poor quaker thought his converſation might in ſome meaſure relieve.

After they had paſt ſome time together, in ſuch a manner that my honeſt friend might have thought himſelf at one of his ſilent meetings, the quaker began

to

to be moved by ſome ſpirit or other, probably that of curioſity; and ſaid, 'Friend, I perceive ſome ſad diſaſter hath befallen thee; but pray be of comfort. Perhaps thou haſt loſt a friend. If ſo, thou muſt conſider we are all mortal. And why ſhouldſt thou grieve, when thou knoweſt thy grief will do thy friend no good? We are all born to affliction. I myſelf have my ſorrows as well as thee, and moſt probably greater ſorrows. Though I have a clear eſtate of 100l. a year, which is as much as I want, and I have a conſcience, I thank the Lord, void of offence. My conſtitution is ſound and ſtrong, and there is no man can demand a debt of me, nor accuſe me of an injury—yet, friend, I ſhould be concerned to think thee as miſerable as myſelf.'

Here the quaker ended with a deep ſigh; and Jones preſently anſwered, 'I am very ſorry, Sir, for your unhappineſs, whatever is the occaſion of it.' 'Ah! friend,' replied the quaker, 'one only daughter is the occaſion. One who was my greateſt delight upon earth, and who within this week is run away from me, and is married againſt my conſent. I had provided her a proper match, a ſober man, and one of ſubſtance; but ſhe, forſooth, would chuſe for herſelf, and away ſhe is gone with a young fellow not worth a groat. If ſhe had been dead, as I ſuppoſe thy friend is, I ſhould have been happy!' 'That is very ſtrange, Sir,' ſaid Jones. 'Why, would it not be better for her to be dead, than to be a beggar?' replied the quaker: 'for, as I told you, the fellow is not worth a groat; and ſurely ſhe cannot expect that I ſhall ever give her a ſhilling. No, as ſhe hath married for love, let her live on love if ſhe can; let her carry her love to market, and ſee whether any one will change it into ſilver, or even into halfpence.' 'You know your own concerns beſt, Sir,' ſaid Jones. 'It muſt have been,' continued the quaker, 'a long premeditated ſcheme to cheat me: for they have known one another from their infancy; and I always preached to her againſt love—and told her a thouſand times over it was all folly and wickedneſs. Nay, the cunning ſlut pretended to hearken

'to me, and to deſpiſe all wantonneſs of the fleſh; 'and yet, at laſt, broke out at the window two pair 'of ſtairs: for I began, indeed, a little to ſuſpect 'her, and had locked her up carefully, intending the 'very next morning to have married her up to my 'liking. But ſhe diſappointed me within a few hours, 'and eſcaped away to the lover of her own chuſing, 'who loſt no time; for they were married and bed-'ded, and all within an hour.

'But it ſhall be the worſt hour's work for them 'both that ever they did; for they may ſtarve, or 'beg, or ſteal together for me. I will never give 'either of them a farthing.' Here Jones ſtarting up, cry'd, 'I really muſt be excuſed: I wiſh you would 'leave me.' 'Come, come, friend,' ſaid the 'quaker, 'don't give way to concern. You ſee there 'are other people miſerable, beſides yourſelf.' 'I ſee 'there are madmen and fools and villains in the 'world,' cries Jones—'But let me give you a piece 'of advice; ſend for your daughter and ſon-in-law 'home, and don't be yourſelf the only cauſe of mi-'ſery to one you pretend to love.' 'Send for her 'and her huſband home!' cries the quaker loudly, 'I would ſooner ſend for the two greateſt enemies I 'have in the world!' 'Well, go home yourſelf; 'or where you pleaſe,' ſaid Jones: 'for I will ſet no 'longer in ſuch company.'—'Nay, friend,' an-ſwered the quaker, 'I ſcorn to impoſe my company 'on any one.' He then offered to pull money from his pocket, but Jones puſhed him with ſome violence out of the room.

The ſubject of the quaker's diſcourſe had ſo deeply affected Jones, that he ſtared very wildly all the time he was ſpeaking. This the quaker had obſerved, and this, added to the reſt of his behaviour, inſpired honeſt Broadbrim with a conceit, that his companion was, in reality, out of his ſenſes. Inſtead of reſenting the affront, therefore, the quaker was moved with compaſſion for his unhappy circumſtances; and having communicated his opinion to the landlord, he deſired him to take great care of his gueſt, and to treat him with the higheſt civility.

'Indeed,'

'Indeed,' ſays the landlord, 'I ſhall uſe no ſuch ci-
'vility towards him: for it ſeems, for all his laced
'waiſt-coat there, he is no more a gentleman than
'myſelf; but a poor pariſh baſtard bred up at a great
''ſquire's about thirty miles off, and now turned out
'of doors, (not for any good to be ſure.) I ſhall get
'him out of my houſe as ſoon as poſſible. If I do
'loſe my reckoning, the firſt loſs is always the beſt.
'It is not above a year ago that I loſt a ſilver-ſpoon.'

'What doſt thou talk of a pariſh baſtard, Robin?' anſwered the quaker. 'Thou muſt certainly be miſ-
'taken in thy man.'

'Not at all,' replied Robin, 'the guide, who
'knows him very well, told it me.' For, indeed, the guide had no ſooner taken his place at the kitchen fire, than he acquainted the whole company with all he knew, or had ever heard concerning Jones.

The quaker was no ſooner aſſured by this fellow of the birth and low fortune of Jones, than all compaſſion for him vaniſhed; and the honeſt, plain man went home fired with no leſs indignation than a duke would have felt at receiving an affront from ſuch a perſon.

The landlord himſelf conceived an equal diſdain for his gueſt; ſo that when Jones rung the bell in order to retire to bed, he was acquainted that he could have no bed there.—Beſides diſdain of the mean condition of his gueſt, Robert entertained violent ſuſpicion of his intentions, which were, he ſuppoſed, to watch ſome favourable opportunity of robbing the houſe. In reality, he might have been very well eaſed of theſe apprehenſions by the prudent precautions of his wife and daughter, who had already removed every thing which was not fixed to the freehold; but he was by nature ſuſpicious, and had been more particularly ſo ſince the loſs of his ſpoon. In ſhort, the dread of being robbed totally abſorbed the comfortable conſideration that he had nothing to loſe.

Jones being aſſured that he could have no bed, very contentedly betook himſelf to a great chair made with ruſhes, when ſleep, which had lately ſhunned his com-

pany

pany in much better apartments, generouſly paid him a viſit in his humble cell.

As for the landlord, he was prevented by his fears from retiring to reſt. He returned therefore to the kitchen fire, whence he could ſurvey the only door which opened into the parlour, or rather hole, where Jones was ſeated; and as for the window to that room, it was impoſſible for any creature larger than a cat to have made his eſcape through it.

CHAP. XI.

The adventure of a company of ſoldiers.

THE landlord having taken his ſeat directly oppoſite to the door of the parlour, determined to keep guard there the whole night. The guide and another fellow remained long on duty with him, though they neither knew his ſuſpicions, nor had any of their own. The true cauſe of their watching did indeed, at length, put an end to it; for this was no other than the ſtrength and goodneſs of the beer, of which having tippled a very large quantity, they grew at firſt very noiſy and vociferous, and afterwards fell both aſleep.

But it was not in the power of liquor to compoſe the fears of Robin. He continued ſtill waking in his chair, with his eyes fixed ſtedfaſtly on the door which led into the apartment of Mr. Jones, till a violent thundering at his outward gate called him from his ſeat, and obliged him to open it; which he had no ſooner done, than his kitchen was immediately full of gentlemen in red coats, who all ruſhed upon him in as tumultuous a manner, as if they intended to take his little caſtle by ſtorm.

The landlord was now forced from his poſt to furniſh his numerous gueſts with beer, which they called for with great eagerneſs; and upon his ſecond or third return from the cellar, he ſaw Mr. Jones ſtanding before the fire in the midſt of the ſoldiers; for it may eaſily be believed, that the arrival of ſo much good company ſhould put an end to any ſleep, unleſs that

that from which we are to be awakened only by the laſt trumpet.

The company having now pretty well ſatisfied their thirſt, nothing remained but to pay the reckoning, a circumſtance often productive of much miſchief and diſcontent among the inferior rank of gentry; who are apt to find great difficulty in aſſeſſing the ſum, with exact regard to diſtributive juſtice, which directs, that every man ſhall pay according to the quantity which he drinks. This difficulty occurred upon the preſent occaſion; and it was the greater, as ſome gentlemen had, in their extreme hurry, marched off, after their firſt draught, and had entirely forgot to contribute any thing towards the ſaid reckoning.

A violent diſpute now aroſe, in which every word may be ſaid to have been depoſed upon oath; for the oaths were at leaſt equal to all the other words ſpoken. In this controverſy, the whole company ſpoke together, and every man ſeemed wholly bent to extenuate the ſum which fell to his ſhare; ſo that the moſt probable concluſion which could be foreſeen, was, that a large portion of the reckoning would fall to the landlord's ſhare to pay, or (what is much the ſame thing) would remain unpaid.

All this while Mr. Jones was engaged in converſation with the ſerjeant; for that officer was entirely unconcerned in the preſent diſpute, being privileged, by immemorial cuſtom, from all contribution.

The diſpute now grew ſo very warm, that it ſeemed to draw towards a military deciſion, when Jones ſtepping forward, ſilenced all their clamours at once, by declaring that he would pay the whole reckoning, which indeed amounted to no more than three ſhillings and four-pence.

This declaration procured Jones the thanks and applauſe of the whole company. The terms honourable, noble, and worthy gentleman, reſounded thro' the room; nay, my landlord himſelf began to have a better opinion of him, and almoſt to diſbelieve the account which the guide had given.

The ſerjeant had informed Mr. Jones, that they were marching againſt the rebels, and expected to be commanded

commanded by the glorious Duke of Cumberland. By which the reader may perceive (a circumſtance which we have not thought neceſſary to communicate before) that this was the very time when the late rebellion was at the higheſt; and indeed the banditti were now marched into England, intending, as it was thought, to fight the king's forces, and to attempt puſhing forward to the metropolis.

Jones had ſome heroic ingredients in his compoſition, and was a hearty well-wiſher to the glorious cauſe of liberty, and of the proteſtant religion. It is no wonder, therefore, that in circumſtances which would have warranted a much more romantic and wild undertaking, it ſhould occur to him to ſerve as a volunteer in this expedition.

Our commanding officer had ſaid all in his power to encourage and promote this good diſpoſition, from the firſt moment he had been acquainted with it. He now proclaimed the noble reſolution aloud, which was received with great pleaſure by the whole company, who all cried out, 'God bleſs king George, 'and your honour;' and then added with many oaths, 'We will ſtand by you both to the laſt drops 'of our blood.'

The gentleman, who had been all night tippling at the alehouſe, was prevailed on by ſome arguments which a corporal had put into his hand, to undertake the ſame expedition. And now the portmanteau belonging to Mr. Jones being put up into the baggage-cart, the forces were about to move forwards; when the guide ſtepping up to Jones, ſaid, 'Sir, I hope 'you will conſider that the horſes have been kept out 'all night, and we have travelled a great ways out 'of our way.' Jones was ſurprized at the impudence of this demand, and acquainted the ſoldiers with the merits of his cauſe, who were all unanimous in condemning the guide for his endeavours to put upon a gentleman. Some ſaid he ought to be tied neck and heels; others, that he deſerved to run the gantlope; and the ſerjeant ſhook his cane at him, and wiſhed he had him under his command, ſwearing heartily he would make an example of him.

Jones

Jones contented himſelf, however, with a negative puniſhment, and walked off with his new comrades, leaving the guide to the poor revenge of curſing and reviling him, in which latter the landlord joined, ſaying, 'Ay, ay, he is a pure one, I warrant you. A 'pretty gentleman, indeed, to go for a ſoldier. He 'ſhall wear a laced waiſtcoat truly. It is an old pro-'verb and a true one, all is not gold that gliſters. I 'am glad my houſe is well rid of him.'

All that day the ſerjeant and the young ſoldier marched together; and the former, who was an arch fellow, told the latter many entertaining ſtories of his campaigns, though in reality he had never made any; for he was but lately come into the ſervice, and had, by his own dexterity, ſo well ingratiated himſelf with his officers, that he had promoted himſelf to a halberd; chiefly indeed by his merit in recruiting, in which he was moſt excellently well ſkilled.

Much mirth and feſtivity paſſed among the ſoldiers during their march: In which the many occurrences that had paſſed at their laſt quarters were remembered, and every one, with great freedom, made what jokes he pleaſed on his officers, ſome of which were of the coarſer kind, and very near bordering on ſcandal. This brought to our hero's mind the cuſtom which he had read of among the Greeks and Romans, of indulging, on certain feſtivals and ſolemn occaſions, the liberty to ſlaves, of uſing an uncontrouled freedom of ſpeech towards their maſters.

Our little army, which conſiſted of two companies of foot, were now arrived at the place where they were to halt that evening. The ſerjeant then acquainted the lieutenant, who was the commanding officer, that they had picked up two fellows in that day's march; one of which, he ſaid, was as fine a man as ever he ſaw (meaning the tippler) for that he was near ſix feet, well proportioned, and ſtrongly limbed; and the other, (meaning Jones,) would do well enough for the rear rank.

The new ſoldiers were now produced before the officer, who having examined the ſix feet man, he being firſt produced, came next to ſurvey Jones; at the firſt ſight of whom, the lieutenant could not help

ſhewing ſome ſurprize; for, beſides that he was very well dreſſed, and was naturally genteel, he had a remarkable air of dignity in his look, which is rarely ſeen among the vulgar, and is indeed not inſeparably annexed to the features of their ſuperiors.

'Sir,' ſaid the lieutenant, 'my ſerjeant informed 'me, that you are deſirous of enliſting into the com-'pany I have at preſent under my command; if ſo, 'Sir, we ſhall very gladly receive a gentleman who 'promiſes to do much honour to the company, by 'bearing arms in it.

Jones anſwered: 'That he had not mentioned any 'thing of enliſting himſelf; that he was moſt zealouſly 'attached to the glorious cauſe for which they were 'going to fight, and was very deſirous of ſerving 'as a volunteer;' concluding with ſome compliments to the lieutenant, and expreſſing the great ſatisfaction he ſhould have in being under his command.

The lieutenant returned his civility, commended his reſolution, ſhook him by the hand, and invited him to dine with himſelf and the reſt of the officers.

CHAP. XII.

The adventure of a company of officers.

THE lieutenant, whom we mentioned in the preceding chapter, and who commanded this party, was now near ſixty years of age. He had entered very young into the army, and had ſerved in the capacity of an enſign in the battle of Tannieres; here he had received two wounds, and had ſo well diſtinguiſhed himſelf, that he was by the duke of Marlborough advanced to be a lieutenant, immediately after that battle.

In this commiſſion he had continued ever ſince, viz. near forty years; during which time he had ſeen vaſt numbers preferred over his head, and had now the mortification to be commanded by boys, whoſe fathers were at nurſe when he firſt entered into the ſervice.

Nor

Nor was this ill ſucceſs in his profeſſion ſolely owing to his having no friends among the men in power. He had the misfortune to incur the diſpleaſure of his colonel, who for many years continued in the command of this regiment. Nor did he owe the implacable ill-will which this man bore him, to any neglect or deficiency as an officer, nor indeed to any fault in himſelf; but ſolely to the indiſcretion of his wife, who was a very beautiful woman, and who, though ſhe was remarkably fond of her huſband, would not purchaſe his preferment at the expence of certain favours which the colonel required of her.

The poor lieutenant was more peculiarly unhappy in this, that while he felt the effects of the enmity of his colonel, he neither knew, nor ſuſpected, that he really bore him any; for he could not ſuſpect an ill-will for which he was not conſcious of giving any cauſe; and his wife, fearing what her huſband's nice regard to his honour might have occaſioned, contented herſelf with preſerving her virtue, without enjoying the triumphs of her conqueſt.

This unfortunate officer (for ſo I think he may be called) had many good qualities, beſides his merit in his profeſſion; for he was a religious, honeſt, good-natured man; and had behaved ſo well in his command, that he was highly eſteemed and beloved, not only by the ſoldiers of his own company, but by the whole regiment.

The other officers who marched with him were a French lieutenant, who had been long enough out of France to forget his own language, but not long enough in England to learn ours, ſo that he really ſpoke no language at all, and could barely make himſelf underſtood, on the moſt ordinary occaſions. There were likewiſe two enſigns, both very young fellows; one of whom had been bred under an attorney, and the other was ſon to the wife of a nobleman's butler.

As ſoon as dinner was ended, Jones informed the company of the merriment which had paſſed among the ſoldiers upon their march; 'and yet,' ſays he, 'notwithſtanding all their vociferation, I dare ſwear

'they will behave more like Grecians than Trojans 'when they come to the enemy.' 'Grecians and 'Trojans!' ſays one of the enſigns, 'who the devil 'are they? I have heard of all the troops in Europe, 'but never of any ſuch as theſe.'

'Don't pretend to more ignorance that you have, 'Mr. Northerton,' ſaid the worthy lieutenant, 'I 'ſuppoſe you have heard of the Greeks and Trojans, 'though, perhaps, you never read Pope's Homer; 'who, I remember, now the gentleman mentions it, 'compares the march of the Trojans to the cackling 'of geeſe, and greatly commends the ſilence of the 'Grecians. And upon my honour, there is great 'juſtice in the cadet's obſervation.'

'Begar, me remember dem very well,' ſaid the French lieutenant, 'me ave read dem at ſchool in 'dans Madam Daciere, des Greek, des Trojan, dey 'fight for von woman,—ouy, ouy, me ave read all 'dat.'

'D—n Homo with all; with all my heart,' ſays Northerton, 'I have the marks of him in my a— yet. 'There's Thomas of our regiment, always carries a 'Homo in his pocket: d—n me if ever I come at it, 'if I don't burn it. And there's Cordérius, another 'd—n'd ſon of a whore that has got me many a 'flogging.'

'Then you have been at ſchool, Mr. Northerton?' ſaid the lieutenant.

'Ay d—n me, have I,' anſwered he, 'the devil 'take my father for ſending me thither. The old 'put wanted to make a parſon of me, but d—n me, 'thinks I to myſelf, I'll nick you there, old cull: 'the devil a ſmack of your nonſenſe, ſhall you ever 'get into me. There's Jemmy Oliver of our regi-'ment, he narrowly eſcaped being a pimp too; and 'that would have been a thouſand pities: for d—n 'me if he is not one of the prettieſt fellows in the 'whole world; but he went farther than I with 'the old cull: for Jemmy can neither write nor 'read.

'You give your friend a very good character,' ſaid the lieutenant, 'and a very deſerved one, I dare ſay; 'but

'but prithee, Northerton, leave off that fooliſh as 'well as wicked cuſtom of ſwearing: for you are de-'ceived, I promiſe you, if you think there is wit or 'politeneſs in it. I wiſh too, you would take my ad-'vice, and deſiſt from abuſing the clergy. Scanda-'lous names and reflections caſt on any body of men, 'muſt be always unjuſtifiable; but eſpecially ſo, when 'thrown on ſo ſacred a function: for to abuſe the 'body is to abuſe the function itſelf; and I leave 'you to judge how inconſiſtent ſuch behaviour is in 'men, who are going to fight in defence of the pro-'teſtant religion.'

Mr. Adderly, which was the name of the other enſign, had ſat hitherto kicking his heels and humming a tune, without ſeeming to liſten to the diſcourſe; he now anſwered, '*O Monſieur, on ne parle pus de la* '*Religion dans la Guerre.*' 'Well ſaid, Jack,' cries Northerton, if la religion was the only matter, the 'parſons ſhould fight their own battles for me.'

'I don't know, gentlemen,' ſays Jones, 'what 'may be your opinion; but I think no man can en-'gage in a nobler cauſe than that of his religion; 'and I have obſerved in the little I have read of hiſ-'tory, that no ſoldiers have fought ſo bravely, as 'thoſe who have been inſpired with a religious zeal: 'for my own part, though I love my king and coun-'try, I hope, as well as any man in it; yet the pro-'teſtant intereſt is no ſmall motive to my becoming a 'volunteer in the cauſe.'

Northerton now winked on Adderly, and whiſpered to him ſlily, 'Smoke the prig, Adderly, ſmoke 'him.' Then turning to Jones, ſaid to him, 'I am 'very glad, Sir, you have choſen our regiment to be 'a volunteer in; for if our parſon ſhould at any time 'take a cup too much, I find you can ſupply his 'place. I preſume, Sir, you have been at the univer-'ſity; may I crave the favour to know what college?'

'Sir,' anſwered Jones, 'ſo far from having been 'at the univerſity, I have even had the advantage of 'yourſelf; for I was never at ſchool.'

'I preſumed,' cries the enſign, 'only upon the 'information of your great learning.'—'Oh! Sir,'

anſwered Jones, 'it is as poſſible for a man to know 'ſomething without having been at ſchool, as it is to 'have been at ſchool and to know nothing.'

'Well ſaid, young volunteer,' cries the lieutenant, 'upon my word, Northerton, you had better let him 'alone; for he will be too hard for you.'

Northerton did not very well reliſh the ſarcaſm of Jones, but he thought the provocation was ſcarce ſufficient to juſtify a blow, or a raſcal, or ſcoundrel, which were the only repartees that ſuggeſted themſelves. He was, therefore, ſilent at preſent; but reſolved to take the firſt opportunity of returning the jeſt by abuſe.

It now came to the turn of Mr. Jones to give a toaſt, as it is called; who could not refrain from mentioning his dear Sophia. This he did the more readily, as he imagined it utterly impoſſible, that any one preſent ſhould gueſs the perſon he meant.

But the lieutenant, who was the toaſt-maſter, was not contented with Sophia only. He ſaid he muſt have her ſir-name; upon which Jones heſitated a little, and preſently after named Miſs Sophia Weſtern. Enſign Northerton declared he would not drink her health in the ſame round with his own toaſt, unleſs ſomebody would vouch for her. 'I knew one 'Sophy Weſtern,' ſays he, 'that was lain-with by 'half the young fellows at Bath; and, perhaps, this 'is the ſame woman.' Jones very ſolemnly aſſured him of the contrary; aſſerting that the young lady he named was one of great faſhion and fortune. 'Ay, 'ay,' ſays the enſign, 'and ſo ſhe is; d—n me, it is 'the ſame woman; and I'll hold half a dozen of 'Burgundy, Tom French of our regiment brings 'her into company with us at any tavern in Bridge's 'Street.' He then proceeded to deſcribe her perſon exactly, (for he had ſeen her with her aunt) and concluded with ſaying, 'That her father had a great 'eſtate in Somerſetſhire.'

The tenderneſs of lovers can ill brook the leaſt jeſting with the names of their miſtreſſes. However, Jones, though he had enough of the lover and of the hero

hero too in his diſpoſition, did not reſent theſe ſlanders as haſtily as, perhaps, he ought to have done. To ſay the truth, having ſeen but little of this kind of wit, he did not readily underſtand it, and for a long time imagined Mr. Northerton had really miſtaken his charmer for ſome other. But now turning to the enſign with a ſtern aſpect, he ſaid, 'Pray, Sir, chuſe 'ſome other ſubject for your wit: for I promiſe you 'I will bear no jeſting with this lady's character.' 'Jeſting,' cries the other, 'd—n me if ever I was 'more in earneſt in my life. Tom French of our re'giment had both her and her aunt at Bath.' Then 'I muſt tell you in earneſt,' cries Jones, 'that you 'are one of the moſt impudent raſcals upon earth.'

He had no ſooner ſpoken theſe words, than the enſign, together with a volley of curſes, diſcharged a bottle full at the head of Jones, which hitting him a little above the right temple, brought him inſtantly to the ground.

The conqueror perceiving the enemy to lie motionleſs before him, and blood beginning to flow pretty plentifully from his wound, began now to think of quitting the field of battle, where no more honour was to be gotten; but the lieutenant interpoſed, by ſtepping before the door, and thus cut off his retreat.

Northerton was very importunate with the lieutenant for his liberty; urging the ill conſequences of his ſtay, aſking him, what he could have done leſs! 'Zounds!' ſays he, 'I was but in jeſt with the fel'low. I never heard any harm of Miſs Weſtern in 'my life.' 'Have not you?' ſaid the lieutenant, 'then you richly deſerve to be hanged, as well for 'making ſuch jeſts, as for uſing ſuch a weapon. You 'are my priſoner, Sir; nor ſhall you ſtir from hence, 'till a proper guard comes to ſecure you.'

Such an aſcendant had our lieutenant over this enſign, that all that fervency of courage which had levelled our poor hero with the floor, would ſcarce have animated the ſaid enſign to have drawn his ſword againſt the lieutenant, had he then one dangling at his ſide; but all the ſwords being hung up in the room, were, at the very beginning of the fray,

ſecured by the French officer. So that Mr. Northerton was obliged to attend the final iſſue of this affair.

The French gentleman and Mr. Adderly, at the deſire of their commanding officer, had raiſed up the body of Jones; but as they could perceive but little (if any) ſign of life in him, they again let him fall, Adderly damning him for having blooded his waiſtcoat; and the Frenchman declaring, 'Begar me no 'tuſh de Engliſeman, de mort me have heard de En-'liſe lay, law, what you call, hang up de man dat 'tuſh him laſt.'

When the good lieutenant applied himſelf to the door, he applied himſelf likewiſe to the bell; and the drawer immediately attending, he diſpatched him for a file of muſqueteers and a ſurgeon. Theſe commands, together with the drawer's report of what he had himſelf ſeen, not only produced the ſoldiers, but preſently drew up the landlord of the houſe, his wife, and ſervants, and indeed every one elſe, who happened, at that time, to be in the inn.

To deſcribe every particular, and to relate the whole converſation of the enſuing ſcene, is not within my power, unleſs I had forty pens, and could, at once, write with them altogether, as the company now ſpoke. The reader muſt, therefore, content himſelf with the moſt remarkable incidents, and perhaps he may very well excuſe the reſt.

The firſt thing done was ſecuring the body of Northerton, who being delivered into the cuſtody of ſix men with a corporal at their head, was by them conducted from a place which he was very willing to leave, but it was unluckily to a place whither he was very unwilling to go. To ſay the truth, ſo whimſical are the deſires of ambition, the very moment this youth had attained the above mentioned honour, he would have been well contented to have retired to ſome corner of the world, where the fame of it ſhould never have reached his ears.

It ſurprizes us, and ſo, perhaps, it may the reader, that the lieutenant, a worthy and good man, ſhould have applied his chief care, rather to ſecure the of-

fender, than to preſerve the life of the wounded perſon. We mention this obſervation, not with any view of pretending to account for ſo odd a behaviour, but leſt ſome critic ſhould hereafter plume himſelf on diſcovering it. We would have theſe gentlemen know we can ſee what is odd in characters as well as themſelves, but it is our buſineſs to relate facts as they are; which when we have done, it is the part of the learned and ſagacious reader to conſult that original book of nature, whence every paſſage in our work is tranſcribed, though we quote not always the particular page for its authority.

The company which now arrived were of a different diſpoſition. They ſuſpended their curioſity concerning the perſon of the enſign, till they ſhould ſee him hereafter in a more engaging attitude. At preſent, their whole concern and attention were employed about the bloody object on the floor; which being placed upright in a chair, ſoon began to diſcover ſome ſymptoms of life and motion. Theſe were no ſooner perceived by the company (for Jones was, at firſt, generally concluded to be dead) than they all fell at once to preſcribing for him: (for as none of the phyſical order was preſent, every one there took that office upon him.)

Bleeding was the unanimous voice of the whole room; but unluckily there was no operator at hand; every one then cry'd, 'Call the barber;' but none ſtirred a ſtep. Several cordials were likewiſe preſcribed in the ſame ineffective manner; till the landlord ordered up a tankard of ſtrong beer, with a toaſt, which he ſaid was the beſt cordial in England.

The perſon principally aſſiſtant on this occaſion, indeed the only one who did any ſervice, or ſeemed likely to do any, was the landlady; ſhe cut off ſome of her hair, and applied it to the wound to ſtop the blood; ſhe fell to chafing the youth's temples with her hand; and having expreſt great contempt for her huſband's preſcription of beer, ſhe diſpatched one of her maids to her own cloſet for a bottle of brandy, of which, as ſoon as it was brought, ſhe prevailed upon Jones, who was juſt returned to his ſenſes, to drink a very large and plentiful draught.

Soon afterwards arrived the ſurgeon, who having viewed the wound, having ſhaken his head, and blamed every thing which was done, ordered his patient inſtantly to bed; in which place we think proper to leave him ſome time, to his repoſe, and ſhall here, therefore, put an end to this chapter.

CHAP. XIII.

Containing the great addreſs of the landlady; the great learning of a ſurgeon, and the ſolid ſkill in caſuiſtry of the worthy lieutenant.

WHEN the wounded man was carried to his bed, and the houſe began again to clear up from the hurry which this accident had occaſioned, the landlady thus addreſſed the commanding officer: 'I am 'afraid, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'this young man did not be- 'have himſelf as well as he ſhould do to your honours; 'and if he had been killed, I ſuppoſe he had but his 'deſerts; to be ſure, when gentlemen admit inferior 'perſons into their company, they oft to keep their 'diſtance; but, as my firſt huſband uſed to ſay, few 'of em know how to do it. For my own part, I am 'ſure, I ſhould not have ſuffered any fellows to *include* 'themſelves into gentlemen's company: but I thoſt 'he had been an officer himſelf, till the ſerjeant told 'me he was but a recruit.'

'Landlady,' anſwered the lieutenant, 'you miſ- 'take the whole matter. The young man behaved 'himſelf extremely well, and is, I believe, a much 'better gentleman than the enſign, who abuſed him. 'If the young fellow dies, the man who ſtruck 'him will have moſt reaſon to be ſorry for it: for 'the regiment will get rid of a very troubleſome fel- 'low, who is a ſcandal to the army; and if he eſcapes 'from the hands of juſtice, blame me, Madam, that's 'all.'

'Ay! ay! good lack-a-day!' ſaid the landlady, 'who could have thoſt it? Ay, ay, ay, I am ſatisfied 'your honour will ſee juſtice done; and to be ſure it 'oft to be to every one. Gentlemen oft not to kill poor

'folks

'folks without anſwering for it. A poor man hath a 'ſoul to be ſaved as well as his betters.'

'Indeed, Madam,' ſaid the lieutenant, 'you do 'the volunteer wrong; I dare ſwear he is more of a 'gentleman than the officer.'

'Ay,' cries the landlady, 'why look you there 'now: well, my firſt huſband was a wiſe man; he 'uſed to ſay, you can't always know the inſide by 'the outſide. Nay, that might have been well 'enough too: for I never *ſaw'd* him till he was all 'over blood. Who could have thoſt it! mayhap, 'ſome young gentleman croſſed in love. Good lack-'a-day! if he ſhould die, what a concern it will be to 'his parents! why ſure the devil muſt poſſeſs the 'wicked wretch to do ſuch an act. To be ſure he is 'a ſcandal to the army, as your honour ſays: for 'moſt of the gentlemen of the army that ever I ſaw, 'are quite different ſort of people, and look as if 'they would ſcorn to ſpill any chriſtian blood as 'much as any men, I mean, that is, in a civil way, 'as my firſt huſband uſed to ſay. To be ſure, when 'they come into the wars, there muſt be blood-ſhed; 'but that they are not to be blamed for. The more 'of our enemies they kill there, the better; and I 'wiſh with all my heart, they could kill every mother's 'ſon of them.'

'O fie! Madam,' ſaid the lieutenant ſmiling, 'ALL 'is rather to bloody-minded a wiſh.'

'Not at all, Sir,' anſwered ſhe, 'I am not at all 'bloody-minded, only to our enemies, and there is 'no harm in that. To be ſure it is natural for us to 'wiſh our enemies dead, that the wars may be at 'an end, and our taxes to be lowered: for it is a 'dreadful thing to pay as we do. Why now there 'is above forty ſhillings for window lights, and yet 'we have ſtopt up all we could; we have almoſt 'blinded the houſe I am ſure: ſays I to the exciſe-'man, ſays I, I think you oft to favour us, I am 'ſure we are very good friends to the government; 'and ſo we are for ſartain: for we pay a mint of 'money to 'um. And yet I often think to myſelf, 'the government doth not imagine itſelf more oblig-

'ed to us, than to thoſe that don't pay 'um a farthing,
'Ay, ay; it is the way of the world.'

She was proceeding in this manner, when the ſurgeon entered the room. The lieutenant immediately aſked how his patient did! But he reſolved him only by ſaying, 'better, I believe, than he would have 'been by this time, if I had not been called; and 'even as it is, perhaps it would have been lucky if 'I could have been called ſooner.' 'I hope, Sir,' ſaid the lieutenant, 'the ſkull is not fractured.' 'Hum,' cries the ſurgeon, 'fractures are not always 'the moſt dangerous ſymptoms. Contuſions and 'lacerations are often attended with worſe phæno-'mena, and with more fatal conſequences than frac-'tures. People who know nothing of the matter 'conclude, if the ſkull is not fractured, all is well; 'whereas, I had rather ſee a man's ſkull broke all to 'pieces, than ſome contuſions I have met with.' 'I 'hope,' ſays the lieutenant, 'there are no ſuch ſymp-'toms here.' 'Symptoms,' anſwered the ſurgeon, 'are not always regular nor conſtant. I have known 'very unfavourable ſymptoms in the morning change 'to favourable ones at noon, and return to unfa-'vourable ones again at night. Of wounds, in-'deed, it is rightly and truly ſaid, *Nemo repente fuit 'turpiſſimus*. I was once, I remember, called to a pa-'tient, who had received a violent contuſion in his 'tibia, by which the exterior cutis was lacerated, ſo 'that there was a profuſe ſanguinary diſcharge; and 'the interior membranes were ſo divellicated, that 'the os or bone very plainly appeared through the 'aperture of the vulnus or wound. Some febrile 'ſymptoms intervening at the ſame time, (for the 'pulſe was evuberant and indicated much phlebото-'my) I apprehended an immediate mortification. 'To prevent which I preſently made a large orifice 'in the vein of the left arm, whence I drew twenty 'ounces of blood; which I expected to have found 'extremely fizy and glutinous, or indeed coagulated 'as it is in pleuretic complaints; but, to my ſur-'prize, it appeared roſy and florid, and its conſiſt-'ency differed little from the blood of thoſe in perfect 'health.

'health. I then applied a fomentation to the part, 'which highly anſwered the intention, and after three 'or four times dreſſing, the wound began to diſcharge 'a thick pus or matter, by which means the coheſion '——— but perhaps I do not make myſelf perfectly 'well underſtood.' 'No, really,' anſwered the lieutenant, 'I cannot ſay I underſtand a ſyllable.' 'Well, 'Sir,' ſaid the ſurgeon, 'then I ſhall not tire your 'patience; in ſhort, within ſix weeks, my patient 'was able to walk upon his legs, as perfectly as he 'could have done before he received the contuſion.' 'I wiſh, Sir,' ſaid the lieutenant, 'you would be 'ſo kind only to inform me, whether the wound this 'young gentleman hath had the misfortune to receive 'is likely to prove mortal?' 'Sir,' anſwered the ſurgeon, 'to ſay whether a wound will prove mortal 'or not at firſt dreſſing, would be very weak and 'fooliſh preſumption: we are all mortal, and ſymptoms often accur in a cure which the greateſt of our 'profeſſion could never foreſee.'—'But do you think 'him in danger?' ſays the other. 'In danger! ay, 'ſurely,' cries the doctor, 'who is there among us, 'who in the moſt perfect health can be ſaid not to be 'in danger? Can a man, therefore, with ſo bad a 'wound as this be ſaid to be out of danger? All I 'can ſay at preſent is, that it is well I was called as 'I was, and perhaps it would have been better if I 'had been called ſooner. I will ſee him again early 'in the morning, and in the mean time let him be 'kept extremely quiet, and drink liberally of water-'gruel.' 'Won't you allow him ſack-whey.' ſaid the landlady? 'Ay, ay, ſack-whey,' cries the doctor, 'if you will, provided it be very ſmall.' 'And a 'little chicken-broth too,' added ſhe?—'Yes, yes, 'chicken-broth,' ſaid the doctor, 'is very good.' 'Mayn't I make him ſome jellies too,' ſaid the landlady? 'Ay, ay,' anſwered the doctor, 'jellies are 'very good for wounds, for they promote coheſion.' And, indeed, it was lucky ſhe had not named ſoup or high ſauces, for the doctor would have complied, rather than have loſt the cuſtom of the houſe.

The doctor was no ſooner gone, than the landlady began to trumpet forth his fame to the lieutenant.

wh

who had not, from their ſhort acquaintance, conceived quite ſo favourable an opinion of his phyſical abilities as the good woman, and all the neighbourhood, entertained; (and perhaps very rightly) for though I am afraid the doctor was a little of a coxcomb, he might be nevertheleſs very much of a ſurgeon.

The lieutenant having collected from the learned diſcourſe of the ſurgeon, that Mr. Jones was in great danger, gave orders for keeping Mr. Northerton under a very ſtrict guard, deſigning in the morning to attend him to a juſtice of peace, and to commit the conducting the troops to Glouceſter to the French lieutenant, who, though he could neither read, write, nor ſpeak any language, was, however, a good officer.

In the evening our commander ſent a meſſage to Mr. Jones, that if a viſit would not be troubleſome he would wait on him. This civility was very kindly and thankfully received by Jones, and the lieutenant accordingly went up to his room, where he found the wounded man much better than he expected; nay, Jones aſſured his friend, that if he had not received expreſs orders to the contrary from the ſurgeon, he ſhould have got up long ago; for he appeared to himſelf to be as well as ever, and felt no other inconvenience from his wound but an extreme ſoreneſs on that ſide of his head.

'I ſhould be very glad,' quoth the lieutenant, 'if 'you was as well as you fancy yourſelf; for then you 'could be able to do yourſelf juſtice immediately; 'for when a matter can't be made up, as in a caſe of 'a blow, the ſooner you take him out the better; 'but I am afraid you think yourſelf better than you 'are, and he would have too much advantage over you.'

'I'll try, however,' anſwered Jones, 'if you pleaſe, 'and will be ſo kind to lend me a ſword; for I have 'none here of my own.'

'My ſword is heartily at your ſervice, my dear 'boy,' cries the lieutenant, kiſſing him, 'you are 'a brave lad, and I love your ſpirit; but I fear your 'ſtrength: for ſuch a blow, and ſo much loſs of 'blood, muſt have very much weakened you; and 'though

'though you feel no want of ſtrength in your bed, 'yet you moſt probably would after a thruſt or two. 'I can't conſent to your taking him out to-night; 'but I hope you will be able to come up with us be- 'fore we get many days march advance; and I give 'you my honour you ſhall have ſatisfaction, or the 'man who hath injured you ſhan't ſtay in our regi- 'ment.'

'I wiſh,' ſaid Jones, 'it was poſſible to decide 'this matter to night: now you have mentioned it to 'me, I ſhall not be able to reſt.'

'O never think of it,' returned the other, 'a few 'days will make no difference. The wounds of ho- 'nour are not like thoſe in your body. They ſuffer 'nothing by the delay of cure. It will be altogether 'as well for you, to receive ſatisfaction a week hence 'as now.'

'But ſuppoſe,' ſaid Jones, 'I ſhould grow worſe, 'and die of the conſequences of my preſent wound.'

'Then your honour,' anſwered the lieutenant, 'will require no reparation at all. I myſelf will do 'juſtice to your character, and teſtify to the world 'your intention to have acted properly if you had re- 'covered.'

'Still,' replied Jones, 'I am concerned at the 'delay. I am almoſt afraid to mention it to you who 'are a ſoldier; but though I have been a very wild 'young fellow, ſtill in my moſt ſerious moments, and 'at the bottom, I am really a chriſtian.'

'So am I too, I aſſure, you' ſaid the officer; 'and 'ſo zealous a one, that I was pleaſed with you at din- 'ner for taking up the cauſe of your religion; and I 'am a little offended with you now, young gentleman, 'that you ſhould expreſs a fear of declaring your faith 'before any one.'

'But how terrible muſt it be,' cries Jones, 'to 'any one who is really a chriſtian, to cheriſh malice 'in his breaſt, in oppoſition to the command of him 'who hath expreſsly forbid it? How can I bear to do 'this on a ſick-bed? Or how ſhall I make up my ac- 'count, with ſuch an article as this in my boſom 'againſt me?'

Why

'Why I believe there is ſuch a command,' cries the lieutenant; 'but a man of honour can't keep it. 'And you muſt be a man of honour, if you will be 'in the army. I remember I once put the caſe to 'our chaplain over a bowl of punch, and he confeſſed 'there was much difficulty in it; but he ſaid, he 'hoped there might be a latitude granted to ſoldiers 'in this one inſtance; and to be ſure it is our duty to 'hope ſo: for who would bear to live without his ho-'nour? No, no, my dear boy, be a good chriſtian 'as long as you live; but be a man of honour too; 'and never put up an affront; not all the books, nor 'all the parſons in the world, ſhall ever perſuade me 'to that. I love my religion very well, but I love 'my honour more. There muſt be ſome miſtake in 'the wording the text, or in the tranſlation, or in the 'underſtanding it, or ſomewhere or other. But 'however that be, a man muſt run the riſque; for he 'muſt preſerve his honour. So compoſe yourſelf to-'night, and I promiſe you, you ſhall have an oppor-'tunity of doing yourſelf juſtice.' Here he gave Jones a hearty buſs, ſhook him by the hand, and took his leave.

But though the lieutenant's reaſoning was very ſatisfactory to himſelf, it was not entirely ſo to his friend. Jones therefore having revolved this matter much in his thoughts, at laſt come to a reſolution, which the reader will find in the next chapter.

CHAP. XIV.

A moſt dreadful chapter indeed; and which few readers ought to venture upon in an evening, eſpecially when alone.

JONES ſwallowed a large meſs of chicken, or rather cock broth, with a very good appetite, as indeed he would have done the cock it was made of, with a pound of bacon into the bargain; and now, finding in himſelf no deficiency of either health or ſpirit, he reſolved to get up and ſeek his enemy.

But

But firſt he ſent for the ſerjeant, who was his firſt acquaintance among theſe military gentlemen. Unluckily, that worthy officer having, in a literal ſenſe, taken his fill of liquor, had been ſome time retired to his bolſter, where he was ſnoring ſo loud, that it was not eaſy to convey a noiſe in at his ears capable of drowning that which iſſued from his noſtrils.

However, as Jones perſiſted in his deſire of ſeeing him, a vociferous drawer at length found means to diſturb his ſlumbers, and to acquaint him with the meſſage. Of which the ſerjeant was no ſooner made ſenſible, than he aroſe from his bed, and having his clothes already on, immediately attended. Jones did not think fit to acquaint the ſerjeant with his deſign, though he might have done it with great ſafety; for the halbadier was himſelf a man of honour, and had killed his man. He would therefore have faithfully kept this ſecret, or indeed any other which no reward was publiſhed for diſcovering. But as Jones knew not thoſe virtues in ſo ſhort an acquaintance, his caution was perhaps prudent and commendable enough.

He began therefore by acquainting the ſerjeant, that as he was now entered into the army, he was aſhamed of being without what was perhaps the moſt neceſſary implement of a ſoldier; namely, a ſword; adding, that he ſhould be infinitely obliged to him, if he could procure one. 'For which,' ſays he, 'I 'will give you any reaſonable price; nor do I inſiſt 'upon its being ſilver hilted, only a good blade, 'and ſuch as may become a ſoldier's thigh.'

The ſerjeant, who well knew what had happened, and had heard that Jones was in a very dangerous condition, immediately concluded, from ſuch a meſſage, at ſuch a time of night, and from a man in ſuch a ſituation, that he was light-headed. Now as he had his wit (to uſe that word in its common ſignification) always ready, he bethought himſelf of making his advantage of this humour in the ſick man. 'Sir,' ſays he, 'I believe I can fit you. I have a moſt ex-'cellent piece of ſtuff by me. It is not indeed ſilver-'hilted, which, as you ſay, doth not become a ſol-'dier; but the handle is decent enough, and the

'blade

'blade one of the beſt in Europe.—It is a blade that
'—a blade that—In ſhort, I will fetch it you this in-
'ſtant, and you ſhall ſee it and handle it——I am
'glad to ſee your honour ſo well with all my heart.'

Being inſtantly returned with the ſword, he delivered it to Jones, who took it and drew it; and then told the ſerjeant it would do very well, and bid him name his price.

The ſerjeant now began to harangue in praiſe of his goods. He ſaid, (nay he ſwore very heartily) 'that the blade was taken from a French officer of 'very high rank, at the battle of Dettingen. I took 'it myſelf,' ſays he, 'from his ſide, after I had 'knocked him o' the head. The hilt was a golden 'one. That I ſold to one of our fine gentlemen; 'for there are ſome of them, an't pleaſe your ho-'nour, who value the hilt of a ſword more than the 'blade.'

Here the other ſtopped him, and begged him to name a price. The ſerjeant, who thought Jones abſolutely out of his ſenſes, and very near his end, was afraid, leſt he ſhould injure his family by aſking too little.—However, after a moment's heſitation, he contented himſelf with naming twenty guineas, and ſwore he would not ſell it for leſs to his own brother.

'Twenty guineas,' ſays Jones, in the utmoſt ſurprize, 'ſure you think I am mad, or that I never 'ſaw a ſword in my life. Twenty guineas, indeed! 'I did not imagine you would endeavour to impoſe 'upon me.—Here, take the ſword—No, now I think 'on't, I will keep it myſelf, and ſhew it your officer 'in the morning, acquainting him, at the ſame time, 'what a price you aſked me for it.'

The ſerjeant, as we have ſaid, had always his wit (*in ſenſu prædicto*) about him, and now plainly ſaw that Jones was not in the condition he had apprehended him to be; he now, therefore, counterfeited as great ſurprize as the other had ſhewn, and ſaid, 'I am certain, Sir, I have not aſked you ſo much out 'of the way. Beſides, you are to conſider, it is the 'only ſword I have, and I muſt run the riſque of my 'officer's diſpleaſure, by going without one myſelf.

'And

'And truly, putting all this together, I don't think 'twenty ſhillings ſo much out of the way.'

'Twenty ſhillings!' cries Jones, 'why you juſt 'now aſked me twenty guineas.' 'How!' cries the ſerjeant—'Sure your honour muſt have miſtaken me; or 'elſe I miſtook myſelf—and indeed I am but half 'awake—— Twenty guineas, indeed! no wonder 'your honour flew into ſuch a paſſion. I ſay twenty 'guineas too—No, no, I meant twenty ſhillings, I 'aſſure you. And when your honour comes to conſi-'der every thing, I hope you will not think that ſo 'extravagant a price. It is indeed true, you may 'buy a weapon which looks as well for leſs money. 'But—

Here Jones interrupted him, ſaying, 'I will be ſo 'far from making any words with you, that I will 'give you a ſhilling more than your demand.' He then gave him a guinea, bid him return to his bed, and wiſhed him a good march; adding, he hoped to overtake them before the diviſion reached Worceſter.

The ſerjeant very civilly took his leave, fully ſatisfied with his merchandize, and not a little pleaſed with his dexterous recovery from that falſe ſtep into which his opinion of the ſick man's light-headedneſs had betrayed him.

As ſoon as the ſerjeant was departed, Jones roſe from his bed, and dreſſed himſelf entirely, putting on even his coat, which, as its colour was white, ſhewed very viſibly the ſtreams of blood which had flowed down it; and now, having graſped his new-purchaſed ſword in his hand, he was going to iſſue forth, when the thought of what he was about to undertake laid ſuddenly hold of him, and he began to reflect that in a few minutes he might poſſibly deprive a human being of life, or might loſe his own. 'Very well, ſaid he, 'and in what cauſe do I venture my life? Why, in 'that of my honour. And who is this human being? 'A raſcal who hath injured and inſulted me without 'provocation. But is not revenge forbidden by hea-'ven?—Yes, but is it enjoined by the world. Well, 'but ſhall I obey the world in oppoſition to the ex-'preſs commands of heaven? Shall I incur the divine

'diſ-

'displeasure rather than be called—ha—coward—'scoundrel?—I'll think no more; I am resolved, and 'must fight him.'

The clock had now struck twelve, and every one in the house were in their beds, except the centinel who stood to guard Northerton, when Jones softly opening his door, issued forth in pursuit of his enemy, of whose place of confinement he had received a perfect description from the drawer. It is not easy to conceive a much more tremendous figure than he now exhibited. He had on, as we have said, a light-coloured coat, covered with streams of blood. His face, which missed that very blood, as well as twenty ounces more drawn from him by the surgeon, was pallid. Round his head was a quantity of bandage, not unlike a turban. In the right hand he carried a sword, and in the left a candle. So that the bloody Banquo was not worthy to be compared to him. In fact, I believe a more dreadful apparition was never raised in a churchyard, nor in the imagination of any good people met in a winter evening over a Christmas fire in Somersetshire.

When the centinel first saw our hero approach, his hair began gently to lift up his grenadier cap; and in the same instant his knees fell to blows with each other. Presently his whole body was seized with worse than an ague fit. He then fired his piece, and fell flat on his face.

Whether fear or courage was the occasion of his firing, or whether he took aim at the object of his terror, I cannot say. If he did, however, he had the good fortune to miss his man.

Jones seeing the fellow fall, guessed the cause of his fright, at which he could not forbear smiling, not in the least reflecting on the danger from which he had just escaped. He then passed by the fellow, who still continued in the posture in which he fell, and entered the room where Northerton, as he had heard, was confined. Here, in a solitary situation, he found—an empty quart-pot standing on the table, on which some beer being spilt, it looked as if the room had lately

lately been inhabited; but at preſent it was entirely vacant.

Jones then apprehended it might lead to ſome other apartment; but, upon ſearching all round it, he could perceive no other door than that at which he entered, and where the centinel had been poſted. He then proceeded to call Northerton ſeveral times by his name; but no one anſwered; nor did this ſerve to any other purpoſe than to confirm the centinel in his terrors, who was now convinced that the volunteer was dead of his wounds, and that his ghoſt was come in ſearch of the murtherer: he now lay in all the agonies of horror; and I wiſh, with all my heart, ſome of thoſe actors, who are hereafter to repreſent a man frighted out of his wits, had ſeen him, that they might be taught to copy nature, inſtead of performing ſeveral antic tricks and geſtures, for the entertainment and applauſe of the galleries.

Perceiving the bird was flown, at leaſt deſpairing to find him, and rightly apprehending that the report of the firelock would alarm the whole houſe, our hero now blew out his candle, and gently ſtole back again to his chamber, and to his bed: whither he would not have been able to have gotten undiſcovered, had any other perſon been on the ſame ſtair-caſe, ſave only one gentleman who was confined to his bed by the gout; for before he could reach the door to his chamber, the hall where the centinel had been poſted was half full of people, ſome in their ſhirts, and others not half dreſt, all very earneſtly enquiring of each other, what was the matter?

The ſoldier was now found lying in the ſame place and poſture in which we juſt now left him. Several immediately applied themſelves to raiſe him, and ſome concluded him dead: but they preſently ſaw their miſtake; for he not only ſtruggled with thoſe who laid their hands on him, but fell a roaring like a bull. In reality, he imagined ſo many ſpirits or devils were handling him; for his imagination being poſſeſſed with the horror of an apparition, converted every object he ſaw or felt, into nothing but ghoſts and ſpectres.

At

At length he was overpowered by numbers, and got upon his legs; when candles being brought, and ſeeing two or three of his comrades preſent, he came a little to himſelf; but when they aſked him what was the matter? he anſwered, 'I am a dead man, that's 'all, I am a dead man, I can't recover it, I have ſeen 'him.' 'What haſt thou ſeen, Jack?' ſays one of the ſoldiers. 'Why I have ſeen the young volunteer 'that was killed yeſterday.' He then imprecated the moſt heavy curſes on himſelf, if he had not ſeen the volunteer, all over blood, vomiting fire out of his mouth and noſtrils, paſs by him into the chamber where enſign Northerton was, and then ſeizing the enſign by the throat, fly away with him in a clap of thunder.

This relation met with a gracious reception from the audience. All the women preſent believed it firmly, and prayed heaven to defend them from murther. Amongſt the men too, many had faith in the ſtory; but others turned it into deriſion and ridicule; and a ſerjeant who was preſent, anſwered very cooly: 'Young man, you will hear more of this for going to 'ſleep, and dreaming on your poſt.'

The ſoldier replied, 'you may puniſh me if you 'pleaſe; but I was as broad awake as I am now; and 'the devil carry me away, as he hath the enſign, if I 'did not ſee the dead man, as I tell you, with eyes as 'big and as fiery as two large flambeaux.'

The commander of the forces, and the commander of the houſe, were now both arrived: for the former being awake at the time, and hearing the centinel fire his piece, thought it his duty to riſe immediately, though he had no great apprehenſions of any miſchief; whereas the apprehenſions of the latter were much greater, leſt her ſpoons and tankards ſhould be upon the march, without having received any ſuch orders from her.

Our poor centinel, to whom the ſight of this officer was not much more welcome than the apparition, as he thought it, which he had ſeen before, again related the dreadful ſtory, and with many additions of blood and fire: but he had the misfortune to gain no credit

credit with either of the laſt-mentioned perſons; for the officer, though a very religious man, was free from all terrors of this kind; beſides, having ſo lately left Jones in the condition we have ſeen, he had no ſuſpicion of his being dead. As for the landlady, though not over religious, ſhe had no kind of averſion to the doctrine of ſpirits; but there was a circumſtance in the tale which ſhe well knew to be falſe, as we ſhall inform the reader preſently.

But whether Northerton was carried away in thunder or fire, or in whatever other manner he was gone; it was now certain, that his body was no longer in cuſtody. Upon this occaſion, the lieutenant formed a concluſion not very different from what the ſerjeant is juſt mentioned to have made before, and immediately ordered the centinel to be taken priſoner. So that, by a ſtrange reverſe of fortune, (though not very uncommon in a military life) the guard became the guarded.

CHAP. XV.

The concluſion of the foregoing adventure.

BESIDES the ſuſpicion of ſleep, the lieutenant harboured another, and worſe doubt againſt the poor centinel, and this was that of treachery: for as he believed not one ſyllable of the apparition, ſo he imagined the whole to be an invention, formed only to impoſe upon him, and that the fellow had, in reality, been bribed by Northerton to let him eſcape. And this he imagined the rather, as the fright appeared to him the more unnatural in one who had the character of as brave and bold a man as any in the regiment, having been in ſeveral actions, having received ſeveral wounds, and, in a word, having behaved himſelf always like a good and valiant ſoldier.

That the reader, therefore, may not conceive the leaſt ill opinion of ſuch a perſon, we ſhall not delay a moment in reſcuing his character from the imputation of this guilt.

Mr.

At length he was overp[illegible] have before obſerved, upon his legs; when [illegible]glory which he had obtained ing two or three [illegible]ad, perhaps, ſeen, or heard, little to himſelf [illegible]is apt to attend fame. Not that the matter? b[illegible]uate, that he was heatheniſhly in- all, I am [illegible]in, or to worſhip the goddeſs Neme- him.' [illegible] I am convinced he never heard of her the foldi[illegible]was, beſides, of an active diſpoſition, and that [illegible]antipathy to thoſe cloſe winter quarters in moſt [illegible]of Glouceſter, for which a juſtice of peace vol[illegible]ſibly give him a billet. Nor was he more- m[illegible]ve from ſome uneaſy meditations on a certain v[illegible] edifice, which I forbear to name, in confor- [illegible]to the opinion of mankind, who, I think, rather [illegible]ght to honour than to be aſhamed of this building, [illegible]it is, or at leaſt might be made, of more benefit to ſociety than almoſt any other public erection. In a word, to hint at no more reaſons for his conduct, Mr. Northerton was deſirous of departing that evening, and nothing remained for him but to contrive the Quomodo, which appeared to be a matter of ſome difficulty.

Now this young gentleman, though ſomewhat crooked in his morals, was perfectly ſtrait in his perſon, which was extremely ſtrong and well made. His face too was accounted handſome by the generality of women, for it was broad and ruddy, with tolerably good teeth. Such charms did not fail making an impreſſion on my landlady, who had no little reliſh for this kind of beauty. She had, indeed, a real compaſſion for the young man; and hearing from the ſurgeon that affairs were like to go ill with the volunteer, ſhe ſuſpected they might hereafter wear no benign aſpect with the enſign. Having obtained, therefore, leave to make him a viſit, and finding him in a very melancholy mood, which ſhe conſiderably heightened, by telling him there were ſcarce any hopes of the volunteer's life, ſhe proceeded to throw forth ſome hints, which the other readily and eagerly taking up, they ſoon came to a right underſtanding; and it was at length agreed, that the enſign ſhould, at a certain ſignal, aſcend the chimney, which communicating very

ſoon

ſoon with that of the kitchen, he might there again let himſelf down; for which ſhe would give him an opportunity, by keeping the coaſt clear.

But leſt our readers, of a different complexion, ſhould take this occaſion of too haſtily condemning all compaſſion as a folly, and pernicious to ſociety, we think proper to mention another particular, which might poſſibly have ſome little ſhare in this action. The enſign happened to be at this time poſſeſſed of the ſum of fifty pounds, which did indeed belong to the whole company: for the captain having quarrelled with his lieutenant, had entruſted the payment of his company to the enſign. This money, however, he thought proper to depoſit in my landlady's hand, poſſibly by way of bail or ſecurity that he would hereafter appear and anſwer to the charge againſt him; but whatever were the conditions, certain it is, that ſhe had the money, and the enſign his liberty.

The reader, may, perhaps, expect, from the compaſſionate temper of this good woman, that when ſhe ſaw the poor centinel taken priſoner for a fact of which ſhe knew him innocent, ſhe ſhould immediately have interpoſed in his behalf; but whether it was that ſhe had already exhauſted all her compaſſion in the above-mentioned inſtance, or that the features of this fellow, though not very different from thoſe of the enſign, could not raiſe it, I will not determine; but far from being an advocate for the preſent priſoner, ſhe urged his guilt to the officer, declaring with uplifted eyes and hands, that ſhe would not have had any concern in the eſcape of a murderer for all the world.

Every thing was now once more quiet; and moſt of the company returned again to their beds; but the landlady, either from the natural activity of her diſpoſition, or from her fear for her plate, having no propenſity to ſleep, prevailed with the officers, as they were to march within little more than an hour, to ſpend that time with her over a bowl of punch.

Jones had lain awake all this while, and had heard great part of the hurry and buſtle that had paſſed, of which he had now ſome curioſity to know the

particulars. He therefore applied to his bell, which he rung at leaſt twenty times without any effect; for my landlady was in ſuch high mirth with her company, that no clapper could be heard there but her own, and the drawer and chambermaid, who were ſitting together in the kitchen (for neither durſt he ſit up, nor ſhe lie in bed alone) the more they heard the bell ring, the more they were frightened, and as it were, nailed down in their places.

At laſt, at a lucky interval of chat, the ſound reached the ears of our good landlady, who preſently ſent forth her ſummons, which both her ſervants inſtantly obeyed. 'Joe,' ſays the miſtreſs, 'don't you 'hear the gentleman's bell ring? Why don't you go 'up?' 'It is not my buſineſs,' anſwered the drawer, 'to wait upon the chambers. It is Betty chamber-'maid's!' 'If you come to that,' anſwered the maid, 'it is not my buſineſs to wait upon gentlemen. 'I have done it, indeed, ſometimes; but the devil 'fetch me if I ever do it again, ſince you make your 'preambles about it.' The bell ſtill ringing violently, their miſtreſs fell into a paſſion, and ſwore, if the drawer did not go up immediately, ſhe would turn him away that very morning. 'If you do, Ma-'dam,' ſays he, 'I can't help it. I won't do ano-'ther ſervant's buſineſs.' She then applied herſelf to the maid, and endeavoured to prevail by gentle means: but all in vain, Betty was as inflexible as Joe. Both inſiſted it was not their buſineſs, and they would not do it.

The lieutenant then fell a laughing, and ſaid, 'Come, I will put an end to this contention;' and then turning to the ſervants, commended them for their reſolution in not giving up the point; but added, he was ſure, if one would conſent to go, the other would. To which propoſal they both agreed in an inſtant, and accordingly went up very lovingly and cloſe together. When they were gone, the lieutenant appeaſed the wrath of the landlady, by ſatisfying her why they were both ſo unwilling to go alone.

They returned ſoon after, and acquainted their miſtreſs, that the ſick gentleman was ſo far from being dead,

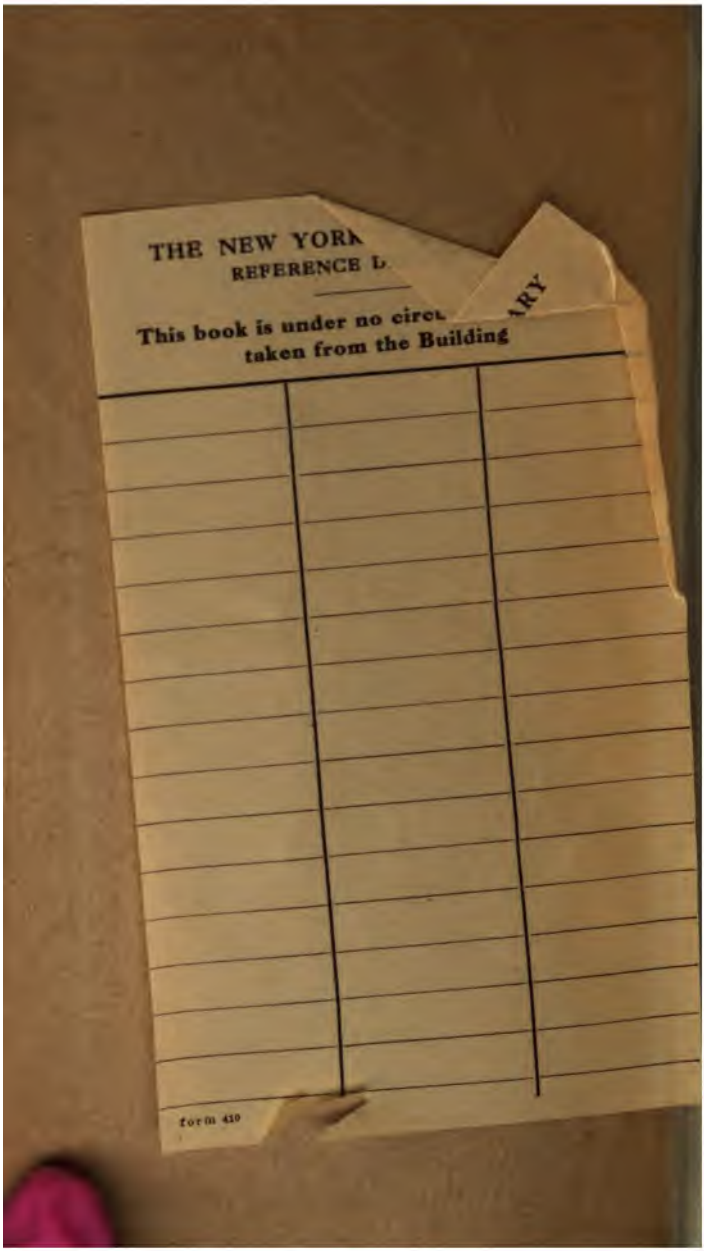
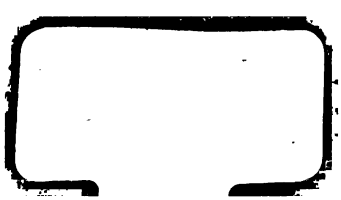
dead, that he ſpoke as heartily as if he was well; and that he gave his ſervice to the captain, and ſhould be very glad of the favour of ſeeing him before he marched.

The good lieutenant immediately complied with his deſires, and ſitting down by his bed-ſide, acquainted him with the ſcene which had happened below, concluding with his intentions to make an example of the centinel.

Upon this, Jones related to him the whole truth, and earneſtly begged him not to puniſh the poor ſoldier, 'who, I am confident,' ſays he, 'is as innocent of the enſign's eſcape, as he is of forging any 'lie, or of endeavouring to impoſe on you.'

The lieutenant heſitated a few moments, and then anſwered: 'Why, as you have cleared the fellow of 'one part of the charge, ſo it will be impoſſible to 'prove the other; becauſe he was not the only cen-'tinel. But I have a good mind to puniſh the raſcal 'for being a coward. Yet who knows what effect 'the terror of ſuch an apprehenſion may have? and 'to ſay the truth, he hath always behaved well againſt 'an enemy. Come, it is a good thing to ſee any ſign 'of religion in theſe fellows; ſo I promiſe you he 'ſhall be ſet at liberty when we march. But hark, 'the general beats. My dear boy, give me another 'buſs. Don't diſcompoſe or hurry yourſelf; but 'remember the chriſtian doctrine of patience, and I 'warrant you will ſoon be able to do yourſelf juſtice, 'and to take an honourable revenge on the fellow 'who hath injured you.' The lieutenant then departed, and Jones endeavoured to compoſe himſelf to reſt.

END of the SEVENTH VOLUME.


THE NEW YORK
REFERENCE L
ARY
This book is under no circu
taken from the Building
form 410